

## 1<sup>st</sup> Timothy-1

### Lesson #1 Series # 467 1Tim 1:1

- I. This is the epistle of Wine, Women and Song and this is interesting since Timothy was a Weak sister wimpy guy and this shows that even wimpy guys can make it in the Christian Way of Life and this is GRACE all the way.
- II. Introduction:
  - A. This is the unique Church Age when Timothy was Pastor Teacher under Paul.
  - B. Plan of God:
    1. God the Father author
    2. God the Son executor
    3. God the Holy Spirit empowerer and revealer.
    4. Plan divided into dispensations for Human History after the appeal of the Angelic Conflict Trial.
    5. Phases for the believer:
      - i. I = Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God
      - ii. II = Spiritual growth in time
      - iii. III = Eternity
- III. Outline of Chapter 1 == Introductory Chapter of Purpose in the Church Age
  - A. Prologue v1-2
  - B. Purpose of the Pastor Teacher v3-7
  - C. Purpose of the Mosaic Law v8-11
  - D. Purpose of Grace v12-17
  - E. Combat orders for Timothy v18-20
  - F. Must have concepts of the Church Age in mind such as its uniqueness and intercalation, etc.
- IV. v1-2 Prologue to this epistle:
  - A. Paul is the human author
    1. Originally Saul of Tarsus and after his Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God he adopted a roman name Paul which means small.
    2. He was Jewish from the tribe of Benjamin and many were in that tribe named Saul
    3. He was a great warrior and a fine clean living king influenced by evil and a famous member of the tribe of Benjamin.
    4. "Paul" connotes Grace Orientation 1Cor 15:10, 1Tim 1:12-16,
    5. Jewish by race and roman citizen by birth.
  - B. Roman Names are divided into 3 parts, Prinomen, Nomen, Cognomen.
    1. Prinomen == Given name at birth
    2. Nomen == Tribe
    3. Cognomen == Family
    4. Gaius Julius Caesar,
      - i. Gaius his given name, Julius was one of the most famous tribe in roman history, Caesar his family
    5. Publius Cornelius Scipio Africanus
      - i. Surname was the added name Africanus
      - ii. These 2 men were the greatness of roman history.
    6. Saulus Benjamin Tarsus Paulus
      - i. Saulus his given name, Benjamin his tribe, Tarsus his family home, Paulus his surname.
    7. Paulus as his surname. was how he was known in Human History.
  - C. Timothy is the epistle written by Paul in his last roman imprisonment and about 6 month prior to his death.
    1. Under 1Tim 3:16 the principle is that this doctrine and all scripture is God Breathed.

2. Breathing includes Inhaling here from God the Holy Spirit where he communicates to the human author here Paul in AD 66.
  3. Paul had to study in some way to receive this information and then he exhaled by writing this epistle in his own way under his own character the message of God recorded under the ministry of God the Holy Spirit in the Koine Greek.
    - i. New standard version by the Lauchnon group.
- D. Paul in this epistle refers first to his rank as apostle, and this is no loving epistle to timothy because timothy must grow up since Paul is going to be dead in 6 months.
1. This boy, Timothy is one of the worst students and has to retake the course over and over again and is a wimp and weak sister.
  2. Apostle is a navy word and indicates the highest ranking admiral in the fleet.
  3. The word means One Sent TO COMMAND.
  4. The last apostle died in AD96 and there are no apostles alive today.
  5. This title indicates RANK + AUTHORITY == DICTATORSHIP.
  6. This is what Paul was bringing to timothy's attention.
  7. Paul was not only AN apostle but the highest ranking apostle and even peter deferred to his authority and teaching 2Pet.
  8. No one in the Church Age ever had nor ever will have as much authority as Paul.
  9. No one in the Old Testament Scripture ever had as much authority as David
  10. They are alike in only one way, both had as much authority as God ever gave any human being and both were humanly speaking as free as one can be, almost totally free from EVIL.
  11. Paul was much tougher than David who was very tough.
  12. Paul was a spiritual warrior as David was a professional warrior.
  13. David was a great general as was Paul
  14. David was a great king as Paul was the greatest human ruler the church ever had.
  15. When he starts out a document writing he is an apostle, look out for the AOF admiral of the fleet has arrived.
- E. When God sent the apostle Paul it was because the church was in a state of confusion and consternation because SAUL was persecuting the church and they could not take it.
1. They were falling apart and did not like dying for the Lord but wanted to live for the Lord.
  2. Saul ruined the Jerusalem church and then tried to go back later and preach to them but they would have nothing to do with him already being totally ruined.
  3. The 11 apostles got together after Judas and elected Matthias as the 12<sup>th</sup> but he is never heard from again.
  4. Then after his Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God Saul became Paul and moved rapidly to Super-Grace and this caused greater confusion for the church.
  5. He was the worst sinner who ever lived and became the greatest believer ever to live.
  6. It took the church a whole generation to accept him but now we have not problem with Paul.
  7. We see Paul in all his greatness but his contemporaries never did and in the time he lived no one recognized his true greatness.
  8. After he has been dead and long gone he has been recognized by thousands of generations as being one of the greatest men who ever lived.
  9. David on the other hand was recognized for his greatness while he was alive another contrast between these 2 great men.
- F. The gift of apostleship is the word apostle taken and turned into the highest rank God ever has given.
1. They existed from 30 to 96 AD before the canon of scripture was completed and before the bible was completed someone with absolute authority had to run the program.

2. Someone had to write the New Testament Scripture and this was also the job of the apostles or someone very closely associated with one of them.
3. This gift included ABSOLUTE DICTATORIAL AUTHORITY.
4. This is a fact not many want to admit to but even in this chapter Paul as he did several times personally turned someone over to SATAN for destruction. 1Cor 5
5. Dictator == Absolute authority and in fact is the best form of government when the ruler is an enlightened dictator.
  - i. Dictators who come by revolution are not much ever in history.
6. Paul had all the authority that anyone could ever have put together in one package at one time and he was a ABSOLUTE DICTATOR.
7. Paul also had with this the Spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher and was an absolute communicator to more than one Local Church in fact to all the Local Churches.
8. He had authority to establish churches appoint pastors regulate Bible Doctrine judge dissension train pastors until the canon was completed.
9. He also had authority to write scripture
10. Apostleship was a temporary gift carrying all this weight of responsibility.
11. All the writing of the New Testament Scripture was by Apostles or someone very close to them such as Mark for Peter or Luke for Paul.

#### V. Doctrine of Apostleship

- A. Etymology of Apostolos == a word used for the admiral appointed by the Athenian government to command the fleet in war
  1. Used in the New Testament Scripture for the highest spiritual gift ever to be given in the Church Age
  2. Ended in Ad96 with the death of John and no one has ever had it since his death.
  3. The claiming of apostolic authority is one of the greatest Hearsays of Romanism and the pseudo function of the Pope.
  4. There is not perpetuation of any apostolic authority 1Cor 12:11, 28, Eph 4:11 specify apostleship as a spiritual gift.
- B. The function of apostleship:
  1. Since this gift carried absolute authority it was designed to carry the church at the start of the Church Age until the completion of the canon of scripture in Ad96.
  2. The function is in 2 categories:
    - i. Apostles or one close to the apostles wrote as human authors the canon of scripture.
    - ii. Apostles established the early Local Churches and communicated the Bible Doctrine and appointed and trained the pastors and acted as policy makers prior to completion of the Canon of Scripture.
    - iii. Once the New Testament Scripture is completed and the mystery doctrine of the Church Age is recorded it is no longer necessary to have apostles in the hierarchy of the church.
- C. The time of appointment is only after the resurrection of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and completion of his strategic victory with ascension and session. Eph 4:8 comp 4:11
  1. There are no equal rights here and no female apostles.
  2. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ did the whole appointment of apostles and there were none until after the resurrection.
  3. Matt 10 had 12 apostles but they were apostles to ISRAEL and had nothing to do with the church.
  4. There were no apostles until after the resurrection and that means the 11 had to be reappointed so that they could be apostles to the church.
  5. Only God appoints apostles and the church does not ever elect apostles and the election of Matthias was idiotic as the election of the Pope is idiotic.

6. All apostles had to be eyewitnesses of the resurrection but the 11 saw it later and that qualified them as it did Paul.
- D. Extent of the gift of apostleship:
1. This gift had as much authority which God ever gave in the early church and ever will give in history.
  2. The apostle had the authority over all Local Church in contrast to the Pastor Teacher who has authority over only one Local Church.
  3. It was a temporary gift removed with completion of the canon of scripture.
  4. Today all Local Churches should be and by biblical standards are autonomous with authority vested in the completed canon and the local Pastor Teacher.
- E. The distinction between the Apostles to Israel vs Apostles to the Church.
1. Matt 10:2- where Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ appointed apostles to Israel during his earthly ministry.
  2. With the exception of Judas Iscariot the personnel were the same but had an entirely different function and entirely different ministry.
  3. The apostles to Israel were not required in the Church Age to shake sand from their sandals.
  4. Paul was appointed by God to replace Judas 1Cor 15:10
  5. Judas Iscariot is considered to be one of the very worst people ever to have lived but this is false.
  6. Saul of Tarsus was the very worst and he replaced Judas.
  7. The difference is GRACE which changed Saul but he was very much worse than Judas.
  8. Acts 1 tells us that Matthias was elected by the church to replace Judas but we know that the church cannot elect apostles and apostles had to witness Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Resurrection Body to be an apostle and be appointed by Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ himself Eph 4:11.
  9. All spiritual gifts today are appointed by God the Holy Spirit but apostles were appointed directly by Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  10. Apostles were the highest authority ever given and given only by Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ himself.
- F. Qualification of apostleship:
1. They were qualified by receiving the spiritual gift from Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ Eph 4:11
  2. After the initial appointment all selection of all spiritual gifts became the sovereign ministry of God the Holy Spirit 1Cor 12:11
  3. All apostles had to be an eyewitness to the resurrection of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ which qualified the 11 and Saul as Paul was qualified on the Damascus road. Acts 1:22, 1Cor 9:1, 15:8-9
  4. Saul saw Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the Damascus road and immediately went blind.
  5. Everything about his appointment was Unique:
    - i. He said he was a bastard born out of due time spiritually 1Cor 15+
    - ii. He said he did not deserve to be an apostle
    - iii. He said he was the worst sinner to ever live
    - iv. He said he was not qualified to be an apostle having not seen Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Resurrection Body but Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ personally appeared to him to allow him to look and then blinded him for a while.
- G. Identification of Apostles:
1. Apostolic authority resides within the gift of apostleship.
  2. There were other gifts that went along with apostleship we can call them identification gifts which would prove to others he was who he claimed to be.
  3. Identification Gifts include: For Paul

- i. Healing **Acts 19:11-12, Phil 2:27, 1Tim 4:20**
- ii. Tongues
- iii. Miracles
- iv. All the apostles had these 3 as ID cards and were in fact inferior gifts.
- v. These were the means of the apostles getting the attention of people so they would listen to them teach the gospel and Bible Doctrine
- vi. This is the only reason these 3 spiritual gifts even existed with the added function of the gift of tongues to warn Israel of the coming of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline to Israel.
- vii. All these gifts are void today having been removed when the canon was completed and the apostles had universal recognition of their position.
- viii. These were subordinate temporary spiritual gifts for establishing the authority of the apostle and identifying him as an apostle these gifts were pulled away immediately.
- ix. Occasionally God does Heal someone but this is not the way God does things today.
- x. If you discover you have a terminal disease DON'T Panic and run away to Mexico to be HEALED.
- xi. NEVER fall apart on these concepts for WHEN GOD IS GOING TO TAKE YOU NOTHING WILL KEEP YOU HERE.
- xii. Cancer, Heart Failure, Leprosy,
- xiii. Never think some idiot can put OIL on your head and heal you you are absolutely stupid.
- xiv. God can heal you sovereignly but he generally choses not to and takes us out in various ways.
- xv. There is no such thing today as a divine healer EVER.

H. Roster of the Apostles:

- 1. Includes the 11 minus Judas and does not Include Mathias Acts 1:19-26 is a farce.
  - i. The biggest farce in this election is by peter and it is a miracle he made it as an apostle.
  - ii. He was a real dum dum and it was his idea to elect a replacement for Judas.
  - iii. First he is in this passage blaming God the Holy Spirit for what he is going to do – Blaspheme

**Acts 1:15-26**

v15: **And in those days Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples, and said, (the number of names together were about an hundred and twenty),**

v16: **"Men and brethren (includes the women), this scripture had to be fulfilled, which the Holy Spirit spoke before by the mouth of David (prophecy) concerning Judas, which was to guide them that took Jesus."**

v17: **"For he {Judas} was numbered with us, and had obtained part of this ministry. "**

v18 : **"Now this man {Judas} purchased a field with the reward of iniquity; and falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out. "**

v19 : **"And it was known unto all the dwellers at Jerusalem; in so much as that field is called in their proper tongue, 'Aceldama', that is to say, 'The field of blood'. "**

v20 : **{Peter continues} "For it is written in the book of Psalms, 'let his habitation be desolate and let no man dwell therein {Psalm 69:25 - about Judas} and his {office of} apostle-ship let another take" {Psalm 109:8}.**

v21: **"Which of these men {WRONG - God is NOT limited in who He choses} which have stayed with us all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us,**

**Acts 1:22**

v22: **beginning with the baptism of John, unto that same day that he was taken up from us; it is necessary that one to become a witness with us regarding his resurrection."**

v23 : **And they appointed two, Joseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias.**

v24: **And they prayed {example of a useless prayer}, and said, "Thou, Lord, Who knows the hearts of all men, show which of these two which YOU has chosen,**

v25: **that he may take part of this ministry even apostle-ship, from which Judas by transgression fell, that he (Judas) might go to his own place? (Hell)"**

v26 : **And they gave forth their ballots {they voted!}; and the ballot fell on Matthias, and he was numbered (12<sup>th</sup>) with the eleven apostles.**

2. The 12<sup>th</sup> who replaced Judas is Saul of Tarsus 1Cor 7-10
- I. Delegation of apostolic authority gives some people title of Apostle without the spiritual gift of apostle.
  1. Barnabas Act 14:14, Gal 2:9
  2. John Mark, Peters delegate in writing the 2<sup>nd</sup> Epistle
  3. James the half brother of the Lord was delegated to write Epistle of James
  4. Jude the half brother of the Lord also wrote that same epistle of Jude.
  5. Apollos the delegate of Paul to Corinth 1Cor 4:6+9
  6. Sylvanus or Silus and Timothy Paul's delegates 1Thes 1:1, 2:6 carried delegated authority.
- J. Christos == one anointed, the son of David and brings together David and Paul the 2 greatest men in all of history.
  1. Paul was not self appointed but was the 12<sup>th</sup> apostle appointed by the resurrected Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ Eph 4:7-11

#### **Eph 4:7-11**

v7: **But To each one of us, Royal Family of God, the grace has been given according to the standard of the gift of Christ (He ordered the beginning).**

v8: **For this reason the scripture says (Ps 68:18) "When he ascended up on high (Intensification of the Angelic Conflict) he led captive the Old Testament Scripture believers in paradise in a triumphal procession to heaven, and he distributed gifts to men in the Royal Family of God."**

v9: **Now this doctrine that "He ascended," what does it imply?**

v10: **Except that he had also descended into the lower inner parts of the earth, into paradise where the Old Testament Scripture saints were waiting for the resurrection and ascension, the one having descended is the same person also who has also ascended far above all the heavens in order that he might fill up the deficiency with the high quality of the all things of Super-Grace blessings.**

v11: **And he gave some male members of the Royal Family of God apostleship, and others prophets and others evangelists and others Pastor Teachers**

2. This is the basis for all apostolic authority and God reverts to the deity of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and Savior to the humanity of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
3. Confidence at the end of v1 means there must be Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
4. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ means there must be Status Quo of Super-Grace
5. Paul is thus writing this at the end of his life as a Super-Grace even an Ultra Super-Grace believer under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

#### **1Tim 1:1**

v1: **Paul, an apostle with maximum absolute authority over the churches, of Christ Jesus the Son of David Messiah according to the strong absolute command from God our human Savior even Christ Jesus our security and confidence,**

#### **Lesson #2                      Series # 467                      1Tim 1:2**

- I. This verse is directed specifically to timothy.
  - A. What we know about timothy is that the others in his seminary class were very successful but timothy was a momma's boy a weak sister.
    1. He was an abject failure and he was probably the smartest academically but was a wimpy guy.
    2. Titus was the normal person and a great person.
    3. Timothy was a great momma's boy and was in fact reared by his mother and grandmother.
    4. He was a coward with great authority and did not know how to exercise it.
  - B. Profile of timothy:

1. He was the son of an unbelieving Greek father and a mother who was Jewish. Acts 16:1-3
  - i. His mother was most likely a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  - ii. 1Tim 1:5, tells us about his mother Eunice and grandmother Lois
  - iii. Father did not help much with his upbringing but the mother and grandmother were very interested in his spiritual condition and took up the slack where they could.
  - iv. It does not help any male who enters into life as a momma's boy.
2. He possessed a spiritual heritage in Bible Doctrine of Judaism 1Tim 3:15 but this was of no use to him until he had made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - i. He was taught all the Old Testament Scriptures and some he understood because they were based on Laws of Divine Establishment principles but spiritual principles were a problem for him until he was a believer.
3. He was converted under the ministry of Paul in the 2<sup>nd</sup> missionary journey at Lystra Acts 14:6, 23.
4. Paul had timothy circumcised Acts 16:3.
5. He was ordained in the ministry having recognized his own spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher and when to theological seminary under Paul and his ministry.
  - i. He studied and was a good student and he was ordained. 1Tim 4:14, 1Tim 4:5
6. He went to Philippi with Paul, Silas and Luke
7. However Paul through since had graduated and was ordained and that he could trust him with a congregation and he was left behind in Philippi.
  - i. He was to supervise the new Philippians church Phil 2:22 and this is a great commendation for him.
  - ii. Paul had great confidence
  - iii. He did great in Philippi since they were very positive to Bible Doctrine.
8. He was left behind with Silas at Bereah Acts 17:14 and joined Paul again in Athens.
  - i. He had no problem in this area as they were also under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine.
9. From Athens he was sent to Thessalonica 1Thes 3;2 and had no problem there as these people were very positive to Bible Doctrine also.
  - i. His first 3 independent missions were in the 3 most positive Local Churches going at that time.
  - ii. Paul maybe sent him to these places knowing he was weak and wanted him to gain experience in a congregation or 3 which would be conducive to building his confidence in himself.
10. He was sent to Corinth and this is where he washed out 1Cor 16:10 and he failed miserably as these believers were tough hard nosed realistic and hell raisers.
  - i. He came out of his shock at the people in the Corinthian church only when they bounced him out of their midst.
  - ii. The only person who ever tamed Corinth was Titus who eventually straightened them all out.
11. 3 of the church were very positive to Bible Doctrine but Corinth needed a pastor who would lay down the law and crack heads to get them under control.
  - i. Timothy was not up to this.
  - ii. He failed miserably and did so because he was a wimp and momma's boy.
12. He was being trained for a real tough assignment and was sent to Ephesus and at the time of this letter he was in fact in Ephesus.
  - i. This letter was written to Timothy who was a Pastor Teacher failing and it was to straighten him out.
  - ii. He had to go back under Paul and be retrained again.
13. He shared the first imprisonment in Rome Phil 1:1, Col 1:1, Phil 1 and this was a training period after Corinth.

14. After his first imprisonment he went with Paul to Ephesus where he remained as the Pastor Teacher.
  - i. At the time of this letter Timothy was Pastor Teacher at Ephesus and his failure at Corinth comes out now.
  - ii. Where people were under Positive Volition he was great and he WAS a great teacher.
  - iii. He could analyze and communicate Bible Doctrine and in the churches which were under Positive Volition they loved him and carried him along.
  - iv. However, In personality he was on the weak side of things.
  - v. He did not know what to do when a woman pushed him around or when he got bullied a little bit and when he was being challenged and did not know what to do and prayed about the challenges.
  - vi. When a person challenges the authority of the Pastor Teacher they don't pray about that but smash the person out of the congregation.
  - vii. Timothy was too easy going but he was being groomed for the toughest place of all Ephesus.
15. We are however thankful for the wimpy timothy for these 2 epistles talk about the things which are very interesting to us as believers.
  - i. Women, Whiskey, Money, etc.
  - ii. Timothy had to deal with this in Ephesus constantly.
  - iii. For a variety of practical and interesting subjects 1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> Timothy are the best.
  - iv. There are 3 pastoral epistles 1<sup>st</sup> Timothy , Titus and 2<sup>nd</sup> Timothy.
  - v. This is not a book for legalistic types and squeamish people.
  - vi. A feminine woman is a Grace Orientated woman but a PRISSY woman is a legalistic woman and a real man will make his wife stick to Bible Doctrine.

C. This is Paul talking to his student under his strict authority.

1. (gr) Gnesious == NOT a bastard, legitimate, reliable
2. Timothy most likely became a great Pastor Teacher after the closing of the canon because no matter how things were he always stayed with Bible Doctrine.
3. (gr) Teknon == Child under authority of the parents or Student totally under the authority of the Pastor Teacher training him, here Paul.

D. This is a full salutation with great meaning to Timothy.

1. Grace == God's plan and the fact that God has a plan for Timothy even though he is being bullied.
2. Mercy == Grace in action and what Timothy will be getting throughout this whole epistle.
  - i. This letter is ONE ON ONE Paul the apostle on Timothy the Pastor Teacher.
3. Peace == Prosperity
4. There are not verbs in these first 2 verses which are a salutation.
5. God the Holy Spirit is not mentioned in this salutation and this is compatible with the present ministry to glorify Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

II. Doctrine of Grace the Plan of God:

A. According to what is in the scripture about Timothy he was NOT a success but from what is said here in these 2 epistles he most likely finally became a great Pastor Teacher.

1. No one ever becomes great until he is roughly handled and no one becomes great by being petted and pampered which was Timothy in his home life.
2. You must be roughly handled to become great and Julius Caesar is a great example of this.
3. He was an aristocrat and was in fact petted and pampered to a point until one day a roman general said to him "Marry my daughter or I will have you executed" and Julius told him what to do with that.
4. He was roughly handled and handed it right back to others.



5. He did not let the pressure get to him and pressure is actually rough handling.
6. We all will have pressures in life and greatness comes from pressures in life.
7. Someone has to stick your nose in the mud with pressure and you have to use Bible Doctrine to overcome it.
8. Timothy had pressure and there is no indication that he was ever fired from Ephesus or left Ephesus and the fact that he stuck in there indicates that he made it well.

B. Definition:

1. Grace is all God is free to do for man on the basis of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death work of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross.
2. Grace is God's freedom and consistency to express his love to mankind without compromise or jeopardizing his essence.
3. No one can truly or rightly give outside of freedom and God freely gives because of the cross.
4. Grace therefore is the Plan of God on behalf of man beginning at the cross and is both the Plan of God and policy of God regarding mankind.
5. Grace is the plan, policy, function and mechanics of divine Modus Operandi.
6. Under grace God does all the work and providing and man does all the receiving and all the benefiting.

C. Concept:

1. Grace depends on the essence or character of God therefore on who and what God is.
2. Grace is what God can do for man and be consistent with is own essence.
3. Grace is God's relationship with the believer as well as his way of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
4. Grace is all God can do for man from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to eternity totally apart from man's merit ability talent or planning.
5. Grace is the genius of God and Bible Doctrine is the manifestation of that genius.
6. The great enemy of grace is EVIL, legalism, and reversionism
7. Legalism as enemy of grace is man's intrusion into the Plan of God with his own works, ability, talents, plans, or dreams or man's intrusion into the Plan of God with his own spiritual declension of reversionism, or man's intrusion into the Plan of God under the influence of evil.
8. Grace is totally antagonistic to evil, legalism, or religion and when a believer influenced by evil, reversionism or religion he intrudes into the Plan of God.
9. Being influence by legalism this is his own personal human energy intrusion.
10. Being influenced by evil it is a satanic intrusion into the Plan of God since evil puts a believer under the influence of Satan and his policies.
11. Being in reversionism this is an apostate intrusion combining these first 2 intrusions.
12. The believer must be able to sort out the difference between GRACE and Legalism, being influenced by Bible Doctrine and by Evil, spiritual growth to Super-Grace and spiritual declension to reversionism.
13. The believer often clings to some talent or ability or plan or gimmick by which he seeks to infiltrate the Plan of God.
14. God does not need anything from us and if God wants a believer to use his talents or abilities or successes there must first be consistent inculcation of Bible Doctrine to the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God which makes these meaningful and useful as part of the function of the royal priesthood.
15. God is not interested in our Talent, Ability, Attractiveness, Smart Ideas but only in the fact that in our being nothing before him he likes to add to nothing as part of GRACE.
16. God takes nothing and makes it something but God does not take something for any reason and as soon as something intrudes on the Plan of God something becomes NOTHING.

17. The true issue is “Is something going to be nothing OR is nothing going to be something”.
  18. Anything which man could add to or throw into the Plan of God would destroy the concept of GRACE.
  19. The Plan of God operation Grace is never destroyed or neutralized because Grace rejects all human efforts and abilities.
  20. Legalism, Evil, reversionism and grace cannot coexist.
  21. Grace is related to the new contract for the church.
- D. The key to the salutation is GRACE and grace in action is MERCY and mercy leads to PROSPERITY, spiritual, temporal and dying prosperity.

### III. V3-7 the Purpose of the Pastor Teacher.

- A. Timothy understands the functions of the Pastor Teacher but these are special things about the Pastor Teacher which Timothy needs to apply to his situations.
- B. Paul’s purpose is to get Timothy to TEACH sound doctrine and shut down false doctrine.
  1. In Ephesus there is ‘sharing’ going on and the first thing the Pastor Teacher must do is shut down sharing.
  2. False Bible Doctrine must be shut down.
  3. The Pastor Teacher must put his authority on the line and must throw out false Bible Doctrine or it will eject him from the Local Church.
- C. Paul is giving a command to Timothy but is doing it nicely without being intimidating to him.
  1. Paul is in doing this recognizing that Timothy is a great student of doctrine and knows doctrine well.
  2. Paul is thus ordering Timothy to remain in Ephesus despite the fact that to this point he has failed.
  3. The point is that Failure is no reason to run ever and this applies to everyone.
  4. So you fail, stick it out and continue to move forward, running is easy but sticking is better and much harder.
  5. This makes the place of your failure the place of your success.
  6. Paul knows Timothy has the what is needed to be great but is a slow developer.
- D. Timothy is slow to develop to the life around him because.
  1. He is too smart to recognize the reality of life around him.
  2. He is subjective.
  3. He is dishonest in an honest way in that he does not have the honesty to face up to people in use of his authority.
    - i. He is trying to love the congregation rather than rule or teach them.
    - ii. His concept of leadership is being sweet to everyone and get them all to love you.
    - iii. Another concept of leadership is to get them all to hate you and then they do everything they can to follow you anywhere.
    - iv. Both are incorrect not recognizing the principle of authority and both demand an emotional involvement.
  4. Leadership is not emotional in its application.
    - i. Leadership was seen in Patton and although he never should have slapped the soldier he never should have been made to apologize to him.
    - ii. Making him apologize was a sign of great weakness in our military and governmental structure
    - iii. The guy he slapped was a yellow coward but the media put pressure on the leaders.
    - iv. Eisenhower should have told the media to shove it rather than catering to them and written a commendation to Patton for his action and bravery of his men.
  5. Timothy is like Eisenhower and a PR type and very smart (later in other studies the Col revisits Eisenhower and indicated he had the GREATEST MORAL COURAGE of all leaders in World War II).

- i. Timothy had the smarts he needed but was in a place where he needed to be tough and use his authority to clean up the mess in Ephesus.
      - 6. Paul is telling Timothy that he has failed but must STAY in Ephesus and stop trying to be nice to everyone but fix the problems of false doctrine and teachers there.
        - i. Timothy tried to love everyone and be sweet to everyone.
        - ii. Once people see this sweetness they assume weakness and when their time comes they will push you all over the place to get what they want.
        - iii. This is unacceptable for the Pastor Teacher who must control and teach the congregation.
      - 7. False teachers, legalism, religionism, reversionism, gnosticism have all attacked the congregation at Ephesus and believes all have become monsters.
        - i. The weak Pastor Teacher creates monsters among good believers who are converted into monsters by the weak Pastor Teacher.
      - 8. Paul is telling Timothy that he has to use his authority to direct and command Pastor Teachers in Ephesus to NOT teach false Bible Doctrine.
      - 9. Paul is telling Timothy to STOP all the false teaching in the church of Ephesus.
- IV. V4 is to tell Timothy to get the church oriented to dispensational theology.
  - A. The lack of this orientation is one reason Timothy is having such a problem and why there is infiltration of legalism into the Local Church.
    - 1. The Old Testament Scripture can easily be distorted into legalism and this was the problem in with the Mosaic Law and in Galatia and Timothy was from Lystra near Galatia and has this problem himself.
    - 2. There has been a lot of teaching of Bible Doctrine but this has been distorted into legalism.
    - 3. There is a need for every Pastor Teacher to properly orient his congregation to the Church Age and dispensations in general.
  - B. The people in Ephesus are under the influence of evil and constantly occupying themselves with myths or stories.
    - 1. In addition they become involved in studying endlessly Old Testament Scripture genealogies allegorizing them giving meaning to names to provide false purposes.
    - 2. Genealogies have a purpose in the Old Testament Scripture delineating descendants from one person to another such as Christ from David.
    - 3. The allegorical approach sets up a psychological system of error used to foster religious and racial pride.
    - 4. This was used by Judiasers to propagate their legalism and ignore the fact that the age of Israel was interrupted and the Church Age inserted under the doctrine of Intercalation.
    - 5. Thus Myths and Genealogies describe the failure of Timothy to put a stop to these things and take a firm stand for true Bible Doctrine and they were false doctrine which disoriented believers and led them away from the concepts of the Church Age.
    - 6. They were used to attempt to perpetuate the Jewish age when a new dispensation had already begun in history.
    - 7. The significance of the resurrection, ascension and session of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ were lost to these false teachers and judiasers.
    - 8. The suspension of the age of Israel for the purpose of calling out the Royal Family of God for the strategic battlefield royalty of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and postponement of the Jewish age was completely ignored
    - 9. They acted as if the Church Age was not here and did not exist and went right on with the functions of the Jewish age.
  - C. The persons involved in the sharings have chosen to ignore the Church Age and therefore Timothy must emphasize dispensational theology.
    - 1. Every Pastor Teacher who is interpreting the word of God MUST emphasize dispensations.

D. Principles:

1. Ephesus and all Local Churches will become involved in certain types of false teaching unless there is emphasis on dispensational theology.
2. All believers in this dispensation of the Church Age must first be oriented to the Church Age not to genesis or Mosaic Law or any other thing.
3. No Pastor Teacher can lead his congregation to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God nor fulfill his ministry apart from dispensational orientation.
4. Therefore it is important to review dispensational categorical doctrines when they are needed in teaching.

**1Tim 1:2**

**v2: Unto Timothy, not a bastard, my legitimate, reliable, faithful student totally under my authority, in Bible Doctrine: Grace, mercy, and peace or Prosperity from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.**

**1Tim 1:3**

**v3: Since I nicely ordered, commanding you to stay where you are, remain behind at Ephesus while I went to Macedonia, in order that you may instruct by direct command and order with authority certain persons under legalism, religionism, reversionism, evil not to teach heretical false doctrine,**

**1Tim 1:4**

**v4: nor to give heed or occupy themselves with myths or stories of the pseudo spirituality of the Jews from their legends, and endless, limitless, tiresome enumeration of details by allegorizing genealogies or of gnostic eons as emanations from divine unity, which category of things are the cause of or promote useless speculations rather than the dispensation of God, the Church Age ignored by these sharings, which comes by means of doctrine;**

**Lesson #3                      Series # 467                      1Tim 1:5**

- I. The positive objective of the ministry of the Pastor Teacher and our reason for being here.
  - A. This is to fulfill the objectives of bible teaching in the sphere of capacity for love.
  - B. There are 3 capacities needed for the mature believer:
    1. Life
    2. Happiness
    3. Love
  - C. Without these nothing in life is very meaningful no matter how high a person goes in life or how many friends or how great his right woman is.
    1. It is these capacities which count in life.
    2. The capacity for love is the foremost of these for this is the very key to the Spiritual Life.
  - D. Pred nom noun 'agape' == Charity in the KJV == LOVE
    1. This implies 5 doctrines:
      - i. Love
      - ii. Cat I Love for God
      - iii. Cat II Love for opposite number in romance
      - iv. Cat III Love for friends
      - v. Spirituality
- II. Doctrine of Love:
  - A. Everyone who has ever been sentimental assumes he is in love.
    1. The question is what is LOVE?
      - i. Is it catering to communism, islam, homosexuality, liberalism in all aspects, giving up our guns, cutting down military or Law Enforcement functions to allow the world to conquer us or criminals to over run us.
      - ii. All these things and compromises of every kind and even lack of separation have been and are being done in the name of LOVE but they in fact are simple stupidity.
      - iii. Does LOVE justify stupidity or vice versa.

B. Definition:

1. Love is maximum concentration, it is so great a concentration that it excludes others from the same considerations.
  - i. It is maximum affection, personal attraction emanating from the soul of the human being.
  - ii. It is exercised in the direction of God, Persons, or things.
  - iii. Love has 3 categories of objects therefore, GOD, Persons, or THINGS.
  - iv. {(ff) also DOGS}
2. Love is a soulish predilection expressed in admiration, devotion, craving, delight, pleasure, caress, passion, a show of affection resulting in intimacy toward GOD or Human beings or even things (including DOGS).
3. Love is the embodiment of soul function and concentration directed toward someone else with or without intimacy.
4. This means that sometimes love is not returned.
5. Love is awareness and tenderness of soul producing emotional sensitivity toward a person or object (or DOG).
6. Love is devotion, concentration, dedication to, and consecration of maximum esteem and *intense loyalty* to the object of love or the attraction.
  - i. Love is not understood by very many people at all and their understanding is focused on the superficial and this is stupidity.
  - ii. Love is one of the keys to life and when people don't understand it they don't understand LIFE therefore very few people understand LIFE.
7. Attraction in itself is NOT love but a preliminary to LOVE or Hate.
  - i. See Michelle David's Wife == HATE.
8. The perpetuation of Love is attachment, affection, stimulation of soul, in Cat II it is stimulation of Body, devotion, consecration, intimacy, passion, enthusiasm, and adoration.
  - i. *Worship is a category of Love when Love is directed toward God or when a woman directs love toward her right man.*
9. However, passion is not always LOVE.
  - i. It is like a fuse of dynamite it burns quickly, causes an explosion and is GONE.
  - ii. In contrast love is like an old log in a fireplace which burns as flames or smolders with a steady glow with white hot heat for prolonged periods of time.
10. There are some comments and definitions on love which are not true or erroneous and anti doctrinal
  - i. Love is NOT an egotism of two, this is pseudo love.
  - ii. Love is a long lesson in humility, this is when the opposite number has been wrongly chosen.
  - iii. She loves so many soldiers it is Platonic.
  - iv. Many novels are written about love and all aspects of love and passions.
  - v. ETC.

C. Words for LOVE are many in Greek literature but The bible only uses 2 of these words:

1. (gr) Erros == Sexual love, love of symmetry, love of beauty.

- i. It is not used in the New Testament Scripture.
2. (gr) Storge == Love of parents for children or some form of family love.
  - i. It is not used in the New Testament Scripture.
3. (gr) Agapao – Agape == Specialized Love strictly MENTAL, love which exists in the mentality of the soul thus a thinking love.
  - i. In God this is ESSENCE type love.
  - ii. It can be summarized as a Mental Attitude.
4. (gr) Phileo – Philos == General love related to all facets of the soul and is more mature expressing greater capacity for love as in indignation of Peter in John 21:15-17.

**John 21:15-17**

v15: Therefore, When they had finished breakfast, Jesus said to Simon Peter, "Simon, son of Jonas, do you love me with a relaxed Mental Attitude love under Filling of God the Holy Spirit more than these other 10 disciples?" Peter said to him with indignation, "Yes, Lord; you know from Eternity Past that I love you with every aspect mature rapport of soul." He, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, said to him, "Feed by communicating Bible Doctrine faithfully and responsibly as a shepherd with self discipline my new ignorant believer little lambs."

v16: A second time he, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, said to him, "Simon, son of Jonas, do you love me with a Relaxed Mental Attitude love under Filling of God the Holy Spirit?" He, Peter, indignantly said to him, "Yes, Lord; you know from Eternity Past that I love you with a total mature soul rapport love." He, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, said to him, "Shepherd, leading, feeding, protecting, exercising authority over my adolescent believer sheep."

v17: He, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, said to him the third time, "Simon, son of Jonas, do you love me with a total mature soul rapport love?" Peter was exasperated from repeated interrogation because he, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, said to him the third time, "Do you love me with total mature soul rapport love?" And he, Peter, replied to him, "Lord, you in omniscience know all things from Eternity Past; you know from experience and observation that I love you with a total mature soul rapport love." Jesus said to him, "Feed by communicating Bible Doctrine faithfully my mature adult believer sheep."

5. This was a dialogue between Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Resurrection Body and Peter.
  - i. Agape == Mental Attitude love and is to occur under Filling of God the Holy Spirit Rom 5:5, Gal 5:22 and is the first floor of the Edification Complex of the Soul 1John 2:5.
  - ii. This is in fact an insult to Peter because AGAPAO is a mere Mental Attitude love and you can have this love from a great distance as well as under intimacy.
  - iii. It is not the highest word for love in the Greek.
  - iv. No one can call Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ Lord except by God the Holy Spirit and it is a recognition that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is in Hypostatic Union and is Deity controlling the universe and as Humanity savior.
  - v. Peter answered the Lord in indignation telling him he loved him with total soul rapport mature total love found in the 4<sup>th</sup> floor of the Edification Complex of the Soul.
  - vi. This answer distinguishes between AGAPEO as an Relaxed Mental Attitude love and PHILEO as an advanced soul love.
6. The ignorance of the original languages results in these 2 words being erroneously applied definitions and distinctions which are far from reality of what they mean.
  - i. Agapeo is used with God as the subject when it is a Relaxed Mental Attitude toward unlovely people, it is in fact Impersonal Love.
    - a. God loves sinners

- b. God loved the world so much
      - c. This in fact means God has a Relaxed Mental Attitude toward sinners, Impersonal Love, in that he provided the potential for Eternal Life and Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    - ii. He does not however have an intimate love of Phileo with which God loves anyone who has passed the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
      - a. Richard Trench == Book on Greek Synonyms.
      - b. In the time of Rome there was a total language division which went down the Adriatic Sea
      - c. West of the Adriatic Latin was the language and everything east of the Adriatic Koine Greek was the language.
      - d. By the time the New Testament Scripture was written Latin and Greek had become exact equivalent languages.
      - e. Whether you spoke Latin or Greek you could understand and translate these exact equivalents.
      - f. These 2 words, Agapeo and Phileo were a case in point.
      - g. Both were used in the Greek of Rome.
      - h. Etymology can be ascertained at times for Greek words by going to the Latin.
      - i. (lat) Diligo == Mental Attitude Love, Relaxed Mental Attitude, Impersonal Love, the thinking of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul was free from all Mental Attitude Sins.
      - j. (lat) Ammo == Strong advanced love of emotion and mentality and all facets of the soul.
      - k. In the 2 languages these 2 words are exact equivalents to Agapeo and Phileo respectively.
    - iii. The use depends on the subject, I Love You depends on who I is.
7. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is claiming that Peter has only a Mental Attitude Love Agape but you say it is total Cat I soul love.
  - i. The command is therefore to Peter that if he actually has a total Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ soul love to FEED as a shepherd with a true sense of responsibility the Lambs.
  - ii. This is telling Peter to exercise his spiritual gift of apostle and later for all Pastor Teachers to faithfully, responsibly, with self discipline consistently study and teach Bible Doctrine to the congregations they are responsible for.
8. The Lord again in v6 used AGAPEO for Mental Attitude Love since Peter's 3 denials of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ before the crucifixion indicated a weak Mental Attitude Love.
  - i. Therefore Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Resurrection Body is reminding him of this being well aware from Eternity Past that Peter would deny him 3 times while he was being tried.
  - ii. This second question by the Lord shows that no one can love Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

- iii. To say you love Jesus is not enough and peter had previously declared his love for Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in words but these words are no stronger than the one who says them.
    - 9. In the 3<sup>rd</sup> question the Lord changes to using Phileo instead of Agapeo and is asking peter if this is really true and it is a challenge to peter.
      - i. Peter did not realize the challenge and instead of responding reacted to the question.
    - 10. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in his questions distinguishes between these 2 aspects of LOVE used in the Greek.
- D. This brings up a summary of distinctions between types of love described by the 2 words for LOVE.
  - 1. **Agapeo – Agape == Impersonal Love == Mental Attitude Love**
    - i. It's basic characteristic is freedom from Mental Attitude Sins
    - ii. It is a Mental Attitude commanded for all believers to be so toward others believers.
    - iii. We are commanded to have no Mental Attitude Sins toward other believers.
    - iv. This love is free from Mental Attitude Sins.
    - v. This is love which is exercised from AFAR and is a recognition of their privacy and demonstrates a relaxation toward other believers.
    - vi. Some of the worst people you will ever meet are believers and we are to have NO Mental Attitude Sins toward them.
    - vii. We are commanded to LOVE all believers and we are to do so by giving them their privacy and have no mental reaction or sinful reaction toward them.
    - viii. We don't have to know them or say nice things about them and are not out to win friends and influence people but simply are relaxed.
    - ix. For a Pastor Teacher to stop a service and tell the congregation to turn and tell everyone you love them is INSANITY.
    - x. This is not a friendly church and a friendly church is where your privacy and volition are protected and the only issue is consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
    - xi. The Local Church is not a lonely hearts club but an academic classroom under strict discipline.
    - xii. We find our friends where we find them but the idea of loving everyone in a Local Church is idiotic.
    - xiii. All believers are to have this Relaxed Mental Attitude Love and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit produces this.
    - xiv. Under Filling of God the Holy Spirit all sin is purged from your mind and you can have Agape LOVE.
  - 2. **Phileo – Philos == maximum CAPACITY for love, total mature soul love.**
    - i. It is the objective of the Pastor Teacher to communicate Bible Doctrine so that you will have true capacity for LOVE.
    - ii. Capacity for love in Philos only comes to the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    - iii. When your reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace and Ultra Super-Grace you have Philos.



- iv. As the Edification Complex of the Soul is developed you have the following floors built into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from Epignosis or Metabolized Bible Doctrine:
  - a. Grace Orientation
  - b. Mastery of the details of Life
  - c. Relaxed Mental Attitude – Agape Love
  - d. Capacity for life and love – Philos Love
  - e. Super-Grace Life.
- E. Both loves are found in the believers balance of residence of Metabolized Bible Doctrine and Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
  1. This is the doctrine of Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit in the body of every believer never the soul.
    - i. Our body is the temple of God the Holy Spirit and he never leave the body during his life on this earth.
    - ii. We never lose this whether carnal or spiritual, reversionistic or in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  2. The command related to God the Holy Spirit is to be under Filling of God the Holy Spirit which is accomplished by rebound procedure functions.
    - i. It has no manifestation in the early spiritual stages of the believer who is MINUS Metabolized Bible Doctrine.
    - ii. As long as a believer is minus Bible Doctrine the Filling of God the Holy Spirit has no manifestation and only produces spirituality in the believer however long or short this many last.
    - iii. On the day of Pentecost those who were gathered and received the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for the first time were Mature believer who manifest the Filling of God the Holy Spirit in certain spiritual gifts and functions.
    - iv. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit does not manifest itself until there is advance in the Spiritual Life.
    - v. When there is a maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and rebound results in Filling of God the Holy Spirit this is the balance of residency which is called experiential sanctification called “Godliness” in Timothy.
  3. In the balance of residency in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer both types of love are found.
    - i. Under Filling of God the Holy Spirit there is Agape Love or absence of Mental Attitude Sins and impersonal love.
    - ii. With maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there is Philos or total soul rapport love as Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
    - iii. Agape + Philos == Balance of residence in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul or Experiential Sanctification.
- F. Scholarship in the Christian community has failed and resulted in erroneous conclusions with regard to LOVE.
  1. It takes 8 to 10 years of academic Greek plus 10 – 15 years of intensive study to appreciate this language.

2. It is tragic that most fundamental pastors have just enough Greek to read a lexicon and write some basic Greek and describe one as Divine Love and the other as Human Love.
  3. God may be the subject of both Agapeo and Philos and Mankind may be the subject of both Agapeo and Philos.
  4. John 3:16 tells us that God loved with a Relaxed Mental Attitude Impersonal Love the world of the whole human race.
  5. Unfortunately this verb Agapeo is used for both God and Man as the unbeliever.
  6. Thus Agapeo Love cannot be simply Divine Love for the passage John 3:19 also says that the unbeliever LOVES with a Mental Attitude Love DARKNESS.
  7. If the unbeliever can have Mental Attitude love in some area it cannot be divine LOVE.
  8. The category of love and the distinction and definition lies in the verb not in the subject of the verb and is determined by analysis and exegesis of the etymology of the VERB itself.
  9. John 16:27 Philos is divine love and not only human love
  10. Most fundamental pastors are pathetic and unprepared to deal with the word of God in any meaningful way.
- G. There are 3 general categories of human love:
1. Cat I == toward God
    - i. This is for believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  2. Cat II == Toward Right Man or Right Woman.
    - i. This is for all the Human Race.
  3. Cat III == Human Friendship
    - i. This is for all the Human Race.
- H. The problem of divine love toward Man.
1. Because God is Absolute Righteousness and Absolute Justice it is impossible for God to love sinful man without compromise to the Integrity of God.
    - i. The Essence of God:
      - a. Sovereignty
      - b. Integrity == Holiness
        - i ) Absolute Righteousness
        - ii ) Absolute Justice
      - c. Eternal Life
      - d. Love
      - e. Omnipotent
      - f. Omniscient
      - g. Omnipresent
      - h. Immutable
      - i. Veracity
      - j. HUMOR
    - ii. The Holiness or Integrity of God is composed of 2 characteristics the Righteousness of God and Justice of God.
    - iii. The problem is that because of the Integrity of God God cannot love sinful man.

- iv. To love sinful man would compromise the Righteousness of God and Justice of God
  - v. The Righteousness of God cannot have anything to do with sinful man and the Justice of God can only judge sinful man.
  - vi. God is LOVE but also Justice and Righteousness therefore the only attitude God can have toward sinful man is JUDGMENT.
2. Therefore when John 3:16 says “God loved the world so much that he gave his uniquely born son”, it demands that the Justice of God and Righteousness of God remain uncompromisable.
    - i. It is a biblical fact that God loves sinful man therefore there must be some way for God to have resolved this problem.
  3. God cannot love on a sentimental or emotional basis and if the Love of God is sentimental and emotional then none of us are saved and he has therefore compromised his integrity.
  4. The Love of God is no stronger than the Righteousness of God.
    - i. This is also true of humans as well.
    - ii. A persons love is no stronger than his righteousness.
    - iii. A persons love is no stronger than his honor and integrity.
  5. The true basis for love is always righteousness, character, honor and integrity.
  6. Therefore Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ had to go to the cross no only to bear our sins but to propitiate the Righteousness of God the father in loving the world.
    - i. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross bore our sins and was God and immutable but also was true Humanity and impeccable and this satisfied the Righteousness of God and Justice of God.
    - ii. This frees God the Father to love impersonally the whole world without compromise the Integrity of God.
    - iii. For God to love the world cost God the Father a great deal more than we realize.
  7. Because Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was perfect in both is deity and humanity on the cross the Righteousness of God and Justice of God are propitiated and the Integrity of God is not compromised and the way is paved for God to love the world impersonally.
  8. Propitiation makes it possible for God to save man and love the believer with maximum personal love without compromise to his essence.
    - i. When we come to the cross we pass the point of propitiation and God loves us with maximum love without regard to what kind of believer we are.
    - ii. Whether we fail or succeed in the Spiritual Life, whether we are carnal or spiritual, whether we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or fall into reversionism, whether we are under the influence of evil and die the Sin Unto Death or reach Super-Grace or Ultra Super-Grace and experience dying grace.
    - iii. One of our 39 irrevocable assets received at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is passing the point of propitiation.
  9. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God every believer every believe passes the point of propitiation where God loves that believer with

maximum Personal Love without compromise to his essence without regard to his spiritual Status Quo. 1John 2;2

10. This was portrayed in the Old Testament Scripture through the ark and mercy seat in the Holy of Holies.
11. In addition to propitiation positional truth for the Church Age believer guarantees that every member of the Royal Family of God will be loved with the same Personal Love God the Father has for God the Son 1John 3:2.
12. This means God loves the carnal believer as much as the spiritual believer, the reversionist as much as the Super-Grace believer, believer under influence by evil as much as the one influenced by Bible Doctrine and this is GRACE.

**Lesson #4      Series # 467      1Tim 1:5**

I. Doctrine of Category I Love

A. Definition:

1. Love comes in 3 categories, Toward:
  - i. God
  - ii. Right Man or Right Woman
  - iii. Friends
2. There is an obligatory Relaxed Mental Attitude toward all members of the Royal Family of God called in the bible “Loving the Brethren”.
3. Category I love is the believers capacity to Love God and to respond to the Love of God based on Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - i. At Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God this is called Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  - ii. Category I Love Deut 6:5 as part of worship.

B. Means of Category I Love:

1. Since God is invisible and at the same time he is the object of Category I love we must see and love God through his word of Bible Doctrine.
  - i. We cannot see God therefore the ordinary means of loving God is OUT and it is only the level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which makes it possible to love God.
  - ii. The reversionistic believer is incapable of loving God he lacking Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - iii. The immature believer is incapable of loving God as well he also lacks Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - iv. While for different reason these 2 do not love God the fact remains that they DO NOT love God.
2. You cannot love God unless you know God and you cannot know God without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and you cannot have Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul unless you function under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and obey the command to not forsake the assembly of self together under the authority of your right Pastor Teacher. **1Pet 1:17**

- i. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is invisible and to love the invisible God requires Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul **Eph 3:18-19**
  - ii. We must come to know through surpassing knowledge love is actually Super-Grace love of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ ie Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  - iii. The Pastor Teacher is often the first one to come to love Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ so much and come under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ **Heb 6:10**.
  - iv. Any pastor who is consistent in studying and teaching will come to the Love of God, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ **1Tim 1:13-14**
  - v. Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the basis for Love of God and love of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
3. Category I love sets up a standard for Grace **Ps 119:132, 31:32**
    - i. The command to the believer is to love the Lord and the basis for doing so is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  4. Category I Love is the basis for Super-Grace blessings **1Cor 2:9, Is 64:4, 65:17, Ps 37:34-35**

Ps 37:34-35

v34: Make love to the Lord, Trust or perpetuate Faith Rest in the Grace of the LORD, and Guard understanding of the Character and Plan of God and Grace Orientation from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, and He in his power will Honor or give recognition to or promote you to inherit the land or have victory in time; when the unbelievers or carnal reversionistic believers are cut off you will see it.

v35: I have seen momentarily in passing the reversionist and unbeliever in great power or prosperity, and like a towering very prosperous indigenous green tree in its native fertile soil in time.

5. Category I Love is the basis for personal and national blessing **Deut 30:15, 16, 20**

Deut 30:20

v20: By loving the LORD your God, by obeying his doctrine, by holding fast to him through Grace Apparatus for Perception; for this is your life and length of days, in order that you may live in the land which the LORD promised to you, your ancestors, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob."

- i. Your personal and national blessing are tied into your attitude toward Bible Doctrine.
  - ii. Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul leads to the SALT principle where you are the preservative of the nation.
6. Category I Love motivates Combat Courage and military victory.
    - i. Believers in a combat situation is in a maximum pressure situation and in this pressure Metabolized Bible Doctrine makes the difference **Josh 23:10-11**
    - ii. As you are under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ you are able to face maximum pressure in life whether it is combat or other pressures.
  7. Category I Love provides strength for adversity and pressure **Heb 11:27, Heb 12:3**
    - i. Fatiguing and fainting the the soul is what happens when you fail to be under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

- ii. In Communion we must be able to concentrate on the person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ to remember him from our own maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
8. There is a special curse on believers who fail to become under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ Category I Love **1Cor 16:22**

1Cor 16:22

v22: **If any one has no affectionate brotherly family love for the Lord as Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, let him be cursed until the Return oh Lord and finalize their eternal curse!**

- i. The believer who does not take in Bible Doctrine will not be able to be under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and therefore he will be cursed until the Lord returns at the rapture.
  - ii. This curse dramatizes the fact that Divine Discipline is the life of all believers who reject Bible Doctrine.
  - iii. The Plan of God is something all believers are involved in and is like a bull dozer and you are either sitting up on the controls or down in front of the blade.
  - iv. The one at the dozer controls is consistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and moving to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - v. The one in front of the blade is under Divine Discipline and is a reversionist under influence by evil.
  - vi. **There is NO IN BETWEEN and either the Plan of God CARRIES YOU TO INCREDIBLE BLESSINGS OR IT CRUSHES YOU.**
  - vii. Your attitude toward Bible Doctrine determines which it will be for YOU, and you will be either carried by the Plan of God or crushed by it.
  - viii. Either you as a believer in the Royal Family of God get with Bible Doctrine and the Plan of God or you still being in the Plan of God will be plowed under by the Plan of God and Divine Discipline.
9. Witnessing must be motivated by category I love **2Cor 5:14**
- i. Most people in witnessing today do not properly provide the information of the “GOOD NEWS” that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ died a Substitutionary Spiritual Death for our personal sins on the cross.
  - ii. The fact is that they are mostly forced into witnessing against all their instincts and most often go knock on doors and make an ass of themselves.
  - iii. These believers are coerced and bullied into witnessing as a means of spirituality while he is totally ignorant of the Bible Doctrine needed for witnessing and that needed for motivation.
  - iv. If anyone is going to witness and it is commanded for us to do they must have Metabolized Bible Doctrine as motivation and Metabolized Bible Doctrine as the content for witnessing.
  - v. In effect what some organizations do to these people is teach them salesmanship methods instead of Bible Doctrine.

- vi. It is the believer with motivation from category I Love which does the job properly and correctly.
10. Description of Category I Love **1John 4:15-19**
- i. God the Holy Spirit indwells the believer and the believer under positional truth is in union with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  - ii. When a believer has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul he has maximum Category I Love and is under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and the factors of FEAR are eliminated and love and capacity for love becomes the great factor in his life.
11. Category II and III Love are also involved with this phrase of 1Tim 1:5 along with Spirituality.
- i. Review Category II and III Love and develop this concept as well as spirituality.
- C. The Pure Heart
- 1. The heard in the bible is the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - i. The Right Lobe of the Soul circulates Bible Doctrine through the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - ii. Heart refers to the mentality of the soul.
  - 2. Kardia == Heart == Thinking part of the soul.
- D. Principles:
- 1. Love is a characteristic of the soul with emphasis on what you think in your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - i. Love is in fact thinking and LOVE always has an object and you think about that object.
    - ii. Category I Love == Thinking about God
    - iii. Category II Love == Thinking about your Right Man or Right Woman.
    - iv. Category III Love == Thinking about your friends.
    - v. Category III.5 == Thinking about your DOGS.
    - vi. According to the Col this is applicable since most often DOGS are man's best friends.
  - 2. Love is what you think about some object, person or thing.
  - 3. Love demands that you have in your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the proper accourdaments including a proper Frame of Reference.
  - 4. Your Frame of Reference must be there for God, Friend, or Woman / Man.
  - 5. You must have a memory center and all categories of love are related to memories.
  - 6. You must have vocabulary to love an object.
    - i. People with limited vocabulary of expletives are not in any way a lover.
    - ii. This type of vocabulary is not able to think or define LOVE and cannot be used in the company of one who is supposed to be loved.
  - 7. This is why in the learning of Bible Doctrine we develop a greater vocabulary.
  - 8. There must also be categorical thinking and this is what gives the most benefit in expression of love during the communion ritual.

9. In addition there must be Norms and Standards and the conscience is a very important part of Love as it eliminates certain types as objects of your love.
  - i. The Norms and Standards develop categories of who should not be your friends such as those disloyal, without character, dishonest, lacking integrity in all aspects and are not qualified for Friendship.
  - ii. In Category II you eliminate certain aspects of what you expect in a Right Man or Right Woman.
  - iii. You have predetermined categories set up for Category I love of God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit.
  - iv. You must have Norms and Standards in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
10. There must be a launch pad where love goes out in thought and then action under certain categories.

E. Pure Heart:

1. Freedom from Evil reversionism or anything anti doctrinal.
2. Love is a Mental Attitude which expresses itself in many ways.
3. Pure indicates that all true lovers have a certain level of integrity, character, honor, freedom from Mental Attitude Sins, and from EVIL.
4. Pure is having genuine righteousness and character, being free from the various types of reversionism, evil, Mental Attitude Sins of all kinds.
5. Reversionists under the influence of evil with multitudes of Mental Attitude Sins cannot be a true lover and cannot in fact respond to true love.
6. When people get involved in some system of evil they totally lose capacity for love being tied into evil.
  - i. Legalism.
  - ii. Womens Lib movements.
7. There is no way to have capacity for love without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as this insulates against EVIL, Reversionism, antagonism to Character, honor, integrity, etc.

F. Spiritual growth under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit results in the believer reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

1. Reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God results in developing capacity for Love especially in Category I love, Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

II. Doctrine of the Heart:

A. Physiological Heart:

1. In the body in the thorax and is an intricate muscle which causes by its contractions the circulation of blood in the body.
2. It is a double pump which circulate blood as Metabolized Bible Doctrine in circulated in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and it is the close correlation of the mechanical function of the heard lines up with the function of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

B. Biblical heart:

1. It refers to that part near the center, the core of something.
2. It has a shape like valentines hearts
3. There is a suit in cards called Hearts and a game of hearts.



4. It is the seat of the spiritual consciousness of life used for the soul.
  5. It may have an emotional connotation in English but the heart in the bible NEVER HAS AN EMOTIONAL CONNOTATION.
    - i. All verses with “heart” within them never refer to EMOTION.
    - ii. The bible never uses heart for EMOTION nor for physiological cardiac functions.
  6. In the bible the heart refers to the ORGAN of thinking, **Prov 23:7, 1Sam 16:7, Gen 6:5, Prov 2:2, 10, 3:3, 15:14 ETC.**
- C. The essence of the heart:
1. The heart has a mechanical function in the soul and therefore has parts:
  2. Frame of Reference:
    - i. Basic area of the heart where all thought receives its basic training for function in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - ii. It is mentioned in Prov 4:4, the antechamber for understanding life.
  3. Memory Center:
    - i. This is the pump which circulates Bible Doctrine through all the other parts of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - ii. It is the memory center which takes the various thoughts from memory into the Frame of Reference and then circulates them throughout the soul.
    - iii. It sucks thought out of the Frame of Reference and circulates it into the various parts of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - iv. Review the doctrine of Memory.
  4. Vocabulary storage:
    - i. It is a supply store to allow us to develop thought.
    - ii. Our ability to think is based on our vocabulary and words are needed for any level of thought and are vehicles for thinking.
    - iii. The greater your vocabulary in the language of which you think determines your ability to THINK.
    - iv. This is determined based on the idiomatic uses of the language you think in.
    - v. You cannot think without a technical vocabulary.
    - vi. The one great thing about education and academics is the great vocabulary it provides for the one engaged in it.
    - vii. In any technical subject you must first learn technical vocabulary.
    - viii. EVERY area of thought demands a technical system of vocabulary.
    - ix. Academic Life helps us develop technical vocabularies for many aspects of life and the more these are developed the more we can think in these areas.
    - x. To be able to think in many areas or subjects is every important in development of capacity for life.
    - xi. One of the great principles in teaching and learning Bible Doctrine is to develop a technical vocabulary which is stored in the memory centers where the Frame of Reference pulls this out and evaluates the things in your life with regard to your Norms and Standards built from your vocabulary.
  5. Categorical Storage:

- i. As your vocabulary develops then you build the concepts of your vocabulary into categories and categorical thinking is extremely important in all aspects of life.
    - ii. Every field has its own technical vocabulary and the purpose of that vocabulary is to develop categorical thinking and this becomes the advance in that field.
    - iii. The more categorical storage you have the more you advance in thinking in that field.
  6. Norms and Standards of Life:
    - i. This constantly changes as you learn about life.
    - ii. As an advancing believer your Norms and Standards will advance as you take in more and more Bible Doctrine and relate your Norms and Standards to Bible Doctrine.
    - iii. If you are a reversionistic believer your Norms and Standards will decline until this decline of your Norms and Standards leads to being influenced by EVIL.
    - iv. Once all your Norms and Standards are evil then you are a candidate for the Sin Unto Death.
  7. Wisdom center or Launch pat for Application of these things to life.
  8. The doctrinal content of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul resides in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul **Prov 2;2, 10, 10:8, Ps 119:11, 19:14, Prov 15:14, Job 38:36, 1Kings 3:9+12**
- D. Facets of heart Function:
1. It can reject Bible Doctrine teaching **Prov 5:12-13**
  2. It is the source of discord and trouble making. **Prov 6:14+18**
  3. The heart of the prostitute is subtle **Prov 7:10**
  4. Hatred is part of the heart **2Sam 6:16**
  5. It suffers disappointment from promises not kept **Prov 13:12**
  6. It promotes Mental Attitude Sins **Prov 14;10, 13, 21:4, Obd 3, Eccl 2;23**
  7. It is used by women to trap men **Eccl 7:26**
  8. Frantic Search for Happiness is related to the heart **Eccl 1;13**
  9. Reversionism is described in terms of the heart **Jer 17:5, 9, Zech 7:12**
  10. Revolution and insubordination is in the heart **2Sam 15:6, Jer 5:23, Ez 6:9**
  11. Hypocrisy is in the heart **Job 36:13, Ps 55:21**
  12. The heart can be influenced by evil and becomes a major factor in reversionism and also in spiritual growth.
  13. The heart can be influenced by either Bible Doctrine or evil and which ever way it goes determines your function in the Plan of God.
  14. You can be blessed if your heart is influenced by Bible Doctrine
  15. You can be disciplined and cursed if your heart is influenced by evil.
- E. The heart is related to thinking and perception:
1. The Grace Apparatus for Perception **Deut 29:4**
  2. Reversionistic thinking **Ps 10:6:11+13**
  3. The atheist uses the heart for thinking **Prov 14;1**
  4. Rationalizing of education **Eccl 1;13-18**
  5. **Rationalizing of Mental Attitude Sins Is 47:10**
  6. False teachers communicating Deceit from their heart **Jer 14;14**
  7. It is used for meditation on Bible Doctrine **Luke 2:19**

8. Thinking superiority comes from the heart **Luke 9:46-47**
- F. The analogy of Right Man / Right Woman and the heart:
1. The Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is analogous to the Right Man even as the emotion is analogous to the woman.
  2. All members of the Human Race have both male and female parts of the soul.
  3. The male part is the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the female part is the emotion.
  4. As with Right Man / Right Woman the Male must dominate in the soul and the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul must dominate the emotion for proper soul function. **Ps 26:2, Jer 11:20, 17:10, 20:12**
- G. The heart is related to capacity for life:
1. NOT Emotion but the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  2. Capacity for life is in the thinking of the soul not the emotion.
  3. This is analogous to the woman not being fulfilled without her right man.
  4. Capacity for life is in what you think NOT what you feel, Emotion is a responder to what you think in the soul.
  5. All capacity for life is found in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  6. Just as in sex where the man initiates and the woman responds and after she responds she can become an initiator.
- H. There are positive capacities for life:
- i. Love Deut 6:5, 11:13, Josh 22:5
  - ii. Happiness Ps 19:8, 28:7
  - iii. Dynamics Job 9:4
  2. There are negative Capacities for life:
    - i. Sorrow, Lev 26:16
    - ii. pressure Ps 34:18
    - iii. Cowardice Josh 14:8, 1Sam 17:32
    - iv. Discouragement Num 32:7+9
- I. Therefore heart or the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the basic area for happiness or unhappiness and the emotion is to reflect what is in the heart.
- i. You may feel happy or unhappy but his is a reflection on what the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul communicates.
- J. The heart is an area for cursing in the soul:
1. Reversionism in the heart results in national disaster Deut 28:47-48
  2. Revenge is a malfunction of the heart Prov 24:1-2, EZ 25:15-17
  3. It is related to Psychosis Is 13:7-8
  4. Mental Attitude Sins related to the Old Sin Nature are found in the heart Ps 66:18, 101:5, Prov 6:18, Matt 12:35, 15:18-19
- K. The heart is a blessing to the growing believer
1. It is related to grace functions. Prov 24:17
  2. It is related to Grace Orientation Ex 23:9
  3. It is related to Happiness 1Sam 2:1
  4. It is the basis for stability in a crisis Ps 112:7-8
- L. The heart is the motivator of life:

1. Temporal Life Ex 35:25=26 + 35, 36:8
  2. Spiritual Life 2Cor 9:7, 1Kings 8:17
- M. The heart is related to Positive Volition Rom 10:9-10
- N. The heart is used as an anthropopathism 1Sam 2:35, Ps 78:72, Jer 23:20, 30:24

**Lesson #5                      Series # 467                      1Tim 1:5**

- I. Norms and Standards in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - A. They are developed from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    1. There are also EMPIRICAL Standards based on our LIKES and DISLIKES of things in life.
    2. There are also RATIONAL Standards
    3. There are also SPIRITUAL Standards
    4. These all reside in the conscience of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    5. Our conscience evaluates events and things in our life and either says YES or NO to them in reference to our LIKES and DISLIKES of things in life.
  - B. There are various sets of Norms and Standards in our conscience:
    1. Bible Doctrine does not set up empirical standards which are based on our senses, Taste, Sight, Smell, Hearing, Feeling
    2. There are also doctrinal standards which can overlap, supplement or supplant our other standards of life.
    3. Every SMART man has certain standards for women and vice versa.
      - i. Most often it is not every thing in a Skirt nor everything in Pants are OK.
    4. These standards are based on empiricism and doctrine only enters when the issue is believers vs unbelievers.
      - i. This type of function is a superseding standard.
    5. A man focused on Bible Doctrine cannot ever have an emotional attachment to a woman no matter how beautiful who is involved in woman lib functions for he is supposed to and WILL dominate all women who he is closely related to.
    6. If there is ever a conflict between Bible Doctrine norms and any other norms in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the Bible Doctrine Norms and Standards must supersede all others.
- II. Doctrine of Conscience:
  - A. Definition:
    1. It is the accumulation of Norms and Standards in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
      - i. Whether right or wrong, good or bad they are your very own Norms and Standards and belong only to your conscience.
      - ii. Learning Bible Doctrine will correct any erroneous, wrong or bad Norms and Standards eventually.
      - iii. One of the man advantages of being a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is to have good Norms and Standards about everything.
    2. A Good conscience is one where Metabolized Bible Doctrine establishes and supports all your Norms and Standards.

3. It is the part of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul where all the Norms and Standards are stored.
  4. Good conscience is one where it has Good of Intrinsic value or absolute good which is Norms and Standards based on Bible Doctrine.
- B. It is located in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, the thinking part of the soul. **Rom 2:15, Tit 1:15**
- C. The conscience establishes norms for both human and divine relationships **Acts 24:16**
- D. The conscience convicts of sin, evil and wrong doing and is in effect a warning that we are in sin and also warns of evil and wrong doing as you advance in the Spiritual Life. **John 8:9**
1. Therefore you are aware of Sin, Evil and Reversionism.
- E. The conscience establishes norms for both morality and the Laws of Divine Establishment **Rom 2:15**
1. Once you learn Bible Doctrine you may have an erroneous Norms and Standards in the soul but with Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul related to that error of your thinking you discover the error and correct your Norms and Standards.
  2. *Ex: You may think as a conscientious objector that all war is evil. When you get information from the doctrine of War you will change that Norms and Standards in your soul and realize that War is NOT EVIL nor SIN and that there can be Sin and Evil in war but war is in fact GOOD and is part of the mechanic of gaining and maintaining freedom for the nation. And Nationalism is the system by which God protects the Human Race from Satan the ruler of this world. This new Norms and Standards may cause you to enlist and put you in military function for a great part of your life.*
  3. There are many areas of life where we are in fact guided by our conscience and our Norms and Standards.
  4. If we are not guided by our own Norms and Standards then we get warning signals in the soul and they often cause reaction in life one which leads to sin under the concept of guilt complex.
- F. False Norms and Standards in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul produces legalism and Self Righteousness **1Cor 8:7, Gen 3:7**
1. This was the false Self Righteousness concept in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of Adam and Ishah immediately after the fall which said they should clothe themselves despite their never having been clothed ever before.
- G. The law of liberty and of freedom and certain superseding laws such as love, extreme sacrifice, expediency are also related to the function of the conscience **1Cor 10:24-29,**
1. The conscience also develops superseding laws where by you are free to do some things but because of the Law of Love toward the immature believer or Expedience toward the unbeliever or supreme sacrifice toward God, you restrain your own freedoms.
  2. Thus you will have established Norms and Standards which are superseded by the function of these laws.
- H. The conscience is the basis for patriotism **Rom 13:5**

- I. Human happiness as neutral H which is legitimate for both believers and unbelievers is based on compliance with one's own conscience.
  - 1. When you meet your own standards this results in Neutral H 2Cor 1:12
- J. Norms and Standards reside in the conscience for communication of Bible Doctrine 2Cor 4:2 and this avoids intellectual dishonesty and snobbery.
- K. The function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception builds up the divine standards in the human conscience 1Tim 1:5, 19, 3:9.
- L. Conscience can be distorted or destroyed by Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine, Scar Tissue of the Soul, Black Out of the Soul, being under the influence of evil. **1Tim 4:1-2**
- M. Conscience establishes Norms and Standards for serving God, 1Tim 1:3, Heb 9:14
- N. Conscience containing Bible Doctrine is the basis for enduring suffering, maltreatment, misunderstanding without trying to apologize or defend self or justify self in some way. 1Pet 2:19, 3:16
  - 1. In this sense the conscience is a great protection in avoiding an ego trip.
  - 2. When you have firm standards from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and stick with them you will be able to avoid this Self Righteousness ego trip function.
  - 3. We don't in any way ever come to realize how ARROGANT we actually are.
  - 4. It is amazing the number of believers who have absolutely NO MANNERS.
  - 5. Arrogance often comes from not having any Norms and Standards about something.
  - 6. Many times arrogance is actually unknown to the one involved and true humility and good manners and thoughtfulness very often go together.
  - 7. Conscience is an extremely important principle and the more it fills in with regard to all areas of life the greater you become as a believer in life.
  - 8. Knowledge is POWER and this is true and the concept of good manners and decorum and thoughtfulness are extremely important in life but unfortunately are left out much of the time in most people's early childhood training.
  - 9. Your conscience is a computer related to your capacity for life and why it is mentioned so many times in the bible.
  - 10. GOOD Conscience is one saturated with Metabolized Bible Doctrine forming Norms and Standards and grace concepts in life and thoughtfulness.

### III. Bible Doctrine without hypocrisy

- A. This means having Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and not using it for justification for sin or evil.
  - 1. Or for some rationalization or for reversionism.
  - 2. The tendency in the adolescent or Sophomore stage of the Spiritual Life is to START USING Bible Doctrine
  - 3. Some use Bible Doctrine as an excuse to Raise Hell or do some other thing which they always knew was wrong.
  - 4. Doctrine must be resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul without hypocrisy.
  - 5. Many people don't want Bible Doctrine to use them but they want to use Bible Doctrine to allow themselves to do something they always wanted to do.

6. Sophomore stage of anything is very dangerous and in the Greek means “wise fool” and this is a perfect way to describe Adolescence.
7. These have just enough Bible Doctrine to be dangerous and are using it with hypocrisy and we must learn Bible Doctrine without trying to use it.
8. Bible Doctrine is not your servant but is to be your master and it is to ENSLAVE you to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
9. Many people are students of Bible Doctrine so that they can find some justification for an erroneous lifestyle.
10. Many use Bible Doctrine to justify their practice of Legalism, Antinomianism, Licentiousness, Reversionism, Evil, Socialism, Doing Anti Establishment things

B. The 3 characteristics of True Love:

1. Pure heart or Pure Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
  - i. Love therefore must be based on Honor, Integrity, Righteousness and freedom from Evil.
2. There must be good Norms and Standards in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and freedom from evil.
3. Love has no capacity associated with it when Bible Doctrine is being USED and it is only when Bible Doctrine is the master that love has capacity.
4. The objective of the communication of Bible Doctrine in teaching from the Pastor Teacher is to produce in the soul of the believer a tremendous categorization in the soul of Norms and Standards so that the individual recognizes his slavery to Bible Doctrine and not his use of mastery of Bible Doctrine.
  - i. Doctrine enslaves us to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and we are most certainly NOT the master of doctrine.

IV. The purpose of the ministry to avoid Apostasy, Arrogance and Stupidity. V6-7

- A. This passage is directed toward Pastor Teacher but there is application to all members of the Royal Family of God as well.
  1. The teaching ministry of the Pastor Teacher is seriously hurt when he is involved in Arrogance, Apostasy and / or Stupidity.
  2. No pastor can function when arrogant or apostate or when he is stupid about Bible Doctrine.
  3. In every generation there will be pastors classified in such a way.
  4. This is referring to a reversionistic pastor and warns of the areas where this type of Pastor Teacher is hurt in communication of Bible Doctrine.
  5. No pastor can become apostate, arrogant nor stupid and still effectively communicate Bible Doctrine.
  6. Pastors sin, fail and foul up from time to time as anyone else but can still do a great job in communication of Bible Doctrine.
  7. This verse is directed specifically toward the Pastor Teacher who is arrogant apostate and in reversionism.
- B. False Standards of the failing Pastor Teacher.
  1. These pastors being referred to here were at the very beginning of the Church Age and did not actually recognize the dispensation of the church and wanted to teach the Mosaic Law as in the age of Israel.

2. These pastors and many many fundamentalist pastors today are anti dispensational and is only recognized in a very small number of seminaries in all of our history.
  3. Traditional theology is called today covenant theology and it destroys and blurs all dispensational distinctions.
- C. The Judiasers have come to Ephesus and many are believers but they are still depending in the Mosaic Law and don't recognize any change in the dispensations.
1. They come to teach the Mosaic Law and distort it into a system of legalism.
  2. The recognize the Mosaic Law as a means of salvation and keeping it as a means of spirituality.
  3. This was a very popular form of reversionism in the early church and belonged to Pastor Teachers who did not know about the changing of the dispensations and were blanked out on it.
  4. Both the books of Romans and Galatians in part deal with this subject.
    - i. Gal 1-3 demonstrate you cannot have salvation by keeping the law
    - ii. Gal 4-6 demonstrate you cannot be spiritual by keeping the law.
  5. For a Pastor Teacher in the Church Age to become a teacher of the law is Apostasy but also Dispensational disorientation.
  6. Levites and prophets of Israel were all law teachers correctly so but once the dispensations change to be a law teacher becomes a great distortion of the law and the portions of the law where it is contained and this distortion becomes LEGALISM.
  7. This is and has been since the writing of the New Testament Scripture canon the Church Age not the age of Israel, and a dispensation of the Royal Family of God an inserted period of history.
  8. This new dispensation demands the teaching of the Mystery Doctrine or everything pertaining to Church Age Bible Doctrine
  9. Pastor Teacher in the Church Age must teach Church Age doctrine and must orient the believer to Church Age doctrine.
  10. Those who fail to recognize the change in dispensation and continue to teach the Mosaic Law and totally out of line EX: 7<sup>th</sup> day Adventists.
  11. Thus Paul is criticizing the Pastor Teachers in the area around Ephesus for doing just this.

## V. Dispensations:

### A. Definition:

1. A dispensation is a period of Human History expressed in terms of divine revelation.
  - i. God has divided Human History into proper dispensations.
2. As a whole they become a divine outline of Human History as well as God's categories of Human History.
  - i. History is often divided up into periods by historians based on certain functions in history and on their own interpretations of cataclysmic events of history.
  - ii. The Napoleonic Era, Congress of Vienna, 20<sup>th</sup> century from 1918 on.
3. God has the perfect interpretation of Human History which is the spiritual interpretation called DISPENSATIONS.
4. It is a period of history from the stand point of divine interpretation.



5. It is the Plan of God for man related to time.
    - i. The believers orientation to both time and history is essential for the believer to understand the Plan of God and God's purpose in time.
    - ii. In every dispensation God administers his plan through specific agencies.
    - iii. God always has communicators of Bible Doctrine:
      - a. Age of Israel == Levitical priests and prophets
      - b. Church Age == Apostles (ad 96) Pastor Teacher and Evangelists
      - c. There are only a few in each dispensation and these change radically in each dispensation.
      - d. God administers through varied agencies and has his stewards in each dispensation
    - iv. Salvation is always the same in all dispensations and it never varies or changes and ONLY the manner of revelation of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ changes.
- B. Biblical Vocabulary for dispensations:
1. It is Greek being revealed in the New Testament Scripture which is predominately GREEK.
  2. (gr) Chronos == Time == Chronology == time as a succession of events.
    - i. Minutes
    - ii. Hours
  3. (gr) Kiros == Time as an epoch or era
    - i. Used for organization of historical events into their specific categories  
**1Thes 5:1**
  4. (gr) Aion == Ages or periods of time.
    - i. It is a divine category of Human History and is often translated AGE Eph 3;2, Col 1:25.
  5. (gr) Oikonomia == management or administration of an estate, dispensation or divine administration of time.
    - i. God has an administration in each dispensation.

1Tim 1:5

v5: But in contrast, the end goal or objective of instructional preaching Bible Doctrine is always capacity for LOVE, tolerance and respect for Absolute Righteousness in other believers, from the source of a pure Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul free from Mental Attitude Sins and Evil with righteousness, integrity, character, and honor; and to know along with our Norms and Standards of Life from an absolute good conscience saturated with Metabolized Bible Doctrines of the equation of hope and the Plan of God for our life, without the hypocrisy or the mask of false norms and standards.

1Tim 1:6

v6: From which some arrogant and / or apostate and / or stupid reversionistic pastors in every generation, having deviated or swerved or gone astray they themselves have turned aside from their responsibility to vain, ineffective teaching or empty talk.

**Lesson #6      Series # 467      1Tim 1:7**

- I. This book is one of the most profitable books in the bible because it is addressed to ONE person, the most wimpy individual ever Timothy.
  - A. Timothy was a Jerk, a Wimp, but he was a GOOD STUDENT.
  - B. There is always hope for anyone even the jerk and wimp because if you stay with Bible Doctrine long enough they can change.
  - C. We are indebted to Timothy for some of the most sublime and unusual passages in the bible

- D. We would only know about ½ of what we know about women if it were not for Timothy.
  - E. We would not know the difference between Wine and Whiskey except for Timothy.
  - F. There are more songs in Timothy than anywhere else in the bible and this book has more to do with capacity for life than any other passage as a general subject.
- II. Review 2 Points on LOVE 1 and 8
- A. God loves all believers the same the reversionist and advancing believer, the sinful and honorable, the one influence by evil and the one influenced by Bible Doctrine.
    - 1. God however expresses his love in different ways for each category of believer.
    - 2. See David vs Saul.
    - 3. Saul was influenced by evil and died the Sin Unto Death
    - 4. David had some of the greatest promotions when he had his 7 wives and 19 mistresses but he was always influenced by Bible Doctrine and never evil and therefore GOD BLESSED HIM.
    - 5. The Plan of God either blesses or curses depending on whether you are influenced by Bible Doctrine or Evil.
    - 6. Sin is never the issue having been destroyed by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross and REBOUND takes care of sin.
    - 7. Rebound does not bring recovery from evil Evil nor reversionism and recovery from these is a very difficult process.
  - B. V5 says “The objective of preaching or Bible Doctrine teaching is LOVE from a pure Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and from a good conscience and from Bible Doctrine without hypocrisy”
    - 1. Prue Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul means love must be based on honor, righteousness, integrity and freedom from evil.
    - 2. Good conscience means that love must be based on good Norms and Standards in the soul and freedom from evil.
    - 3. Doctrine without hypocrisy means love has no capacity apart from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul therefore the Royal Family of God must have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for capacity for love as well as life and happiness.
      - i. These all stand or fall together.
    - 4. The true objective of communication of Bible Doctrine is to produce in the soul of the believer love and the capacity for LOVE in all categories, and capacity for life and happiness and for LIFE.
- III. The objective of the ministry is to avoid Apostasy, Arrogance and Stupidity in the Pastor Teacher.
- A. Apostasy, Arrogance and Stupidity are the 3 crimes of the Pastor Teacher and no Pastor Teacher can afford any of them.
    - 1. Stupidity is often found separate from the others in some pastors who are simply stupid.
    - 2. Many fundamental pastors are clear on the principles and process of salvation and constantly espouse that the bible is the “word of god” but they are just stupid and there is nothing wrong with that part but when

they go beyond this to spirituality or some other topic they go far astray but they are not apostate and in fact are orthodox.

- B. Ineffective teaching results from a pastor who is orthodox being stupid about dispensations.
  - 1. This Pastor Teacher ignores the change of dispensations and is still living and functioning under the Mosaic Law and age of Israel is often orthodox but is stupid about dispensations.
- C. These reversionistic pastors USE their WILL to teach the concepts of the Mosaic Law as in the age of Israel ignoring the change in dispensations to the Church Age.
  - 1. This pastor is stubborn in his desire and WILLINGNESS to teach according to the Mosaic Law and not the Church Age doctrines.
  - 2. These were Judiasers who came to Ephesus after Paul and we see this in parts of Romans and Galatians but we also see it here.
  - 3. To teach the law in the Church Age is not only apostasy but is dispensational disorientation.
  - 4. The Levites and Prophets of the Age of Israel were all law teachers then and this was legitimate.
  - 5. This however is talking about distortion of the law into the means of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Spirituality.
  - 6. The Mosaic Law as part of the bible and word of God it is to be taught and it has been and will be taught but you cannot take a legitimate subject like the law and distort it by trying to push it into the context of this dispensation of the Church Age.

#### IV. Dispensations Continued:

- A. The different dispensations:
  - 1. Age of the Gentiles Gen 1-11
    - i. Period of Positive Volition Adam in the garden with Ishah.
      - a. Schofield Innocence
    - ii. Period of Negative Volition Adam and the woman and their fall.
      - a. Schofield Conscience
    - iii. Laws of Divine Establishment
      - a. Schofield Human Government
    - iv. One language
    - v. One Race of Gentiles
    - vi. Angelic Attack on Establishment or Free Will Chapter 3
    - vii. Angelic Attack on Marriage and Family chapter 6
    - viii. Angelic Attack on Nationalism Chapter 11
    - ix. The scope is from Creation to Babel
    - x. There is no written scripture and all was revealed by God or various agencies.
    - xi. There was no missionary agency
    - xii. Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God was by faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone.
    - xiii. People reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Super-Grace on the basis of the Bible Doctrine they had received Heb 11.
  - 2. Age of Israel:
    - i. Period of the Patriarchs

- a. Abraham to Moses
  - ii. Period of the Law
    - a. This was interrupted by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death, Resurrection, Ascension and Session in order that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone at the right hand of God the Father might have his battlefield royalty accompanied by a royal family from the believers in the Church Age.
    - b. When the Royal Family of God is completed then the age of Israel will resume
    - c. Moses to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
  - iii. Period of the Tribulation
    - a. Rapture of the church to the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  - iv. This is a period of:
    - a. Many languages
    - b. Many nations
    - c. Many races
    - d. Development of the Jews from a race to the nation Israel,
    - e. Abraham father of the NEW Race of Jews
    - f. Moses Father of the Nation of Israel
  - v. Security of the nation from unconditional covenants
  - vi. The purpose of this dispensation was for there to be a custodian for scriptures in Human History as they began to be formed.
  - vii. Everything centers around the Jew.
  - viii. National security and prosperity came through the Laws of Divine Establishment portrayed in the Mosaic Law.
  - ix. National discipline in 5 cycles was for apostate nations.
  - x. Salvation was again by faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone.
  - xi. Spirituality was through the Faith Rest technique
  - xii. Many believers reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace as noted in the study of David.
3. Church Age
- i. Today whenever a person believes in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ he becomes part of the Royal Family of God and if a Jew he is part of the Royal Family of God as well not part of Israel.
  - ii. The great attack of Judiasers in Paul's day in Ephesus was because of Ignorance of the concept of intercalation of the Church Age in the midst of the Age of Israel.

## V. Doctrine of Intercalation:

### A. Definition:

1. Intercalation means Insertion and the age of Israel was interrupted by the insertion of a new dispensation.
2. The strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross resurrection, ascension and session at the right hand of God the Father demanded for him a Royal Family and to

accomplish this the age of Israel had to be interrupted and a new dispensation inserted to extract this Royal Family of God.

- B. The new dispensation was the dispensation of the Royal Family of God and it derives its name from its classroom the Local Church.
  - 1. The Local Church is the classroom for the Royal Family of God where they meet without portfolio, rights or privileges and only have the opportunity for concentration under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and poise and discipline.
  - 2. One teaches and ALL Learn, and this is why it is called the Church Age but better it is the Age of the Royal Family of God a unique age.
- C. This Church Age intercalation is the intensified stage of the Angelic Conflict with calling out of the Royal Family of God which caused the intensification of the Angelic Conflict.
- D. The doctrine pertaining to this new dispensation the Church Age is called Mystery because it was not known to the Old Testament Scripture writers Rom 16:25-26, Eph 3:1+6, Col 1:26-27
- E. Doctrines pertaining to the Church Age are not found in the Old Testament Scripture and where Church Age information would have occurred there is a parenthesis.
- F. Bible Doctrine pertinent to the Church Age is INTERCALATED and INSERTED by the New Testament Scripture epistles.
- G. Illustrations of the Old Testament Scripture Parenthesis concepts:
  - 1. Dan 2:v40 comes right up to the Church Age and between v40 + 41 the church age would be there but it is not mentioned because it is mystery Bible Doctrine.
  - 2. Dan 7:23-24, 8:22-23, 11:35-35, Hos 3:4-5 are the same
- H. The Old Testament Scripture reveals Bible Doctrine up through the session of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and skips the Church Age and reveals tribulation and 2<sup>nd</sup> advent and millennial information, but never says anything about the Church Age.
  - 1. This is why the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit was such a surprise on the day of Pentecost and no one had any basis for understanding it and why Peter had to lift a passage out of Joel to explain why they were not all drunk but in something brand new for this dispensation.
- I. The Church Age is the key and important factor but was being ignored by the Pastor Teachers of the time of Timothy.
  - 1. Today these still exist and are “Covenant Theologians” and do not see the Church Age as being any different from the Old Testament Scripture and that the church began in the tent of Abraham
  - 2. In the writings of Covenant Theology the word Church is used in connection with the Old Testament Scripture.
- J. WE in the Church Age have an absolutely unique age:
  - 1. The Baptism of God the Holy Spirit made us Royal Family of God
  - 2. The demand for our day is something never existing before as a balance of residency.
  - 3. The body of the believer has the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit
  - 4. The soul of the believer is never indwelt by God the Holy Spirit but when God the Holy Spirit controls the soul this is the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.

5. When the believer is carnal or in reversionism he is either quenching or Grieving God the Holy Spirit but even in this God the Holy Spirit never leaves the body and therefore there cannot be demon possession of the believer ever.
6. There is that which is worse which we were warned about by Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ himself, and that which destroys the soul is influence by evil and reversionism
7. Filling of God the Holy Spirit in the soul minus Metabolized Bible Doctrine sets up and out of balance condition in the believer.
8. This can only be balanced out by turning the minus to a plus by the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
9. WE also have the sealing of God the Holy Spirit
10. We have a completed canon of scripture.
11. These all pertain to the Royal Family of God and are totally unique giving an opportunity for believers which never before has existed.

K. The pastors in Ephesus have entered into legalistic reversionism.

1. These pastors are Mosaic Law teachers and know nothing of the Church Age nor the Royal Family of God.
2. These pastors are both arrogant and stupid.
3. With regard to men and women a very smart man is at his worst with a very dumb woman.
4. When it comes to the Mosaic Law pastors in the Church Age are at their worst and it sneaks up on their blind side since many pastors trend toward legalism.
5. Without seeing objectively why the Mosaic Law is in the bible in the first place they become subjective about it and make it a basis for legalism
6. Then they develop salvation by keeping the law which is apostasy and spirituality by keeping the law also apostasy.

L. Principles:

1. It is obvious that the reversionistic pastors in the Ephesus complex are teaching legalism related to the Mosaic Law.
2. They are teaching it from arrogance and dogmatism and are dogmatically wrong.
3. Arrogance is the man who thinks he is god's gift to women had immediately made it possible for any woman to out think him every time.
  - i. His arrogance makes him blind to this.
4. These Pastor Teachers are blind to the purpose of the Mosaic Law in the Church Age and ignorant of the Church Age doctrine.
5. This makes the smartest pastors stupid as their arrogance makes them blind to the Mosaic Law and their resultant subjectivity makes them stupid.
6. They take the subject of the Mosaic Law and approach it from subjectivity and this is stupid.
7. They are blind, apostate and stupid.

M. V8-11 explains the True Purpose of the Mosaic Law.

VI. Covenants to Israel:

- A. All theologians have divided the covenants to Israel into 2 categories not totally accurate being Conditional and Unconditional.
- B. Definition:
1. (heb) Berith (gr) Diatheke == do not mean testament such as Old Testament Scripture or New Testament Scripture.
    - i. The testament is some kind of thing where you anticipate your death and want your will to be superimposed on others after your death.
    - ii. You must die before this document becomes active and put into action and is operational.
    - iii. What we really have is NEW and OLD COVENANT.
    - iv. These words refer to a disposition made by party of the first part in favor of the party of the 2<sup>nd</sup> part.
    - v. GOD as party of the first part, makes a disposition to Party of the 2<sup>nd</sup> part for their benefit.
    - vi. God is alive and makes this disposition while alive and is still alive.
    - vii. God is not dead and only the humanity of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ died on the cross and all these covenants were made prior to the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross.
    - viii. Party of the first part makes a favorable disposition to party of the second part APART FROM PARTY OF THE SECOND PART HAVING TO DO ANYTHING TO RECEIVE THE DISPOSITION.
    - ix. This is the principle of GRACE.
    - x. This is from God to Man and is generally from God to REGENERATE Mankind.
    - xi. The ONE Exception is the Mosaic Law addressed to the Jewish NATION as a whole as beneficiary.
  2. Neither of these words refer to a TESTAMENT for the DEATH of the Testator is required to activate the testament.
  3. Such is not the case with God and he lives and cannot die.
  4. While the new covenant depends on the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross providing Redemption, Reconciliation, Propitiation it is not activated because of his physical death.
  5. On the contrary it is guaranteed by his resurrection, ascension and Session thus guaranteed by his LIFE.
  6. Therefore both these words require a compact between 2 parties with one party favoring the other.
  7. All biblical covenants are made between God and Man as he 2 parties and all with God favoring man on a grace basis.
  8. Each dispensation contains one or more covenants:
    - i. Age of Gentiles == Adamic, Noahic
    - ii. Age of Israel == Abrahamic, Davidic, Palestinian, New
    - iii. Church Age == New Covenant to the Church.
    - iv. Millennium == New Covenant to Israel.
  9. While some covenants to Israel are classified as “unconditional” and some “conditional”, these are gross misnomers as all covenants to Israel are grace

promises and provisions on the part of God as party of the first part toward individuals or Israel as the undeserving party of the 2<sup>nd</sup> part.

- C. General Classification in 5 categories:
  - 1. Abrahamic
  - 2. Palestinian
  - 3. Davidic
  - 4. Mosaic
  - 5. New
- D. The covenants of the Messianic Line deal with the issue of the Messiah and are not confined to the age of Israel:
  - 1. Jewish covenants are also related since Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ came from Israel.
  - 2. Adamic Gen 2:15-16 == Seed of the woman would come through the line of Adam
  - 3. Noaic Gen 6:18, 8:21-9:17 == Seed of the woman would come through the line of Seth
  - 4. Abrahamic == Seed of the woman would come through the line of Abraham's descent
  - 5. Davidic == Seed of the woman would come through the line of David through Bathsheba and through Nathan and Solomon.
  - 6. New covenant to Israel == Seed of the woman will return to the earth to reign over Israel Millennial reign of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and then forever.
- E. Outline of the covenant to Abraham:
  - 1. This is an unconditional grace covenant
  - 2. This promises a new race of Jews and new nation Israel Gen 12;1-3 amplified later.
  - 3. It included a promise for real estate thus the seed for the Palestinian covenant. Gen 13:14-16, 15:18-21
  - 4. Includes an eternal city of Rev 21:2+10
  - 5. It pertains to the seed of Abraham specifically through Isaac and Jacob those regenerate children and not through the Arabic descendants of Abraham.
  - 6. It is the basis for the exodus deliverance and the beginning of the nation in Exodus, Ex 6:2-8.
- F. Outline of the Mosaic or National Heritage Covenant:
  - 1. Unlike all the other covenants this one is to a group the nation Israel.
  - 2. Since Israel is always made of believers and unbelievers as well
  - 3. It is in this sense not a conditional covenant requiring regeneration since when anyone observes the Laws of Divine Establishment certain blessings will accrue.
  - 4. The national heritage of both Israel is both spiritual and establishment.
  - 5. Spiritual factors teach GRACE through the Levitical Offerings, The Tabernacle, Levitical Priesthood, etc.
  - 6. Establishment factors are what has always made Israel a great nation and this gives the unbeliever the same freedom and opportunities the believer has.



7. The recipients were the entire nation of Israel and was definitely NOT given to gentiles and NOT to the church
8. There are 3 parts to it:
  - i. Basic heritage for freedom
  - ii. Spiritual heritage
  - iii. Laws of Divine Establishment heritage

G. Real Estate Covenant:

1. God has made a land grant to the nation Israel in the millennium.
2. The nation of Israel in the millennium will start with believers then becoming believers and unbeliever but since this goes on forever it ends with believers.
3. Eventually ONLY the believers will enjoy this covenant forever.
4. This includes:
  - i. Turkey
  - ii. Saudi Arabia
  - iii. Iraq
  - iv. Tigris Euphrates valley
  - v. Most of Egypt
  - vi. The Jews have never occupied this land up to this time Num 34:1-12, Deut 30:1-9, Josh 1:3-4
  - vii. The land of the Hittites will be included and this goes all the way through turkey.
  - viii. This is a fantastic area of land.

H. Davidic covenant See the study of David.

I. Covenant to Jeremiah, New covenant to Israel

1. This will be fulfilled and God confirms the fact he will keep all these covenants.

J. New covenant to the Church

1. This covers the dispersion of Israel in the Church Age under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline.
2. It is the basis for the New Testament Scripture.

VII. Doctrine of the Mosaic Covenant:

A. The mosaic covenant is divided into 3 categories:

1. The Decalogue == The Freedom Code
  - i. These are not descriptions of morality but of freedom.
  - ii. The fact that morality is involved describes the fact that freedom is based on Laws of Divine Establishment functions which are based on morality.
  - iii. You don't have very many sins mentioned only those where freedom is violated.
  - iv. These commandments form the heritage of freedom for the Jewish nation.
  - v. Human freedom is described in terms of Laws of Divine Establishment and in terms of morality which is described as the basis for human freedom and privacy.
2. The Ordinances == The Spiritual or Theological Code:
  - i. This is the spiritual heritage of Israel recognizing that this nation and race was born from regeneration.

- ii. The race started with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob being born again regenerate believers.
  - iii. The nation was born from Moses who was regenerate and the passover commemorates the fact that those 20 or older who were liberated were regenerate as well or they died.
  - iv. It includes the doctrines primarily of Soteriology and Christology emphasizing the fact that believers are designed to function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - v. It includes the Tabernacle, Holy Days, Levitical offerings, Modus Operandi of the Levitical priesthood and other factors of the Spiritual Life.
- 3. The Judgments == Laws of Divine Establishment Code:
  - i. This is most misunderstood of all of them and most often distorted into legalism of some sort.
  - ii. It includes political and functional heritage of the nation Israel.
  - iii. It covers Freedom, privacy, marriage, divorce, military service where universal military training is commanded by the word of God, taxation, diet, health, sanitation, quarantine, system of Law and trial and evidence processes, a system of morality to back this up, delineates FREE ENTERPRISE and the ONLY basis for national prosperity.
- B. The recipients of the Mosaic Law.
  - 1. The nation Israel Ex 19:3, Lev 26:46, Rom 3;19, 9:4
  - 2. Not given to the gentiles Deut 4:8, Rom 2;12-14
  - 3. Not given to the church Acts 15;5, 24, Rom 6:14, Gal 2;19.
- C. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and the Law:
  - 1. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ kept the law perfectly during the 1<sup>st</sup> advent and is part of the doctrine of impeccability.
  - 2. It is also part of his patriotism.
  - 3. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ condemned the legalistic distortions of the law and the Pharisees who sponsored them.
  - 4. He fulfilled the law Matt 5;17
  - 5. He is the end of the law for believers Rom 10:4
- D. Keeping the law never has been nor ever will be a means of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God Gal 2:16
  - 1. While the Mosaic Law reveals the means of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God it is not the means of salvation.
  - 2. The Mosaic Law teaches the gospel but is not the way of appropriating the gospel.
  - 3. The Mosaic Law is the way of human freedom and of blessing and prosperity under the Laws of Divine Establishment but NOT the way of salvation.
  - 4. NO ONE has ever been saved by keeping the law.
- E. Keeping the law is not spirituality.
  - 1. Believers in the Church Age are under a higher law of spirituality related to God the Holy Spirit and the Grace Apparatus for Perception Rom 8:2-4, Gal 5;18, 5:22-23, 1Cor 13

- F. Therefore the Mosaic Law is limited in this intercalated dispensation of the church:
  - 1. It cannot justify Gal 2:16, Rom 3:20+28, Acts 13:39, Phil 3:9
  - 2. It Cannot give life Gal 3:1
  - 3. It cannot provide God the Holy Spirit Gal 3:2
  - 4. It cannot solve the problem of the Old Sin Nature Rom 8:4
- G. Other nomenclature for the Mosaic Law:
  - 1. Book of the covenant Ex 24:7-8, 34:27-28 Deut 4:13-16, 4:23, 31, 8:18, 9:9, 11, 15
  - 2. Addendum for the Mosaic Law Deut 29:32 is a definite part of the Mosaic Law.
  - 3. Prophecies of breaking the covenant Deut 31:16, 20, Jer 22:9
  - 4. Book of the covenant Jer 11 is not to be confused with the new covenant to Israel Jer 31:31-
- H. Past purpose of the Mosaic Law in the age of Israel:
  - 1. It was the authorizing agent for the Levitical priesthood with Aaron as founder. Heb 7:11-12
  - 2. It authorized the tabernacle as a sacred building for teaching Bible Doctrine Heb 9:1-6
  - 3. It authorized Levitical sacrifices Heb 9:12-13
  - 4. It authorized the blood of animals as a dedication of shadows Heb 9:18-22, comp 10:1.
  - 5. It established the pattern for blessing and prosperity in the nation for both believer and unbeliever under the Laws of Divine Establishment.
- I. The present purpose of the Mosaic Law in the Church Age:
  - 1. It is written for our instruction Rom 15:4 and It gives us confidence in certain areas such as:
    - i. Free Enterprise
    - ii. Gives us realization of the evil of Socialism
  - 2. Gives us realization of the evil of our federal government with its interference with various industries and permissiveness toward labor unions, enemies outside the nation and criminals withing.
    - i. The Mosaic Law gives us great confidence that our government is under evil influence and involved in evil functions (following the plan and purpose of Satan).
    - ii. Our prosperity was based on the first 150 years of our history and during that time free enterprise was the order of the day.
    - iii. We still live off the great blessings from free enterprise despite little men in bureaucracies in Washington dictate to superior men in executive business positions about whom they can hire and fire and what they can and cannot do with business.
    - iv. WE know that our government is not following the principles and processes of the Laws of Divine Establishment
    - v. Our government has cut our military drastically, they attempt to solve social problems with legislation, crime by gun legislation etc.
  - 3. It was written also for our example 1Cor 10:11-12
    - i. We can discover our failings and falls and influences of evil and aspects of reversionism from the Mosaic Law.

4. It is to convince by divine standard that the unbeliever is a sinner and needs a savior and thus is a prelude to the presentation of the gospel Rom 3:20, Gal 2:16, Rom 3:28
5. The Mosaic Law and its principles form the patterns for policy for all good national governments.
  - i. Absolutely demands universal military training.
  - ii. Strict laws of evidence in the courtroom procedures.
  - iii. Rejection of graduated income taxes
  - iv. Importance of freedom, privacy, property and free enterprise
  - v. Rejection of socialism
  - vi. Rejection of revolution
  - vii. ETC.

1Tim 1:7

v7: Without hope of success, Continually Stubbornly Desiring and WILLING to be teachers of the Mosaic Law, as in the age of Israel, since they DO NOT UNDERSTAND, from legalistic reversionism and influence of Evil, either what they have been and are teaching or concerning the things about which they make confident dogmatic assertions which are untrue.

**Lesson #7                      Series # 467                      1Tim 1:8**

I. Principle:

- A. The abrogation of the law does not imply that the Mosaic Law is bad and to the contrary it is good.
  1. It does not have the same purpose it had in the Old Testament Scripture.
  2. This was because Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Hypostatic Union came and was crucified resulting in his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross for all human sin.
  3. This required a royal family for his battlefield royalty earned on the cross
  4. Therefore the Church Age was inserted to bring out the Royal Family of God.
  5. We live now in the dispensation of the Royal Family of God the Church Age.
  6. When this dispensation is completed and the Royal Family of God is completed then the dispensation of the age of Israel will continue to the millennial reign of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
- B. The Mosaic Law as a covenant was designed to set up for Israel 2 things:
  1. Spiritual Heritage
    - i. From Codex II designed to explain who and what Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is.
  2. Laws of Divine Establishment as the basis for national prosperity
    - i. From Codex I and III and set up the principles of prosperity for the nation and social, sexual and spiritual blessing in the nation.
  3. Once we break into the age of Israel and study the Mosaic Law in the Church Age these all have a different purpose.
  4. The purpose of teaching the law in the Church Age is totally different than the purpose for teaching it in the age of Israel.
  5. The law as authorizing agent for the Levitical priesthood and for Modus Operandi of Israel is abrogated.
  6. This abrogation of the law does not removed the need to teach the law.

- C. You must understand and have Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in order to understand anything in the Angelic Conflict especially the Church Age.
1. This knowledge from Metabolized Bible Doctrine contrasts the distortion of the law by Judiasers and the true perspective of the Mosaic Law for the Church Age.
  2. WE in the Church Age do not worship on the Sabbath the 6<sup>th</sup> day, we don't have a specialized priesthood, we don't have circumcision as a spiritual ritual, there are no animal sacrifices, ETC.
  3. None of the special systems the Mosaic Law used are pertinent for us today.
- D. Principles:
1. The law must be used according to the principles within its own context.
    - i. The law itself will determine its own uses.
    - ii. You don't have to go outside the word of God to find the proper use of the law in any dispensation.
  2. In view of dispensational teaching which most pastors do not understand and the Judiasers were not aware of or agreed with, means certain things of the law advocated to the church
    - i. Thus tithing as a system of taxation
    - ii. Specialized priests
    - iii. Observation of the Sabbath Day on Saturday
    - iv. All and more are no longer valid.
  3. The law was used in the Age of Israel by the nation within a lawful context of spiritual heritage and national blessings.
    - i. Once Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ came in the flesh and fulfilled certain principles and shadows of the law they are immediately abrogated.
    - ii. Once the Church Age began the whole law was totally abrogated.
  4. Only evil and reversionism distort the law with an unlawful use.
  5. Now we go back to the basic principle of the Spiritual Life:
    - i. Doctrine was before we ever were and will be after we are gone
    - ii. Evil was before we ever were and will be after we are gone
    - iii. You cannot change Bible Doctrine but Bible Doctrine can change you and this is the road to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    - iv. You cannot change evil but evil can change you and this is the road to reversionism and the Sin Unto Death.
    - v. Being influence by Bible Doctrine is or results in blessing
    - vi. Being influenced by evil is or results in cursing.
    - vii. In between there is SIN>
    - viii. Sin is never an issue in the Spiritual Life never has been nor will be.
    - ix. Since the Church Age has occurred after the cross it is a historical fact that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ died a Substitutionary Spiritual Death for all sin on the cross.
    - x. In the Church Age which began 50 days after the resurrection of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ we never have any problems with sin for if we name that sin in the procedure of rebound it having been already judged allows us to be forgiven instantly.

- xi. This puts us back in fellowship and under Filling of God the Holy Spirit and we then ride out whatever Divine Discipline may still exist.
  - xii. Sin is never the issue in the Spiritual Life except for maintaining the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and other functions in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - xiii. The issue in the Spiritual Life EVIL vs Bible Doctrine
  - xiv. Bible Doctrine manifests the Grace of God and the Grace of God manifests the absolute genius of God.
  - xv. Evil is the genius plan and policy of Satan for ruling this world.
  - xvi. Many aspects of evil exist today as we have studied but it is evil also which takes the law and distorts it into something WRONG such as legalistic reversionism.
  - xvii. Bible Doctrine recognizes that the law is abrogated but that it still has application under the Laws of Divine Establishment and other areas such as the shadows have already been fulfilled by Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
6. Timothy must now clamp down in Ephesus on certain things being taught for false preachers all over the roman province of Asia which has become the center of Christianity are teaching false application of the Mosaic Law.
- i. Rome was not in the ancient world the center of anything except apostasy.
  - ii. Into the region around Ephesus have begun to move some terrible systems of reversionism.
  - iii. One of Timothy's job is to stamp out reversionism.
  - iv. This requires understanding the proper teaching of the Law for the Church Age.

## II. The Proper teaching of the Law:

### A. The Mosaic Law must be taught under the ICE principle for proper interpretation:

- 1. I == Isogogics
  - i. It demands that the law be related to the nation Israel in the Age of Israel.
  - ii. If you are going to teach the Mosaic Law it must be taught withing its context of the Age of Israel for the nation Israel.
  - iii. It was not given to gentiles nor the church but ONLY to the nation Israel.
- 2. C == Categories
  - i. Categories of the law must be delineated under biblical terms
  - ii. Commandments == Codex I == Spiritual and Laws of Divine Establishment Heritage of FREEDOM
  - iii. Ordinances == Codex II == Spiritual Heritage of the People
  - iv. Judgments == Codex III == Laws of Divine Establishment as the basis for good government in any nation.
- 3. E == Exegesis == The Pentateuch must be exegeted from the Hebrew language in analyzing the Mosaic Law.

### B. The Decalogue – 10 commandments and its relationship to human freedom is the only part really misunderstood.

1. They are designed to define freedom in the Angelic Conflict
  2. It is not a prohibition against sin.
  3. There are certain sins prohibited because certain sins destroy human freedom and privacy.
  4. There are very few sins mentioned in the Decalogue and there are many hundreds of sins and many are far worse than those in the Decalogue.
  5. All the sins mentioned in the Decalogue are prohibited to protect freedom.
- C. The Levitical offerings are pictures or analogies to Salvation which has been historically accomplished therefore these offerings become illustrative to enable better understanding of aspects of salvation.
1. Doctrine related to the tabernacle such as the mercy seat and propitiation.
  2. In the Old Testament Scripture it portrayed propitiation but in the Church Age it simply illustrates it.
- D. The abrogation of the Mosaic Law in the Church Age demands all believers sooner or later understand the book of Hebrews.
1. No one truly understands the law until he masters the book of Hebrews.
  2. Hebrews is also a book describing the road to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace.
- E. Though abrogated and rescinded in the Church Age the law continues to be pertinent to describe and validate certain principles of Laws of Divine Establishment.
1. These are as appropriate for us as they were for Israel.
  2. We are suffering in the United States because we don't understand the Mosaic Law.
  3. The Mosaic Law says to be secure and have prosperity in the nation you must have universal military training.
  4. If you want to stimulate economic growth you must have free enterprise and a system of taxation which does not in any way hinder those with business ability.
    - i. A Flat 10% of tax for ALL people and NO corporate taxation.
  5. If you want to have certain proper functions in life you must observe certain Laws of Divine Establishment principles such as:
    - i. Marriage principles
    - ii. Family principles
    - iii. Jurisprudence and Evidence
  6. The law therefore defines FREEDOM, PRIVACY and OWNERSHIP OF PROPERTY.
    - i. All of us as Royal Family of God have privacy as a royal priest but also as part of the Human Race.
    - ii. Privacy is an essential part of freedom for no one can make bonifide decisions if coerced.
    - iii. Therefore privacy always protects freedom.
  7. The law relates prosperity and national blessing to Laws of Divine Establishment
  8. The law demonstrates that man is a sinner and needs a savior
  9. The law reveals Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and his Substitutionary Spiritual Death as the only means of salvation.

10. These principles remain in their functional status without regard for changes in the dispensations.
  11. The doctrinal content of the law does not change with changes in dispensations but it had a direct interpretation in the Age of Israel but they all still have application to any nation wise enough to pick up the concepts of the Mosaic Law.
  12. There never was ever in the ancient world who had laws which even came close to those of the Mosaic Law and Israel.
  13. Rome came closest but were way behind Israel.
- F. The law must be revealed as a shadow pointing to the reality of salvation.
1. It must be clear that when you come to salvation principles the Mosaic Law talks about shadow functions not reality.
  2. The reality of salvation is all fulfilled in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
- G. KEEPING THE LAW must be disassociated with salvation and / or spirituality.
- H. Morality is the basis for the function of the Laws of Divine Establishment and it belongs to the believer and unbeliever alike.
1. Believers and unbeliever both can be moral.
  2. Therefore the morality advocated by the law is simply the fuel that makes the Laws of Divine Establishment function properly.
- III. The law was used in the Age of Israel as a means of condemnation and it is also used in our Church Age as a standard of condemnation.
- A. The correct use of the law v9-10.
  - B. The law is a means of CONDEMNATION never of salvation or spirituality.
  - C. The designated object here is the Mosaic Law which requires special attention.
  - D. The Mosaic Law here is described as having the highest of quality even though it has been abrogated in the Church Age.
  - E. The fundamental difference between the Mosaic Law in the Old Testament Scripture and New Testament Scripture is:
    1. That under the Mosaic Law in the Old Testament Scripture blessing is related to the Laws of Divine Establishment
    2. The exception is in rare cases where blessing was permanent and his blessing was apart from the Laws of Divine Establishment.
    3. David was not a Laws of Divine Establishment type except in his military profession.
      - i. David was one of the few people in the Old Testament Scripture who was totally influenced by Bible Doctrine.
      - ii. When he reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and received his super grace blessings he became the wealthiest man in the world.
        - a. Second to him was the King of Tyre.
      - iii. He not only kept all this wealth but he never lost it because of sin such as Bathsheba nor when he numbered the people etc.
      - iv. He never lost his wealth because he was always influenced by Bible Doctrine and NEVER by EVIL.
      - v. He had social sexual prosperity in that he had 7 wives and 19 mistresses and even this adultery and fornication did not cause him to lose his wealth.



- vi. David also was he promoted as a military commander but he was the greatest king who ever has lived and is the Norms and Standards for rulership.
- 4. Saul who was moral with only ONE wife and ONE lovely family and a clean living person and humble appearing was however influenced by EVIL.
  - i. He lived a good clean life.
  - ii. He being influenced by evil LOST wealth, prosperity, success and wound up under the Sin Unto Death.
  - iii. Living a clean life did not help him.
- 5. At some point in life you have to get down to the question of “WHAT really is the Issue”.
  - i. The bible does balance this out.
- F. The issue for every believer is Bible Doctrine vs Evil.
  - 1. The Mosaic Law in the Old Testament Scripture was the basis for prosperity for most people with only a very few exceptions such as David.
  - 2. Most in the Old Testament Scripture had prosperity from Laws of Divine Establishment.
  - 3. There are 2 types of prosperity (3 if you consider pseudo prosperity).
    - i. Spiritual
    - ii. Laws of Divine Establishment
    - iii. The difference is that there is capacity for the blessings in these 2 but no capacity in pseudo prosperity which is from Satan and only temporary.
    - iv. People who follow the Laws of Divine Establishment and gain prosperity in many categories will have capacity for it while people who gain pseudo prosperity by following the plan and principles of evil will never have capacity and therefore never enjoy their prosperity.
    - v. (This is slightly different based on later doctrinal clarification in the teaching by the Col. ff)
    - vi. Laws of Divine Establishment prosperity is for time only while spiritual prosperity is for time and eternity.
    - vii. ??? (trying to make sense of this) You can have Laws of Divine Establishment prosperity however and lose it when Laws of Divine Establishment are not followed or establishment functions in general decline.
    - viii. Spiritual prosperity is permanent and only depends on the Plan of God and what he has for you.
  - 4. Laws of Divine Establishment is for both believer and unbeliever
    - i. Spiritual prosperity is for the believer only but also has with it an appreciation for the source under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and Sharing the Happiness of God in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    - ii. This is the ability to take any reverses in prosperity with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - iii. {(ff) it would seem to me that the unbeliever functioning under the Laws of Divine Establishment also would have the capacity for his

- prosperity and for reverses in prosperity so long as he continued to function under the Laws of Divine Establishment properly}.
- iv. There is capacity for life love and happiness in spiritual prosperity for the Royal Family of God in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God
  - v. There is also it seems to me to be capacity for these things under the Laws of Divine Establishment but not to the extent it is under the concept of spiritual prosperity.
5. In the New Testament Scripture Laws of Divine Establishment prosperity exists but the emphasis is on spiritual prosperity and Dying grace.
- G. To the believer under grace Absolute Righteousness the Mosaic Law does not apply or it is not validated for the believer in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or the unbeliever under Laws of Divine Establishment righteousness.
1. These both are righteous persons v9
- H. Undisciplined people always have a miserable time in life.
1. A person without self discipline will be a miserable person all his life.
  2. God sets up authority systems from the Laws of Divine Establishment side and when that authority is rejected that person is in trouble in life.
    - i. Arrogant people never accept authority and resent it in any form
      - a. These are Jealous of authority and set off a barrage of mental sins which cause them to become jealous and this causes them to be unstable.
      - b. Many people cannot stand any authority except their own and they are the least capable of administering authority.
      - c. Sweet people are often very arrogant and people who are totally subjective and bend the conversation around to themselves and always want to talk about themselves.
      - d. They never even think to be enthusiastic about others around them.
      - e. These are the ones who pass for being sweet and spiritual giants but are the most arrogant people ever to be imagined.
      - f. These are the ones who are holy rollers or who have spirituality by works or don't believe in Eternal Security or who think they are god's gift to women.
    - ii. Those who are anti establishment people or who use Laws of Divine Establishment as a cover for crime as criminals.
      - a. This is in addition to Pride which totally rejects authority in arrogance.
      - b. For all these people they are undisciplined and rejection totally of all authority.
      - c. For them all systems of authority have failed and are totally rejected and then the Mosaic Law comes to them to try to stop these people from destroying their lives both the believer and unbeliever.
      - d. This shows the importance of the Mosaic Law in many areas.
- I. Sinning ones does not mean those who sin because we all sin.
1. This means to be influenced by sin.

2. To be influenced by sin is to be under the domination of sin.
3. If you reject authority and or law then some sin will come around to influence you.
4. EX: A murderer is a person who is influenced by sin and keeps killing others in various situations.
5. A Child rejects authority of the parents teachers and others and at some point rebels totally and murders his parent or parents.

#### IV. Doctrine of Murder:

- A. The devil is the first murderer in history John 8:44
- B. The devil motivated reversionistic Cain to commit the first Homicide. 1John 3:12
- C. Mental Attitude Sins as reactor factors motivated the first murder Gen 4:5 and Cain was jealous of Able his brother.
- D. Murder is definitely prohibited by the bible, EX 20:13, Deut 5:17 Matt 5:21
  1. Ex 20:13 is mistranslated.

Ex 20:13

v13: "You will not murder".

- i. (heb) 'qatal' == Kill and is not found here.
  - a. This is what you do as a representative of your country in opposition to foreign enemies or domestic criminals.
- ii. (heb) cal imperf 'ratsach' == to murder
  - a. This is what you do not do in your country.
- E. Capital punishment or the Death Penalty is the administration of justice not murder Gen 9:6, Num 35:30-31, Rom 13:4
  1. It is the basis for controlling crime and when it is removed crime always increases.
- F. Murder is listed as one of the 7 worst sins Prov 6:16-19 and furthermore it is the ONLY OVERT sin in that list.
  1. The 7 worst sins include 3 mental, 3 verbal and one overt one, murder.
- G. Anger as a Mental Attitude sin is a cluster which can lead to murder Matt 5:21-22
  1. Anger always is combines with other Mental Attitude Sins such as jealousy vindictiveness etc and this cluster is what can lead to Murder.
- H. Murder always involves certain Mental Attitude Sins.
  1. Jealousy Rom 1:29, Gal 5:21
- I. Murder is part of crime and must be punished by death Matt 26:52

Matt 26:52

v52: **Then Jesus said to him Peter, "Put your sword back into its sheath; FOR ALL WHO DRAW THE SWORD IN CRIME WILL DIE BY THE SWORD IN CAPITAL PUNISHMENT.**

1. This is not an excuse for staying out of military service.
- J. While murder is one of the 7 worst sins it can still be committed by a believer out of fellowship or in reversionism. 1Pet 3:14, 1John 3:15
  1. Again see DAVID.
  2. Most murders John knew were Christians but others commit murder also.
  3. The startling thing about this is that those with Eternal Life DO COMMIT MURDER.

#### V. Doctrine of Adultery (See study of David)

- A. Definition:
  1. This refers to sexual activity outside of the Divine Institution of marriage.
    - i. Sex was designed as an expression of Cat II love between Right Man and Right Woman in Marriage.

- ii. As this expression sex is not only legitimate but beautiful expressing the coalescence of both body and soul.
- 2. Adultery is categorized as:
  - i. Fornication or sex outside of marriage.
  - ii. Seduction of a member of the opposite sex.
  - iii. Homosexuality
  - iv. Incest Sex with a close relative.
  - v. Bestiality
  - vi. Pederasty as molesting children.
  - vii. Indecent exposure.
  - viii. Masturbation
  - ix. Voyeurism
- 3. Prohibition of adultery in the Decalogue.
  - i. EX 20:14, Deut 5:18 this relates it to freedom protection 1Cor 6:18, Col 3:5, 1Thes 4:3
    - a. These are sins against a persons own body.
  - ii. The only means to render these things non functional is with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - iii. Mental Adultery is also prohibited Matt 5:27-28
  - iv. Incest is forbidden Lev 18:6-17, 20:14 and it can be confusing in a family 1Cor 5:1-7.
  - v. Homosexuality Lev 18:22, this is never called a disease but is an ABOMINATION. Lev 20:13 A detestable Act Rom 1:26-, DEGENERATE PASSIONS
    - a. Sex and passion are related.
    - b. The whole idea of Lesbianism or Sodomy, Homosexuality among males is TOTALLY AGAINST NATURE.
  - vi. Bestiality Lev 18:23 20:15 when a man has sex with an animal he is to be executed and the animal killed.
- 4. Phallic reversionism is destructive to the soul Prov 6:3:2, Eph 4:18-19
  - i. Corruption of the soul includes Scar Tissue of the Soul and Reverse Process Reversionism.
  - ii. Dating an evil person and breaking up with him will allow you to avoid EVIL as well.
  - iii. Insatiable lust burns out the body and this person never has true and wonderful sexual experience.
- 5. Fornication and Frantic Search for Happiness Eph 5:3
- 6. Destructive force of promiscuity 1Cor 6:13-18
- 7. Adultery is a bonifide basis for Divorce Matt 5:32, 19:9, Luke 16:18
  - i. Various stages of phallic reversionism destroys rapport between a husband and wife.
  - ii. Every category of compatibility is destroyed.
  - iii. When a marriage breaks up and there is interim sex either one or both these 2 should never be reconciled and never can truly be reconciled. Deut 24:4
  - iv. This is because of the nature of the male and female.

8. Adultery or fornication is used in a spiritual sense to describe reversionism or apostasy Jer 3:8-10, Ez 16:23-43, 23:24-28, Rev 17:1-5, Heb 11:16
9. The sanctification of Cat II Love is marriage 1Thes 4:3-4
10. The glory of cat II love is described in the spiritual analogy of Eph 5:28-31
11. The biblical application of category II love to the single person:
  - i. The Right Man and Right Woman were designed by God in Eternity Past and therefore you must assume that there is an opposite number for you of eternal design or that God will provide something better.
  - ii. The exception is the rare case of celibacy or function under the law of supreme sacrifice such as Paul 1Cor 9:5
    - a. With Paul Bible Doctrine took the place of the woman.
    - b. Jeremiah had his Right Woman who went out and fornicated with everyone possible and God provided something better for him. He saw her die being raped by the Chaldean soldiers. She wiped herself out totally but God provided the better.
    - c. When the law of supreme sacrifice applies it is designed by God for maximum concentration and production.
  - iii. Every believer under GRACE and the Plan of God will eventually meet his Right Man or Right Woman and at the right time God will bring these together under the right circumstances.
    - a. However if you are in reversionism or under the influence of evil you may not identify the one for you.
  - iv. There is no benefit in meeting your Right Man or Right Woman unless you have waited on the Lord in faithfulness to that principle.
    - a. This means from the negative view avoiding fornication or adultery.
    - b. From the positive view having the capacity for Cat II love from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - v. Consequently the thought and life pattern must be based on the principles of Bible Doctrine that on this earth there exists your Right Man or Right Woman and no substitute will do ever.
    - a. This is not a case of cheap substitutes but one of NO SUBSTITUTE.
  - vi. Fornication or adultery is accepting a cheap substitute to gratify an emotional or biological passion.
    - a. These are part of the Frantic Search for Happiness the 2<sup>nd</sup> stage of reversionism.
  - vii. The antidote for fornication temptation is found in spiritual growth to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and erection of the Edification Complex of the Soul and establishing of the command post in the soul of Metabolized Bible Doctrine.
  - viii. Under phallic reversionism fornication builds Scar Tissue of the Soul while destroying the physical abilities of the body for sex.
    - a. Fornication is prohibited as part of the great principle of Laws of Divine Establishment freedom and a great physical and spiritual blessing under freedom.

- ix. Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul plus abstinence from sex become the basis for maximum pleasure from sex in Cat II love.
  - a. Persistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception translates the principles of Bible Doctrine into the pleasures and realities of great capacity for life and happiness.
- x. The preparation for life is persistent and daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception as member of the Royal Family of God.
  - a. In this way part of Super-Grace blessings is the blessing of sexual prosperity.
- xi. There is also a principle of pseudo love Prov 5

1Tim 1:8

v8: But we know and understand from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, that the Mosaic Law is useful, noble, blameless, good, if, maybe he will and maybe he won't, anyone potentially employs, makes use of, it properly and according to the rules, lawfully,

1Tim 1:9

v9: Understanding and knowing this Mosaic Law, from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from the past, that to the righteous one, the believer in the Royal Family of God, the high quality Mosaic Law does not apply, but in contrast, for the undisciplined lawless ones, both believers and unbelievers, who are anti establishment both rejecting and / or violating the law, and totally rejecting all authority, for ungodly ones influenced by evil and for sinning ones influenced by sin, for the unholy impious reversionistic believers and profane reversionistic unbelievers, for Parricides, murderers of fathers and Matricides, murderers of mothers, for man-slayers or murderers in general,

## **Lesson #8**

**Series # 467**

**1Tim 1:10**

### I. Pseudo Love:

- A. concentration on Bible Doctrine is to avoid pseudo love.
  - 1. Concentration on Bible Doctrine brings to us the knowledge that concentration is part of capacity for life.
  - 2. In true love there is concentration on the object of love and it is learned from assimilation of Bible Doctrine.
  - 3. With maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine assimilated into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there is ability to concentrate on Right Man and / or Right Woman in Cat II love and Friends in Cat III love without having relationships with hypocrisy.
  - 4. There must be strict academic Discipline in assimilation of Bible Doctrine
- B. When it comes to Cat II relationships between a man and woman no matter how smart a man is in his relationship with a woman he is at his worst.
  - 1. The woman may be dumb or stupid but is at her best in relationship with a man.
  - 2. The man is at his worst because of his vulnerabilities and gentlemanliness or gallantry, or stupidity or many other reasons.
  - 3. The man is very rarely at his best with a woman but a woman is always at her best with a man.
  - 4. There are therefore certain doctrinal principles given to the man to guard against divisive women but there is a vice versa principle which also applies to the woman.
- C. The divisive woman is one who has a line which will boost the ego of any male whether smart or dumb.

1. When she turns on the charm no matter how smart the guy is he will become a sucker in a moment.
  2. By flattery she immediately takes down a man's instincts and guard waiting for his Right Woman.
  3. Wormwood is the system for distilling Absinthe which is the most devastating drinks in the world and it is the most devastating of all alcoholic beverages and it can cause madness.
- D. According to the bible the seductiveness of the female body was involved with the feet because clothing covered the whole body except the FEET.
1. In addition the feet are a form of locomotion and this woman is so busy in collecting men in her type of reversionism that she is on a road to the Sin Unto Death.
- E. Her manner of lives is one where she can handle many dates in one night and is untrue to all of them.
1. This type of woman a pseudo love type is unstable and unfaithful.
  2. It is very difficult for a man to understand an unstable woman.
  3. At one point she proclaims her love for you and then does that for every guy she goes out with.
  4. There is no way any woman can truly love more than one man and only her Right Man can she truly love.
  5. Women are hard for men to understand because they don't know the background for a woman's soul.
  6. It is the men who are truly hard to understand.
  7. The woman is simple because she is a responder but she is very aggressive in her response which is absolutely legitimate.
  8. All good responding women become aggressive under those conditions.
  9. When she becomes difficult to understand it has nothing to do with menstrual symptoms or any other excuse used by and for women it means that she is not responding to YOU.
- F. When you can tell you do not have your Right Woman remove yourself from these women and don't approach her or her house.
1. In promiscuous activity your human body is shattered because of STDs which you will surely acquire.
  2. In promiscuity there is Venereal disease and impotence both which ruin the one who engages in this pastime.
- G. To deny yourself temporary sexual gratification with one who is not your Right Woman does not mean you are hurting yourself because with your Right Woman you will have great pleasure.
1. The male is not designed for many women in sex and when this occurs it results in confusion in the nation.
  2. Whatever you have to do to wait for your Right Man or Right Woman there is permanent blessing from this waiting.

**Prov 5**

**v1: My Son or Student, Solomon or any student, concentrate on my doctrine, extend your ear to concentrate on what is communicated, my understanding,**

**v2: that you may guard against feminine divisiveness or contrivance, as for knowledge of Bible Doctrine that your lips may guard it.**

**v3: For distilled honey or intoxicating sweetness drips from the lips of her who is reversionistic, and smoother or more flattering than scented oil or perfume on the body, is the inside of her mouth;**

- v4: but the entanglement with her becomes bitter like wormwood or alcoholic absent as sharp two edged sword.
- v5: Her seductive feet are going down to the sin unto death, her sexy mincing steps take hold on or embrace the Grave which is the last one she lies with. (her Future the Sin unto death)
- v6: perhaps you should consider also her manner of Lives and instability and unfaithfulness in multiple dating; she has many lovers and is unstable and is unfaithful socially and sexually, her manner of life wavers back and forth, you do not really know or understand her.
- v7: Listen to me my sons or students and do not depart nor deviate from the words of my mouth (this is doctrine)
- v8: Remove your Sex life from her and do not come near the door of her house,
- v9: Lest you give your glory of God's provision of Cat 2 Love and sex to the fakers and pseudo persons, and your years of sexual vigor to the vindictive.
- v10 Lest promiscuous women become satiated with your vigor in sexual performance, your human male body is shattered in a whore house,
- v11: and in distress you groan at your end when your bodies general health and your sexual health and phallus are ruined from venereal disease or soul destruction from fornication.
- v12: And you say, Eeek (an expression of disaster) "I have hated divine disciplinary warning from Bible Doctrine teaching and my right lobe has despised and ridiculing corrective punishment from warning divine discipline from God,
- (David as a SG believer was also Carnal and PS 38 is his discipline, but Solomon was a Reversionist under the influence of Evil, both suffered but Solomon's was much more intense Ps 38 vs Eccl + Song Sol.)
- v13: Furthermore I have not listened, I have not obeyed the voice of my doctrinal teachers instructors (his father & Nathan), nor concentrated on their instructions, message of those who have faithfully taught me. (Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine)
- v14: then shortly I was almost immediately in every kinds of evil ignoring Bible Doctrine in the middle of the worshiping congregation not listening to Bible Doctrine in the function of the nation and Laws of Divine Establishment.
- v15: Drink waters of pleasure in many sexual encounters with or from your own isolated Right Woman, (covered cistern) and flowing waters of magnificent sexual response from your own well your Right Woman.
- v16: Let your fountains, the satisfying Sex acts, be for only your right woman, and not overflow to the reversionistic promiscuous women; Your fountains of satisfying sex ability with your Right Woman shall not overflow to the dividing of waters in the streets with many promiscuous women (Male is not designed for many women)]
- v17: Let them the sex acts be for your one and only Right Woman alone, and not for a reversionistic promiscuous woman.
- v18: Your fountain or sex life will be permanently blessed as an extension of Cat II Love, therefore take pleasure in your Right Woman the woman of your vigor.  
(description of the RW)
- v19: Who is an amorous sexy symmetrical female conforming perfectly to you in the physical relationship of body with the existing coalescence of soul, a wild she goat or a vigorously sexual woman given you in grace, her breasts will intoxicate you at all times, you will always wander up and down her body in the area of her love.
- v20: So why my son or student should you wander up and down the body of a promiscuous woman or embrace the genitals of a nymphomaniac?
- v21: Before the eyes of the lord are the ways of a promiscuous male rejecting Cat 2 Love, and he weighs in the scales (RW balances the scales) all his tracks of fornications,
- v22: His own perversities and reversionism in rejection of the Right Woman will trap him with the reversionistic females, furthermore he will be seized and bound with chains of his own feminine idols,
- v23: he shall die without doctrine, and in the multitude of his follies he shall practice reverse process reversionism.

#### H. The Idols of the promiscuous male.

1. By having sex with a reversionistic woman not his Right Woman the promiscuous male is binding himself to an idol he has fashioned with his Phallus.
2. This idol of man's promiscuous manufacturing is not his Right Woman created by God for him.
3. Man in fornication has intruded on the perfect design of God.
4. Every act of fornication is another chain binding the reversionistic male to his idol of SEX.
  - i. He is therefore tied to an idol instead of his Right Woman.
5. A man who is promiscuous has created an idol with his phallus and there is no pleasure in making love to a IDOL.



6. Every inconsequential person slept with is another link to the slavery to sex.
    - i. The pleasure of sex is in the mastery of sex not in the enslavement to it.
    - ii. Slavery to sex is a great disaster.
  7. Once the Right Woman comes along for him the Phallic Reversionist is so bound to the idol of sex that he has not capacity for Cat II true LOVE.
    - i. Therefore he cannot satisfy his Right Woman.
  8. The Idol cannot satisfy him only the reality of his Right Woman can satisfy him, but the male fornicator chooses the idol and does not wait for his reality.
  9. This is the bible dealing as it does with LIFE not euphemisms about life and this is the Mosaic Law warning in many ways and here dealing with SEX and there are whole chapters dealing with Sex as well.
  10. Consequently these things still pertain to us in the Church Age.
- II. Abuse of children is totally prohibited by the Mosaic Law.
- A. Kidnapping is one of a number of abuses and children are to be disciplined but also protected and NEVER to be abused in any way especially by lack of discipline.
  - B. Every person in life has lied occasionally but this passage of v10 is referring to habitual liars.
    1. Psychopathic liars prefer to lie even when telling the truth would be easy and they do so to engage in mental gymnastics to see if they can keep it all straight.
  - C. One of the great trusts of the Mosaic Law is for these categories of people indicated in v8-10 but this is not what they were being taught in Ephesus.
    1. They were being taught they must keep the law to be saved or to be spiritual.
- III. V11 shows us that the law is not the means of salvation but the doctrine of the gospel is the means of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- A. The gospel is the means of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God v11, not condemnation and the Mosaic Law is the means of condemnation. V8-10
  - B. All facets of the gospel are related to the Essence of God totally.
- IV. The doctrine of the gospel:
- A. Definition:
    1. To define the gospel you must examine (gr) Euaggelion == compounded (gr) Eu == good, Aggelos == Good message or Good News.
    2. The gospel is therefore some kind of good news and is the communication of Bible Doctrine pertaining to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    3. It does not mean GOSSIP.
    4. The gospel is the technical word for communication of the doctrines of salvation the best news humans can receive.
    5. Therefore the gospel pertains to the message and communications of the doctrines of the work of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross.
  - B. The boundaries of the gospel 1Cor 15:1-4

1Cor 15:1-4

v1: Now I Paul make know to or remind you, brethren, in what terms I preached to you the gospel, which you accepted becoming believers, in which you securely stand,

v2: through which also you are being saved, if you hold it fast or persevere in the course of your advance in the Spiritual Life, unless you believed in vain.

v3: For I delivered, over a period of time, to you as of first or greatest importance what I also accepted, that Christ died (spiritually) in place of or instead of, in substitution for us, for our sake, for our sins according to the scriptures of the Old Testament Scripture and (Rom 5:8)

v4: And that he was buried, and that he was raised on the third day *in accordance with the scriptures*,

1. The gospel ends with the resurrection of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and these are the boundaries.
2. If you go away from the cross you are out of bounds and if you go away from the physical death of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ you are out of bounds.
3. If you deny or go beyond the resurrection you are out of bounds as far as the gospel is concerned.
4. The gospel does NOT include the FACT or PENALTY of sin.
  - i. These are true doctrines but they are not part of the gospel.
  - ii. ALL HAVE SINNED
  - iii. THE PENALTY OF SIN IS SPIRITUAL DEATH.
  - iv. These are true but not part of the GOSPEL
  - v. They are part of the doctrine of Hamartiology.
  - vi. The penalty of sin leads up to the gospel but is not part of it.
  - vii. The fact that we are sinners and that the penalty of sin is death is NOT GOOD NEWS it is BAD NEWS.
  - viii. Most evangelists tell people about being sinners and what is going to happen to them but by the time they are done with that the time is up and they just invite the people to come to JESUS and this is NOT the gospel.
  - ix. The good news is that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ did something about this BAD NEWS while he was on the cross.
5. Preaching about sin is not preaching the gospel.
  - i. Preaching the gospel is the explanation of salvation in terms of redemption, reconciliation and propitiation.
6. The boundaries of the gospel run from the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross to his resurrection.
  - i. Concepts of the heathen or whether the bible is the word of God are not at all part of the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  - ii. The only place this is done right is in a proper Local Church.
  - iii. Too many things are put forth which are out of bounds.
7. You cannot make a touch down when you are out of bounds and you cannot effectively proclaim the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ for salvation when you are out of bounds.

C. The enemy of the gospel:

2Cor 4:3

v3: And even if our gospel is obscured (Unclear to those hearing it) it is obscured to those who are perishing or lost (Unbelievers)

v4: in whose case the god of this world (Satan) has blinded the thoughts of the Unbelievers (Black Out of the Soul) that they might not see the light of the gospel which is the glory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who is the exact image of God.

1. Witnessing is for us to correct obscurities with regard to the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

2. The enemy of the gospel is SATAN.
- D. Usage of the word “Gospel”.
1. It is used with many other types of words and in most context words expand the concept of the gospel.
    - i. Gospel of Christ Rom 1:16-17 emphasizing on the person of the gospel and it demonstrates that a person witnessing is not ashamed of the one who died in substitution for his sins.
    - ii. Gospel from the glory 1Tim 1:11 emphasizing the source of the gospel as the Essence of God.
    - iii. Our or My Gospel 1Tim 2:8, 1Cor 4:3-4 emphasizing the fact that the gospel belongs to us as believers and since we possess it we also propagate it.
    - iv. The Gospel of peace Eph 6:15 emphasizing on the doctrine of reconciliation between God and man removing the barrier.
    - v. The Gospel of the Kingdom Matt 24:14 emphasizing the fact that the unconditional covenants to Israel are only fulfilled to those Jews who have believed in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    - vi. Everlasting Gospel Rev 14:6 emphasizing the gospel as the only preparation for eternity.
  2. In these phrases the CONTENT never changes but the emphasis of the gospel changes with the defining words in context.
- E. The attitude toward the gospel Rom 1:16.
1. You should never ever be afraid of anything which is God’s power and everyone is saved through the gospel as God’s power.
- F. The emphasis of the Gospel 1Cor 1:17
1. Salvation is not by baptism nor by keeping the Mosaic Law.
  2. When you get clever about the gospel you VOID the power of the cross and the gospel.
  3. Always give the gospel straight without cleverness and in your own way but make sure it is accurate.
  4. Many witnessing organizations are full of tricks and cleverness but we are not selling the gospel but presenting the ONLY way of salvation.
- G. The place for the gospel Rom 15:20
1. Proselyting is not preaching the gospel like the Holy Rollers.
  2. These organizations steal people from the Local Churches to proselytize for them and then go back to the church asking for MONEY.
  3. There is no place for the organizations outside the Local Church and they are part of the principle of EVIL.
  4. Those hooked up with them are functioning under evil Modus Operandi.
- H. The gospel is without charge 2Cor 11:7-8
1. All Bible Doctrine books and other media should be without any obligatory charge.
  2. Doctrine is to be given away ONLY never charged for and spiritual truth should never be charged for and there should not be Christian book stores.

3. When you charge \$10 for a book that is all it is worth but the value of the message of Bible Doctrine from the word of God is not measurable in terms of MONEY.
  4. You give away Bible Doctrine information and God provides the means of keeping it going and this is how every Local Church and ministry of dissemination of doctrinal information should be run.
  5. Doctrine must be free and when the information is no good the money from the inspiration of God will stop flowing.
  6. The more free doctrine is the more valuable it is and the more you charge for it the LESS valuable it is.
  7. A book which truly teaches Bible Doctrine cannot be expressed in its value to the person who uses it in his LIFE.
  8. Spiritual truth is available to all who are under Positive Volition without regard to their financial condition.
  9. The word of God is NO respecter of persons and the gospel is the same.
  10. The Judiasers were charging for the doctrines they taught the they said the payment was “keep the Law” for you cannot be saved unless you do.
  11. The dept of sin is canceled and it was paid by Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and this is the thrust of the gospel.
- I. There is a false gospel Gal 1:8
1. Those who teach a false gospel are under a curse.
- J. The gospel belongs to the Old Testament Scripture Gal 3:8
1. People in the times of the Old Testament Scripture were saved by the gospel as well.
  2. Through the gospel to Abraham all nations were to be blessed by him.
- K. The gospel is revealed by God the Holy Spirit. 1Pet 1:12
1. It is not our job to take gospel information and put it into the souls of people we communicate information and God the Holy Spirit in common grace makes this information REAL to the recipient.

#### 1Tim 1:10

v10: Fornicators of all kinds who practice sexual immorality in normal ways, abnormal fornicators who practice abnormal sexual immorality as in homosexuality and pederasty, kidnappers, habitual or psychopathic liars and deceivers, perjurers who lie under oath, and certainly whatever else that is contrary or opposed to sound, pure, correct, accurate doctrine,

#### **Lesson #9                      Series # 467                      1Tim 1:10**

- I. God as the source of blessing:
- A. The objective of God for the believer in time is to be able to bless them.
    1. God can bless you at any time any where and under any circumstances.
    2. He chooses to bless you on the basis of what glorifies him and this is the basis for our moving to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond to receive those blessings.
  - B. God is glorified when he can bless you and he is the only one who can bless you in the devil’s world and make that blessing permanent and wonderful beyond description.
  - C. The alternate to his blessing you is to provide for you Divine Discipline.
    1. Since we are part of the Angelic Conflict and the Church Age is the intensification of the Angelic Conflict this means:

- i. All of us as believers are in the Plan of God and the only question is DO YOU RIDE WITH THE PLAN OF GET CRUSHED BY IT
          - a. Are you being blessed or cursed by the Justice of God.
          - b. The Plan of God is like a bull dozer and you can ride it or be crushed under it and no matter which Status Quo you are in we all will end in the same place.
        - ii. We all wind up in heaven but there will be great variations of blessings in heaven just as there are in time.
          - a. God intends to bless you but if YOU REFUSE to be blessed he will then crush you but it will be done SLOWLY.
          - b. You refuse the blessings of God by refusing Bible Doctrine.
          - c. Therefore the issue is are you under the influence of EVIL or Bible Doctrine.
- D. Acquisition of Bible Doctrine by the believer:
- 1. We never can get Bible Doctrine from God directly.
    - i. We are under a demarcation line and we can read the bible until we are blue in the face or until we go blind and will never understand it.
  - 2. God has entrusted the communication of Bible Doctrine to special Spiritual gifts and the only one remaining is that of Pastor Teacher.
    - i. You learn Bible Doctrine through your right Pastor Teacher and once you learn some Bible Doctrine you will understand other points of Bible Doctrine but you will never get away from your right Pastor Teacher.
    - ii. If you leave your right Pastor Teacher you will stop all spiritual growth.
    - iii. Outside organizations have leaders who are NOT pastor teachers and they have no ability to teach Bible Doctrine and do not have the trust to do so.
  - 3. We get all Bible Doctrine through the trust endowed by God to the Pastor Teacher which is our spiritual growth trust fund.
    - i. If there was not some human authority between the believer and God they would be a total disaster when it came to spiritual growth.
    - ii. Today the highest authority in the Church Age is the Pastor Teacher since the completion of the canon of scripture and this is the only way for you to get Bible Doctrine.
    - iii. The great thing is that the more obnoxious the Pastor Teacher and the more you cannot stand him, the more you must depend on him and this is God's sense of humor.
  - 4. The responsibility of the Pastor Teacher therefore is to communicate the Bible Doctrine he has been entrusted with.
  - 5. The only small portion of Bible Doctrine which we are entrusted with to communicate is the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in witnessing.
    - i. This is our privilege to communicate to others for their so great salvation.
- E. V8-11 is a paragraph on LAW TEACHERS and it ends with GRACE and the GOSPEL.
- II. The purpose of GRACE: v12-17

- A. Paul uses self as a classical illustration being the worst sinner who ever lived.
  - 1. When God takes the worst sinner ever and makes him the greatest communicator of Bible Doctrine ever this is GRACE.
  - 2. As the worst sinner who ever lived he needed grace the most.
  - 3. The incredible thing is that Paul never ran out of grace and neither can or will we.
  - 4. Whether we are being blessed or crushed We cannot ever run out of GRACE.
- B. This is not a paragraph of nor idiom for gratitude and this is not one of gratitude but one of the phenomenal purpose of the Grace of God.
  - 1. There never was a time when grace dropped Paul and there cannot ever be a time when grace will let go of any of us as Royal Family of God.
  - 2. As a member of the Royal Family of God Grace will cause us to end up in heaven without regard for how important we may think we are or how great or how much a failure we may think we are.
  - 3. The arrogant or the discouraged under subjective humility will both never lose grace and grace will grind you fine and when it spits you out you will end in heaven.
- C. From Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to our death or rapture to our eternal living with God there never will be a time when God ceases to provide grace for us.
  - 1. God poured grace into Paul and he turned it around and poured it out for our benefit.
    - i. The power poured into Paul with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - ii. He was one of the greatest writers of scripture.
  - 2. The source of the written scripture is the living word Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  - 3. The Pastor Teacher must be under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ the living word in order to properly communicate the written word.
    - i. So it must be with the congregation so that they must be occupied with the written word in consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine that they may be able to be under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ the living word.
  - 4. The whole story is that the Pastor Teacher under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ then is motivated to study the written word and then he communicates that to the Royal Family of God and they must become so occupied with the written word that they become able to be under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ the living word.
    - i. This is what puts them into the Status Quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace and under Super-Grace blessings under grace rather than Divine Discipline under grace.
- D. The cause of Bible Doctrine resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the faithfulness and consistency of Paul as the apostle communicator of Bible

Doctrine and the faithfulness and consistency of God as the preserver and provider of that doctrine.

1. Faithfulness is what God requires for spiritual growth and this means consistency and WE MUST BE consistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine in order to grow up.
- E. God in looking down through history from Eternity Past decided to take the worst creature who ever lived and show the Human Race what GRACE actually is about.
1. God made him the greatest communicator of the Church Age.
  2. Therefore we clearly see that the only greatness which ever counts is greatness by grace.
  3. When God provides GREATNESS it is permanent, but when man does it for himself it is extremely temporary.
  4. As part of the Royal Family of God we don't maintain any fame or ability in life, it is God who provided it and God who must maintain it and it is permanent and wonderful beyond description and there is nothing like it and it is totally relaxing in life.
  5. Paul is totally aware of what he was and what he now is and this is NOT PRIDE.
    - i. He uses this in writing this by using the first person personal pronoun I.
  6. Arrogance was not the problem of Paul but his critics thought he was and critics most often transfer their own arrogance to the one they are criticizing.
    - i. This is what people do and they very often transfer their sins to others they disdain.
  7. Therefore verbal sins are manifestations of one's own personal failures.
- F. When Paul was Saul of tarsus the worst person ever to have lived there was one thing which was important to God.
1. God did not consider Paul's talent, genius nor his abilities as these are of no consequence to God.
  2. The things which impress the Human Race are not the things which impress God.
  3. We must be very careful about the things which impress each of us and thinking they impress God and then try to cultivate them.
  4. God is not impressed with any level of talent, genius or abilities or any other thing which impresses the Human Race.
  5. God is impressed with those things which are NONMERITORIOUS and CONSISTENT.
  6. Doctrine became the LIFE of Paul.
  7. God therefore looked down through history from Eternity Past and in Paul he saw a desire for Bible Doctrine and the word and great Divine Viewpoint and a man who would be more consistent with these things than anyone else in history.
  8. Paul on a day by day basis was more consistent about Bible Doctrine than anyone who ever lived and seeing this God did something in grace so that no matter who was against Paul, GOD established him.

9. Paul was faithful and dependable and GOD then established that in him and this is grace and grace always takes these attributes and trustworthiness and establishes them permanently the person who exhibits them.
- G. God therefore established the apostle Paul as the greatest believer of the Church Age and greatest member of the Royal Family of God and he remains established as such to this day and forever.
  1. Review the doctrine of the ministry and minister see Pastor Teacher conference of 1975

### III. Principles:

- A. This v12 is not referring to the bestowal of the Spiritual gift of apostleship which Paul did receive at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  1. This refers to something which occurred after that in the establishing of Paul in his ministry.
  2. It is not the gift in view here but the ministry which resulted from that gift.
  3. It is the ministry which is established on the basis of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- B. We must learn to distinguish between appointment of spiritual gifts and establishment of the ministry of a Pastor Teacher.
  1. All Pastor Teachers today receive their appointment at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and it is one of the 39 irrevocable assets of salvation the spiritual gift.
  2. The Pastor Teacher receives a communication gift and this is appointment.
  3. The establishing comes with spiritual growth, preparation and faithfulness to the word of God and this is the Super-Grace Status Quo of the Pastor Teacher in his ministry.
  4. This is the same thing in every believer and we are appointed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and when we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God whatever our spiritual gift is it WILL function
  5. It is Metabolized Bible Doctrine which is needed for establishment.
- C. The appointment occurs at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and is the sovereign decision of God the Holy Spirit who provides the spiritual gifts of ministry or communication.
  1. For Paul it was apostleship and Pastor Teacher functions.
  2. This is important for the 11 apostles to Israel became the 11 apostles to the church and then when they tried to elect #12 but this was no good.
  3. God had already decided to appoint Paul as #12
  4. It is one thing to be appointed and something else to be established.
  5. Paul was appointed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God on the Damascus Road but his establishment came through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- D. The establishment of the ministry comes through a consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine over a period most often a LONG period of time.
- E. The inculcation of Bible Doctrine through the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception not only brings the believer to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God but as one with a communication gift it establishes the MINISTRY.
- F. Note that for all believers the principle is the same.



1. Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul must precede service for the Lord.
  2. NEVER should it be service before or without Bible Doctrine.
- G. Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the basis for service and it establishes the ministry of the one with a communication gift.

IV. The power of Grace v13

- A. In his past as Saul of tarsus, Paul was a slanderous critic of God and Blasphemer.
- B. Paul was formerly God's greatest critic.
1. God is perfect and you don't criticize perfection and you have to be pretty mixed up to be a critic of God.
  2. God is perfect and his plan is perfect and to become such a critic is blasphemous.
  3. Paul's testimony of his function as an unbeliever Pharisee.

**Acts 22:3-4, 26:9-11, Gal 1:13-14**

- C. Considering Paul TODAY, he was the recipient of grace from salvation grace through to surpassing grace and is the most decorated man in heaven in all of history.
1. Unbelief is not just being unsaved but being totally ignorant of God and his plan and purpose.
  2. The first thing which any unbeliever understands is some portion of the gospel with which he has been evangelized under the common grace ministry of God the Holy Spirit.
  3. Paul was ignorant of grace and therefore his evil deeds were accomplished in Status Quo unbeliever.
  4. A believer can commit evil deeds but for that he must be reversionistic and this was not Paul who was the worst unbeliever ever to live.
- D. Summary:
1. The transformation of Saul of Tarsus into the apostle Paul was one of the greatest demonstrations of the POWER of the Grace of God in all of Human History.
    - i. This was one of the most unusual events of history when we consider the incredible change wrought in the apostle Paul.
  2. God's grace took the worst sinner and the most evil man in history and transformed him into the greatest man of doctrine in the word of God and this was strictly a grace function.
  3. Only grace could take such a person and not only save him but continue to mold him into the quintessence of spiritual greatness.
  4. Saul of Tarsus not only took the ROAD to Damascus but this was his road to saving, living, super, dying and surpassing grace.
  5. His purpose in going to Damascus was to extend his ministry of blaspheme, arrogance, violence, and persecution to all the church everywhere.
  6. The Grace of God changed all that when GRACE found Paul at his lowest and raised Paul to the highest level of Spiritual Life in the Church Age.
  7. Therefore Paul is a historical demonstration of the POWER of the Grace of God.

v11: According to the gospel from the Glory of the Essence of God the source of blessing and happiness which is his objective for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, with which gospel I have been constantly entrusted from my Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to my death.

1Tim 1:12

v12: I, Paul, keep on having and holding or possessing grace from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to my death, to the one who has enabled me or poured the power of the written word of Bible Doctrine into me, to Christ (messiah) Jesus (humanity) our Lord (deity) the living word its source, because he had, as the expert guide, thought and considered me from Eternity Past, dependable, faithful and trustworthy, establishing me with reference to the ministry.

1Tim 1:13

v13: Though I (Paul), in the past as an unbeliever, was formerly Blasphemous, a slanderous critic of God, and a vigorous persecutor of the church, and an arrogant violently insolent man, but in the past, nevertheless I obtained or received mercy being graced out with every category of grace from saving grace to surpassing grace, because I produced these things of arrogant blaspheme and murderous persecutions of the church, since being ignorant I acted in unbelief.

## Lesson #10

Series # 467

1Tim 1:14

- I. Timothy was a wimp an arrogant SOB who thinks his importance is greater than any other thing in the world, what he thinks about anything is of the utmost importance.
  - A. Everything in life was his problem, he had a great spiritual gift the greatest potential of any men on the Pauline team and also was the weakest sister of all.
    1. Any woman could push him around and this is a man who is not a man.
    2. Women ran him and his Local Church and he was mixed up about Money, Evil, and almost everything else except the Bible Doctrine which he learned in class with Paul
    3. Paul therefore quotes from a Hymn which is herein mistranslated.
  - B. The true issue demonstrated by Timothy is; If you are not influenced by Bible Doctrine you never will be blessed by God..
    1. The objective of God is to bless us as Royal Family of God and this will be what glorifies God.
    2. The mechanics of God blessing us are based around maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    3. When he is able to bless us because of our developed capacity, HE receives the glory and we receive the benefit or blessing.
    4. The other way is to be under the influence of evil in many forms and this puts the person under a curse
    5. These people who ignore or reject Bible Doctrine for evil are as believers still in the Plan of God and possibly even more so since God has to spend more time with them than the advancing believer.
    6. It takes more time, effort and divine energy to provide Divine Discipline for a believer than it does to bless them.
    7. If you are under Divine Discipline and God has to curse and punish you this does not provide glory to God.
    8. ONLY if God can bless you is he glorified.
  - C. Timothy must get it straight on the importance of being influenced by Bible Doctrine rather than evil.
    1. Being a reliable student in Bible Doctrine is not the only thing of importance but there must be application of Bible Doctrine as well.
  - D. Review SUMMARY:
    1. Paul was in his past as an unbeliever blasphemous and a slanderous critic of God
    2. This is the quintessence of arrogance for God is perfect and to criticize and slander God is the epitome of Blasphemy.

### 3. Principle of the Doctrine of Grace: Pg9

#### E. Understanding Grace:

1. No one can truly give or rightly give apart from freedom.
  - i. God gives out of total freedom because of the cross.
  - ii. He had to be free to give and therefore his essence had to be freed in order for him to give to sinners.
  - iii. In fact God gives the greatest possible blessings to sinners.
  - iv. Example: DAVID who was a great sinner after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - v. This is the whole point of EVIL vs Doctrine since all sin was taken care of on the cross allowing God the freedom to bless us and not compromise his essence.
2. Grace is the genius of God which allows him to do for man what he cannot earn nor deserve without compromise to his essence.
  - i. Grace is the genius of God while EVIL is the genius of Satan.
  - ii. Under grace God does all the work and provision while man does all the receiving, get all the benefit and blessing.
3. The great enemy of grace is EVIL.
  - i. Evil has many forms including many concepts except SIN.
  - ii. Sin and evil often cross but they are not the same.
  - iii. Sometimes EVIL is motivated by sin but they are separate.
  - iv. Sin is Mental, Verbal, Overt while evil falls into many categories such as Legalism, Religion, Socialism, Welfare, Anthropocentric Altruism, etc.
  - v. The true issue in life is GRACE vs EVIL and not Grace vs Sin since the problem of sin was solved on the cross.
  - vi. Since all sin was judged on the cross the issue is NEVER sin and all sins of all the world in all of history were all solved by being judged on the cross.
  - vii. From the Old Sin Nature area of strength comes Human Good and all forms of evil.
  - viii. Evil was rejected by the cross because evil is a satanic policy and is still very much in existence Satan is ruling this world and it is his policy.
  - ix. After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we simply cite or name sins to God and they are resolved because they were already judged.
  - x. When you become involved and influenced by evil it takes a LOT of Bible Doctrine and a very long time.
  - xi. Grace and Bible Doctrine are obviously related.
  - xii. One of the worst forms of evil is legalism and we must learn to sort out the differences between GRACE and Legalism and if he does not he will lose out with Bible Doctrine and miss out on the grace blessings which result from it.
  - xiii. You can work for or be a member of any organization in the the United States government or any other organization or business which is saturated with EVIL and still grow in grace in the Spiritual Life, this is just a JOB and we do our job as unto the Lord..

- xiv. You cannot however hook up with any of the so called “Christian” organizations outside the Local Church without being influenced by evil and being terribly hurt in your Spiritual Life.
  - xv. You must have constant consistent function in the Local Church with consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit daily to have spiritual growth.
- F. Grace and the new contract for the Church Age:
1. The glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ by his resurrection, ascension and session is the strategic victory of the Angelic Conflict.
  2. This dramatic victory interrupts the Age of Israel in order that the Royal Family of God may be formed to commemorate that victory.
    - i. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ died on the cross, was buried, rose again, ascended and was seated at the right hand of God the Father.
    - ii. He is there alone and is the only person in heaven with a Resurrection Body.
    - iii. Many other believers are there from the Old Testament Scripture times but they will not have Resurrection Bodies until the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
    - iv. These people have only their spirits and souls there but no bodies.
    - v. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in his humanity in Resurrection Body is SITTING at the right hand of God the Father.
    - vi. The Deity of God cannot sit being Imminent and transcendent.
    - vii. Souls don't sit only Bodies Sit
    - viii. When Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ sat down he was sitting down in his Resurrection Body and was alone in body.
    - ix. This is still true in heaven and only Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ has a Resurrection Body alone in heaven.
    - x. He needed company and he will have a huge party called the Exanastasis or Exit Resurrection or Rapture and the only way into the party is to be a member of the Royal Family of God.
    - xi. At that moment all believers of the Church Age will receive their Resurrection Body and Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ will no longer be alone.
    - xii. This was the purpose for the interruption of the Age of Israel.
    - xiii. This dispensation is called the Church Age but is really the dispensation of the Royal Family of God.
    - xiv. In the dispensation at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we each have become Royal Family of God and as soon as this family is completed then up we go to the party filling heaven with Resurrection Bodies of all the believers from the Church Age.
    - xv. This will be the time of our Efficiency Rating and there will be huge bonfires and great blessings and rewards and decorations and when the party is over then the Royal Family of God will return with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent.
  3. You cannot grow up in the Spiritual Life apart from the Local Church and your right Pastor Teacher.
    - i. Every person has a right Pastor Teacher.

- ii. This is the ONLY way of spiritual growth and there is no other way.
- iii. Thus the Royal Family of God is in the process of formation and this is called the Church Age or dispensation of the Royal Family of God.
- iv. It is formed by means of Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and at the same time we are put under the NEW COVENANT OR CONTRACT TO THE CHURCH.
- v. This is a grace contract and under all grace contracts the first party, is the trinity, the second party is the believer in the Royal Family of God.
- vi. The Royal Family of God receives constantly and does not ever earn nor deserves.
- vii. The new contract to the church a grace way which takes man inferior to angels and makes him superior to angels
- viii. One of the new aspects of the new contract is the concept of Sanctification.

G. Sanctification:

- 1. Positional Sanctification: God takes each believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and enters them into union and identification with the person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  - i. This is accomplished by Baptism of God the Holy Spirit doing the work.
  - ii. This is positional sanctification
  - iii. We therefore in union with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
    - a. Share his life, Eternal Life
    - b. Share his Absolute Righteousness
    - c. Are therefore are justified and vindicated by faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
    - d. Share his destiny this being predestination.
    - e. Share his election.
    - f. We are only predestined and elected BECAUSE we are in union with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
    - g. Share his kingship
    - h. Share his priesthood
    - i. Share his son ship.
  - iv. This is what God has given to us at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God under positional sanctification.
  - v. The first time this occurred in Human History was on the day of Pentecost 30AD.
    - a. The first ones to be in union with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ were all already saved and all those saved had this experience on the Day of Pentecost 30AD.
  - vi. Thereafter when anyone is saved this positional sanctification occurs at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - vii. Man was created to resolve the Angelic Conflict and when the first Adam failed through sin the Last Adam Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ became true humanity Heb 2:14-15, to gain victory in the Angelic Conflict.

- viii. The first Adam lost the battle and this is how sin came into the world.
  - ix. Satan was evil before the all but he could not bring evil into the world until after the fall since he had to be ruler of this world to bring evil into it.
  - x. He had to wear the crown of this world and at the fall he took it from Adam and as soon as he took the crown from Adam EVIL entered this world along with sin.
  - xi. First sin came into this world with Negative Volition in eating the fruit.
  - xii. Then Evil the plan and policy of the new ruler Satan seen by us historically in Operation Fig Leaves.
  - xiii. Both sin and evil came to this world as a result of Satan taking rulership of the world from Adam.
2. Believers in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ have 2 factors of Grace:
    - i. Positionally all Church Age believers are higher than angels
    - ii. Positionally all Church Age believers are Royal Family of God forever.
    - iii. The first part of our new contract places each believer into the Royal Family of God and makes each of us positionally higher than angels.
    - iv. The Royal Family of God also have the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit as the escutcheon or sign of the Royal Family of God and this is the basis for the doctrine of the balance of residency.
    - v. In addition we are sealed by God the Holy Spirit and have temporal and eternal security.
    - vi. Each is given an spiritual gift by God the Holy Spirit and in fact are regenerated by God the Holy Spirit receiving a new Human Spirit from him at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  3. The second part of the new contract provides for a tactical victory in the Angelic Conflict and this is the doctrine of the balance of residency.
  4. The third part is ultimate sanctification dealing with eternity where we will receive a Resurrection Body just like Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ minus the Old Sin Nature, minus Human Good and evil and minus the Lake of Fire and in many cases minus Surpassing Grace Blessings.
- H. After the rapture 7 years are used to turn in all the Efficiency Ratings and distribute all the decorations and burn all the Human Good and the last remnants of evil from the reversionists.
- I. There are 5 stages in the function of grace:
1. Saving Grace where every believer has tasted the Grace of God at least ONCE in their life Heb 6:4, 1Pet 2:3.
  2. WE have all tasted grace at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and the truly amazing thing is that MOST believers once having tasted grace don't want anymore of it.
  3. Once you have tasted GRACE you should never think of anything else besides how wonderful grace is and just love it want nothing more than to get more of it.
  4. This Is not how it is many times however.
  5. Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God gives us the first sip of grace and we gain this grace by simple faith use of Positive Volition and at that

point at that very moment we receive from God through his grace 39 irrevocable assets for the Spiritual Life and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.

6. These cannot be canceled in any way by anyone or anything.
  7. NOTHING we do good, bad, or evil can cancel the Grace of God.
    - i. This is stupid arrogance
  8. Because of propitiation each believer is under maximum love from God which frees God to pour out maximum grace.
  9. We are thus saved by grace therefore can only be blessed by grace.
    - i. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we lose out on being blessed by anything else and our primary source of blessing is through faith in God and his plan.
- J. Grace can only benefit where there is capacity for grace and all capacity for grace is based on maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
1. The capacity for grace as capacity for life is always based on the amount of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and to what extent you are influenced by Bible Doctrine in your life.
  2. The believer is saved by grace where all the trinity is involved in it, God the Father planning it, God the Son executing it, God the Holy Spirit revealing and empowering it.
- K. Living Grace is all that God is free to do for the believer on the basis of Bible Doctrine.
1. God does some things totally apart from any merit by keeping us alive on this earth.
    - i. He provides the air we breathe, food, clothing, friends, place to live, transportation, everything for life on this earth, Local Church, Pastor Teacher, Bible Doctrine preserved for thousands of years, etc.
    - ii. He provides through God the Holy Spirit all those things needed to engage in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine in the Local Church with manners, academic discipline, concentration, focus and mental acuity.
    - iii. Manners for men:
      - a. Always walk down stairs in front of the woman and behind her going up the stairs.
      - b. When the door opens outwardly you go through first and hold it open.
      - c. When the door opens inwardly you pull it open and she goes through first.
      - d. You present man or woman to an older person or dignitary.
      - e. You present a man to a woman who receives the presentation.
      - f. Always walk in front of the woman down an aisle and find the seat and seat her with manners.
      - g. The glorious days are past were everyone knew and had the function of these and all manner of manners for all aspects of life and this is when America was populated ONLY with American citizens and there were NO races nor minorities.

- h. These people lived then under Laws of Divine Establishment or spiritual dynamics or both and had good manners and this had disappeared.
  - iv. Instinctive good manners come from academic discipline in the Local Church where Bible Doctrine is taught.
    - a. Many times when we treat people with grace they consider it weakness and many times we have to demonstrate that this is NOT weakness when we are in charge of the situation.
    - b. God the Holy Spirit under living grace gives you instinctive poise from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - c. This is God the Holy Spirit making us objective about Bible Doctrine taught when we would prefer wallowing in subjectivity.
    - d. It includes thoughtfulness and being QUIET during the teaching of Bible Doctrine, not wearing distracting things in the Local Church, not bringing small children into the congregation.
    - e. In addition there is from God the Holy Spirit concentration and even having interest in the doctrine being taught.
  - 2. For the believer under Negative Volition God also provides in grace for them compatible with the Integrity of God.
    - i. This is Divine Discipline
  - 3. Therefore there is 2 types of training for the believer:
    - i. Academic training in the classroom for those with Positive Volition.
    - ii. Divine Discipline training outside the classroom for those with Negative Volition.
- L. Super-Grace == Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God 1Tim 1:14,
  - 1. This is the adult stage of spiritual growth with maximum blessing from God with glorifies God.
    - i. It is the ultimate in spiritual growth in time and the basis for the normal function of the royal priesthood, and the way God can provide maximum blessing which glorifies himself.
- M. Dying Grace == the transfer from time to eternity.
  - 1. This is physical death under special grace provisions
  - 2. It is not always accomplished by physical death as with Enoch, Elijah, and Super-Grace believer at the time of the rapture.
  - 3. It is better than anything in life, Super-Grace is the best in life, Dying Grace is better than Super-Grace and surpassing grace is better than the best.
- N. Surpassing Grace == the final stage of special blessing and reward for eternity.
- O. The Modus Vivendi of Grace:
  - 1. Means of spiritual growth 2Pet 3:18
  - 2. Basis for stability, Heb 13:9, 1Pet 5:12, Heb 12:28
    - i. This is the stability which keeps us consistent in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
    - ii. This is the very basis for stability of soul in life.
  - 3. Grace is also the basis for production 1Cor 15:10, 2Cor 6:1
  - 4. Failure to use grace Gal 5:4, Heb 12:15,
- P. Grace and Suffering 2Cor 12:6-10



Q. Axioms of Grace:

1. God is perfect, his plan is perfect
2. A perfect plan can only originate and function from the source of perfect God.
3. If man can do even one meritorious thing in the Plan of God that plan is no longer perfect because man is imperfect he therefore cannot contribute to a perfect plan.
  - i. Imperfection cannot contribute to perfection
  - ii. This is the basic concept of what Pride is, imperfection trying to or thinking it can contribute to perfection.
  - iii. You cannot contribute to anything which is perfect being imperfect and there is no way as imperfect beings we can make any contribution to perfection and perfection must contribute to us, THIS IS GRACE.
  - iv. This is the difference between Doctrine and Evil.
  - v. God is perfect, when we as imperfect persons try to contribute to perfection this is arrogance (pride), he can contribute to us through grace but never can we contribute to him.
4. A plan is no stronger than its weakest link and there are no weak links in the Plan of God, neither God the Father, God the Son, nor God the Holy Spirit are weak links.
  - i. Because there are not weak links the Plan of God is absolute strength.
5. Grace excludes all human merit or ability, all Human Good and Legalism, all Self Righteousness and arrogance and especially all EVIL.
6. Legalism is the special enemy of Grace and there is no place for Legalism nor Human Good in the Plan of God.
7. All legalism and Human Good is associated with the great Mental Attitude Sins of Pride or arrogance and Arrogance is where Evil and sin cross and is the MOTIVATOR of most types of evil.
  - i. Arrogance is the motivator of Evil the the satanic revolution against God and in the fall of man in the garden.

R. 4 areas where pride or arrogance rejects GRACE:

1. The pride of the believer who rejects the Bible Doctrine or Eternal Security
  - i. To reject Eternal Security you must be the most fat headed arrogant believer in history
  - ii. This believer thinks his sins are greater than the Plan of God.
  - iii. He thinks he must do something to contribute to the Plan of God and his failure to contribute is his sin and therefore he assumes this cancels the Plan of God.
  - iv. This is the idea that it all depends on ME whereas nothing depends on any of us but only on God.
2. The pride of the believer who succumbs to pressure or adversities thinking his suffering or adversities are greater than the provisions of God mentioned in 2Cor 12:7-10
3. The pride of EVIL which is also the pride of reversionism where the believer assumes that their thinking is more important than Bible Doctrine.
  - i. This is the believer who thinks his opinions are more important than Bible Doctrine

- ii. This is the believer who thinks that what he thinks is more important than what the word of God says.
- 4. The pride of pseudo spirituality where the believer thinks his system of energy of the flesh spirituality is greater than the true function of God the Holy Spirit in the life.
  - i. In arrogance he becomes a holy roller or enters into a system of taboos or asceticism or point program which impresses him and others assuming it impresses God.

**Lesson #11**

**Series # 467**

**1Tim 1:14**

I. Category I Love:

- A. This is our objective, when we reach it we will have capacity for all the blessings which God can ever give to us.
  - 1. Blessing is wasted on those who do not have capacity for the blessing.
    - i. Wasted blessing is seen in many aspects of blessing by association.
  - 2. Youth has the great blessings of health, strength, stamina, beauty, and have no capacity to appreciate them at all.
    - i. Youth is wasted on the YOUNG.
  - 3. Capacity for life is essential to ENJOY the blessings of Life.
  - 4. Our ability to enjoy the blessings we receive from God is related to the capacity we have from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- B. Definition: NOT of Love but only of Category I Love
  - 1. Love comes in 3 categories for the Royal Family of God:
    - i. I == Directed toward God
    - ii. II == Directed toward your opposite Right Man or Right Woman
    - iii. III == Directed toward Friends
  - 2. There are obligatory types of love found in the Relaxed Mental Attitude toward all members of the Royal Family of God.
  - 3. Category I Love is the believers capacity to love God and to respond to God based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul called in later studies Reciprocal Love for God
    - i. We love him because he first loved us.
  - 4. The Category I Love demands maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
    - i. Category II Love or Category III Love does not require Bible Doctrine in the soul for it to function properly.
    - ii. Both believer and unbeliever can enjoy these 2 types of love.
  - 5. While love does not make the world go round it makes our world function as believers in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  - 6. When believers reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Super-Grace this Category I Love this is called Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ. **Deut 6:5**
    - i. We are to love Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ with all of our Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, our whole soul, and POWER from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- C. Means of Category I Love

1. God is invisible and unknowable by human systems of perception
2. God in essence is:
  - i. Sovereignty
  - ii. Absolute Righteousness
  - iii. Absolute Justice
  - iv. Absolute Love
  - v. Eternal Life
  - vi. Absolute Immutability
  - vii. Omniscience
  - viii. Omnipotence
  - ix. Omnipresence
  - x. Absolute Veracity
  - xi. An incredible Sense of Humor (look in the mirror).
3. We know these things because of knowing pertinent Bible Doctrine.
4. Rationalism cannot know or understand God in any way.
  - i. God in his Sense of Humor is why speculations on God by rationalism do not result in the deaths of the philosophers involved.
    - a. Decartes, Spinoza
5. None of the human systems of Perception whether meritorious or non meritorious can help to know or understand God.
  - i. Empiricism cannot know nor understand God in any way.
  - ii. Faith in the unbeliever as a basic system of perception is incapable of knowing or understanding God.
6. God MUST reveal himself and one of the sovereign decisions of God was to reveal himself to the believer in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  - i. The unbeliever cannot understand the things of God they are foolishness to him neither can he know them because they are learned by God the Holy Spirit.
7. In the Church Age we have the completed canon of scripture as the means by which he does.
  - i. NO one can know nor understand God without maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - ii. YOU CANNOT LOVE SOMEONE UNTIL YOU KNOW THEM AND HAVE AN UNDERSTANDING OF THEM AND THEIR SOUL AND YOU CANNOT KNOW GOD UNTIL YOU HAVE MAXIMUM BIBLE DOCTRINE IN THE SOUL, YOU CANNOT HAVE MAXIMUM BIBLE DOCTRINE IN THE SOUL APART FROM THE DAILY FUNCTION UNDER THE GRACE APPARATUS FOR PERCEPTION.
  - iii. When you fall in love with someone you SEE them and they have something on the exterior which is attractive to you but this is NOT love.
  - iv. Then as you get to know this person the attraction is more than that.
  - v. You must know the soul of the individual to love them.
  - vi. We cannot see God therefore there cannot be an attraction to him.
  - vii. We don't know God therefore we cannot love him.
  - viii. Therefore Category I Love is the most difficult of all categories of love because it requires GOD taking the initiative and providing a

revelation of himself by which we as Royal Family of God can have opportunity to LOVE Him.

8. YOU DO NOT LOVE GOD BECAUSE YOU HAVE MADE SALVATION ADJUSTMENT TO THE JUSTICE OF GOD.
  - i. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we know nothing about God except that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was the one who was supposed to have saved us.
  - ii. At this point our capacity to love God is equal to that of a newborn in fact loving his parents and this is ZERO.
  - iii. As spiritual infants we have no capacity and no chance to LOVE God.
9. Since God is invisible and at the same time He is the object of Category I Love we must see and love him through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - i. It is not physical attraction, no empirical system and not in any way related to any system of human love.
10. The reversionistic believer is incapable of loving God he totally lacking in Bible Doctrine in the soul.
  - i. He is under the influence of evil and cannot love God.
11. The immature believer cannot love God he lacking Bible Doctrine in the soul but for a different reason.
12. Coming to love God in not an easy thing and requires many many hours of bible study.

#### **1Pet 1:8**

13. This is directed to those who are beginning to LOVE God.
14. When you come to the point of maximum love for God you come to the place of being full of glory for God and extreme happiness.

#### **Eph 3:18-19, Heb 6:10, 1Tim 1:13-14**

- D. Category I Love sets up the standard for grace, **Ps 119:132, 31:23**
- E. Category I Love is the basis for Super-Grace blessing **1Cor 2:9, Is 64:4, 65:17**
  1. Neither Rationalism nor empiricism can comprehend all the blessings God has for those who love him.
  2. If you are under the influence of Bible Doctrine it is inevitable that you will be blessed by God and have the capacity for the blessings.
  3. If you are under the influence of Evil it is inevitable that your life will be miserable and you will wind up under maximum Divine Discipline and your life is going to be a constant curse with constant misery and constant discipline and you are minus Category I Love.
  4. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ or maximum Category I Love is related to maximum blessing of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace.

#### **Ps 37:4-5**

5. We are to take exquisite delight in God when we express our love for God and HE will do the work to provide all our blessings.
- F. Category I Love is also the basis for personal and national blessings **Deut 30:15, 20, +**
    1. God sets before the client nation Life & Prosperity vs Death & Adversity.
      - i. The concept is that Bible Doctrine existed before us and will exist after we are gone.

- ii. To be influenced by Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is LIFE and PROSPERITY.
      - iii. Evil existed before us and evil will exist after we are gone and you cannot change evil but evil will change you with Adversity and Death.
    - 2. Attitude toward Bible Doctrine determines whether we are influenced by Bible Doctrine the thinking of Christ revealed as the Grace Policy and Plan or Evil the genius plan and policy of Satan.
  - G. Category I Love motivates combat courage and military victory **Josh 23:10-11**
    - 1. **One Super-Grace believer puts to flight 1000 enemy soldiers.**
    - 2. The command of v11 is given to military men and they are commanded to LOVE THE LORD THEIR GOD.
  - H. Category I Love provides strength for adversity and pressure **Heb 11:27**
  - I. There is a special curse on the believers who fail in Category I Love **1Cor 16:22**
    - 1. Those who don't love the Lord are said to be cursed until the Lord comes.
    - 2. If you don't love the Lord you will be influenced by evil and if you are influenced by evil your life is under a curse.
    - 3. This dramatizes the Divine Discipline for the reversionistic believer.
  - J. Witnessing must be motivated by Category I Love **2Cor 5:14**
    - 1. Today the believer is encouraged and bullied into witnessing as a means of spirituality while he is totally ignorant of Bible Doctrine and never has been encouraged to function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
    - 2. We are to be motivated for witnessing by loving the Lord.
    - 3. Loving the people you witness to is not needed since you can do this under social action but you MUST love the Lord to witness effectively.
    - 4. Personal Love requires that we are very particular about our LOVE and we must LOVE the Lord not people which is a TRAP.
    - 5. You have to have Relaxed Mental Attitude toward other believers but this will come as you approach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God it is inevitable that you will reach this stage before you reach Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
    - 6. There is no way to be motivated by love for the people you are going to witness to is BULL.
    - 7. In any occupation or profession or any other field to be successful you MUST LOVE THE LORD Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
    - 8. You cannot love the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ without maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - 9. The interesting thing is that if you first have Category I Love love it is amazing how you can survive with people.
  - K. Description of Category I Love **1John 4:15-19**
    - 1. To say that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is the son of God is the verbal manifestation of being a believer in the 1<sup>st</sup> century AD.
    - 2. We come to know and believe the LOVE God has for us by understanding Propitiation.
    - 3. There is NO fear in live and when you are under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ there cannot be fear.
    - 4. We love HIM because he first loved us, Reciprocal Love for God.
- II. Any category of Love must have 2 things

- A. Security
  - B. Privacy
  - C. The Human Race was not designed to have love in a glass house.
    - 1. In all categories of LOVE these things strictly apply.
    - 2. Divine Love has both security and privacy so stated.
  - D. Each of us is in Christ, Jesus.
    - 1. See Positional Truth
    - 2. See Royal Family of God.
    - 3. Once you as Royal Family of God are in union with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ this is a matter privacy being an invisible thing.
    - 4. Being in Christ, Jesus is also security, temporal and eternal.
    - 5. This involves positional truth and the concepts of the Royal Family of God.
  - E. It is tragic that many things often intrude as anti Bible Doctrine or Legalism into this system and ruin it.
  - F. After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the key is Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
    - 1. Through the faithful intake of Bible Doctrine saving grace is parlayed into Super-Grace
    - 2. In the state of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God GRACE super abounds accomplished with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
    - 3. Salvation can inevitably result in super grace experience.
- III. The trophy of Grace – Paul’s favorite Hymn.
- A. The name of the Hymn == Pistos Ho Logos == Faithful is the Doctrine.
    - 1. This was Paul’s favorite Hymn.
    - 2. He loved it and quoted this him in Timothy.
    - 3. This title for this hymn occurs 5 times in the pastoral epistles 1Tim 1:15, 1Tim 3:1, 1Tim 4:9, Tit 3:8, 1Tim 2:11
    - 4. These passages are all fragments of this Hymn in the very early church.
    - 5. Each of these 5 references have some aspect of the faithfulness of Bible Doctrine.
    - 6. Here is the faithfulness of Bible Doctrine related to saving grace.
  - B. Protos == foremost == Chief
    - 1. The predicate adjective Protos connotes foremost or most prominent in RANK or Degree
    - 2. By degree it means above all or a record holder and Paul was the worst sinner in the whole of the Human Race.
    - 3. Paul is the worst sinner in all of Human History.
    - 4. Paul was the chief or foremost sinner because:
      - i. He was more saturated with religion than anyone ever to have lived just as the believer in Super-Grace is to be saturated with Bible Doctrine.
      - ii. He was more legalistic and as such he murdered Christians and persecuted the church and was one of the worst murderers in the ancient world.
      - iii. He was a religious NUT case.
      - iv. Fanaticism will always kill and Paul was a fanatic.

5. Since religion is the devil's ace trump card and the worst of evil it was religion which made Paul the worst of sinners.
  - i. He was very very moral.
6. Saul of Tarsus was the most religious therefore the most evil therefore the record holder for sinning.
7. Paul is not bragging but stating facts to illustrate the greatness of GRACE.
8. God took the worst sinner of all history and made him the greatest believer of the Church Age.
9. This is the illustration of the transforming power of the Grace of God and therefore of Bible Doctrine.
10. If God can save the worst sinner ever to live he can save YOU.
11. If he transformed by Grace the worst sinner of Human History he can through GRACE transform anyone.

**1Tim 1:14**

v14: Moreover the grace of our Lord was exceedingly abundant or had super abounded with doctrine and associated with Category I love, Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, which is in Christ Jesus.

v15: Faithful is the Doctrine, a trustworthy statement or true point of Doctrine, and worthy of unqualified acceptance, (Quote Begins) that, as unqualified reality, in Hypostatic Union Christ Jesus came into the world of Satan, considering the whole of the 1<sup>st</sup> advent to the cross, to provide potential for Eternal Salvation through his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross intending to save sinful ones the whole Human Race with Adam's Original Sin and the Old Sin Nature, with reference to sinful ones, in FACT, I definitely am and keep on being the worst of sinners the record holder.

**Lesson #12                      Series # 467                      1Tim 1:16**

I. Freedom through Military Victory

- A. Earnest Edwin Evans, Cmdr US Navy, USS Johnston, Battle off Samar 25 Oct 1944, Ok.
- B. Forrest D Eberhart, Tech Sgt. US Army, Corline France 12 Nov 1944.
- C. 1<sup>st</sup> Lt Donald J Gott, B17 Pilot Marshaling Yards Sarbruken, Ok
- D. The highest privilege any believer can have is to serve his country whether in Peace time or War time.
  1. Winning the War is the only thing which counts.
- E. We have had in the past a series of the weakest administrations imaginable.
  1. Today this may have changed with the Trump Administration and the potential of all out War in Korea and the Middle east becoming greater and greater.
  2. The only system of diplomacy in peace time or during war is the stack the bodies of dead enemies so High that they cannot see the tops and then require unconditional surrender.
  3. Principles of Laws of Divine Establishment will bring us to this if we return to them again.

II. The prototype of Grace v16

- A. Paul is the worst sinner and a great trophy of the Grace of God having made him the greatest of believers.
  1. This is a result of the mechanics of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and GRACE principles.
  2. Paul is a pattern of what grace can do, the prototype and the eternal transformation of the transforming power of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  3. More than anyone in history Paul was totally a man of Bible Doctrine.
  4. No one ever exploited doctrine as Paul did.

B. Ieopus Christos

1. Jesus == the Humanity of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ meaning savior in the Greek thus reflecting the 1<sup>st</sup> advent.
2. Christos == Anointed one the son of David and just as David was anointed king so Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was anointed king meaning Messiah thus reflecting the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent.
3. The Davidic covenant is fulfilled in “Christos”

C. Principles:

1. Being the worst or record holder sinner Paul becomes an example, model, pattern or prototype of God’s perfect patience.
  - i. If God did not run out of patience with Paul he will never run out of patience with you.
  - ii. Saul of Tarsus is the worst sinner in all of Human History, past, present or future.
2. If God can save Paul through the blood of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ he can save anyone.
  - i. He as the worst person in history has already been saved.
3. The prototype of worst sinner in history has come and gone.
4. He made his record as worst sinner then after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and set a new record for saturation with Bible Doctrine.
  - i. No one ever has known more Bible Doctrine than Paul
  - ii. During his life Church Age doctrine was a mystery and not delineated as yet.
  - iii. The greatest man of Bible Doctrine in all of Human History is Paul.
  - iv. He knew the Old Testament Scripture but was the absolute advocate of Church Age mystery Bible Doctrine.
5. Like all who believe in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ He Paul was saved.
6. The prototype has been saved by grace though faith and the pattern of the Grace of God for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is established.
7. There never will be a worse person than Paul and therefore if the worst person ever can be saved by faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone then any of us can be saved.
  - i. He the worst we less than worst.
8. The greatest challenge of grace was the foremost record holder sinner, Saul of Tarsus.
9. The challenge was met and overcome on the road to Damascus.
10. The prototype of grace continues as the foremost sinner became the greatest believer in the Church Age.
11. For Paul converted living grace was parlayed into Super-Grace by establishing the command post in his soul composed of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine including the doctrine of the Mystery.

D. From Eternity Past God has already KNOWN everything we would do in our whole life down to the most minute detail.

1. Knowing all this he still provided blessings for your potential Super-Grace blessings.
2. God always knew all things about you, how good or bad you would be and that many of us have not committed yet our worst sins.
3. He knew how our volition would operate more than we know.



4. He knew what messes we would get into and how bad we would be and still he laid out Super-Grace blessing
  5. This is for US who at the time of Paul we were destined to believe in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  6. Even knowing how horrible we were God never stopped or deviated from his plan.
  7. Knowing that 1/3 of all angels would reject him and rebel and then they would impugn his character at trial and then appeal his perfect judgment and that Adam and Ishah the means of reconciling the Angelic Conflict would fail and fall and knowing how bad the Human Race has been for over 10,000 years and knowing our Status Quo today as sinners with rampant Old Sin Natures he still was never discouraged and still created both angels and Adam.
  8. God has never been discouraged EVER.
  9. The missing link in the Essence of God is a sense of humor and he MUST have gotten a real laugh from creating all of this.
- E. The human side of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God:
1. Clearly stated in this verse the human side of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone.
  2. Faith is a nonmeritorious system of perception in contrast to rationalism and empiricism.
  3. The present active infinitive of (gr) Pisteuo == transitive verb having a subject and object, stated or implied.
    - i. The subject is generally in the Nominative case and the object generally in the accusative case.
  4. The subject of Pisteuo in salvation is any member of the Human Race.
  5. The object is always the same Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ the only savior.
  6. All believing in the world provides nothing but condemnation from God.
    - i. We all have objects of faith from time to time and believing is the most common types of perception and not a sign of stupidity.
    - ii. Believing or Faith is the normal system of perception for all of us in our learning process.
  7. However, the tiniest faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ secures Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Eternal Life.
    - i. All you have to have is as much faith as you would find in a proton to gain Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    - ii. The object of faith has all the strength in salvation and there is no strength in the faith or the one having the faith.
    - iii. The object of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ has all the power and strength and not even a little power or strength in the one having faith.
  8. The efficacy of faith lies in the object of faith, IE Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  9. Since Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ accomplished all the work of salvation while on the cross the only means of salvation is through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone.
  10. Therefore faith is not something we do but the channel by which we appropriate what God has done for us.

- i. **John 3:16-18, 38, 6:47**
  - ii. God as subject is doing all the work.
  - iii. Those who believe are not judged but saved and those who don't believe are already judged.
  - iv. God judged the world when Adam fell in the garden.
  - v. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ does not judge the world when he comes but he comes to save the world.
- F. The divine side of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God:
  - 1. In Eternity Past The omniscience of God had the sense to know that certain members of the Human Race would believe in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as savior.
    - i. **Eph 1:3-9**
    - ii. We were chosen by God to become believers in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ before the beginning of the world because he knew before the beginning of the world that we would choose for Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    - iii. Predestination says GOD knew we would believe from Eternity Past.
    - iv. No one has ever caught God by surprise and God designed us as human beings in love.
    - v. He might have made all those who would be unbelievers look like a big ZERO and all those who would believe like a big PLUS sign.
    - vi. God is totally fair and knew many would not ever believe in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ but despite that he still had Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ die a Substitutionary Spiritual Death for those sins as well.
    - vii. God does not predestine to be saved we must individually BELIEVE in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ for salvation and God simply knew we would.
    - viii. Predestination to Salvation is a heresy of Hyper Calvinism which is oriental fatalism and at the time of this lesson Dallas Theological Seminary.
  - 2. Most people cannot understand that there are 3 types of volition functioning on the earth.
    - i. Divine volition == Sovereignty of God
    - ii. Angelic Volition == Part of the Angelic Conflict mess
    - iii. Human Volition == Ours today and from Adam.
    - iv. The idea for humans is to line our volition up with the volition of God and not the volition of Satan.
  - 3. Divine volition is Bible Doctrine and Evil is Satan's volition
    - i. If you are influenced by Bible Doctrine you will follow Divine Volition and line your volition up with it.
    - ii. If you are influenced by evil you will follow Satan's volition and line your volition up with it.
  - 4. God has the sense to know which way our volition would turn in every circumstance of life.
  - 5. Fore-ordination and predestination involves every member of the Royal Family of God and involves union with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ under the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.
  - 6. Review the Sovereignty of God and Predestination

- i. From Eternity Past, every time God knew which way our volition would turn in every circumstance and when we screw up and fail GOD made provision for our failure in Eternity Past.

**1Tim 1:16**

**v16: Nevertheless, Because of this (idiom), For this reason, I have obtained mercy having been graced out from salvation grace through living or logistical grace to Super-Grace, in order that in or through me the foremost record holder sinner, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ from Eternity Past might have demonstrated the grace of his entire perfect patience, steadfast endurance, as a prototype pattern, model or example to them who are certainly destined, from predestination and fore-ordination to believe in him resulting for eternal life.**

**Lesson #13**

**Series # 467**

**1Tim 1:17**

- I. Freedom through Military Victory:
  - A. 2<sup>nd</sup> Lt Earnest Childers, 45<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, 22 Sept 1943, Oliveto Italy.
  - B. SSgt Clyde L. Chote, US Army Tank Destroyer Battalion
  - C. Pvt. Herbert F Christian, 3<sup>rd</sup> Infantry Division, 2-3 June 1944 Italy.
  - D. The last great victory of the US Military was WWII and this is what has given us our freedom today.
- II. Paul:
  - A. As the worst sinner was not above Salvation and having made Adjustment to the Justice of God was also the greatest believer in history.
    1. No believer ever did nor ever will know as much as Paul did about the mystery doctrine of the Church Age.
    2. His work in the field of Bible Doctrine is the greatest in all of Human History.
  - B. Satan rules this world but God the Father is sovereign of the dispensations of the ages and Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls Human History.
    1. As sovereign of the dispensations it is IMPOSSIBLE for him to be corrupted by Evil the policy of Satan for this world.
    2. No creature for any reason can ever corrupt God and he exercises his sovereignty without any compromise to his essence.
    3. The uniqueness of God the Father is related to his eternal volition and there never was a time when the sovereignty of God did not exist.
    4. His Absolute Righteousness, Absolute Justice, Absolute Love and all the rest of his essence is absolutely unique.
  - C. This v17 is written as a result of GRACE.
    1. Grace is the genius of God in contrast to EVIL which is the genius of Satan.
    2. Grace is the manifestation of Bible Doctrine, while evil is manifest through many things such as Socialism, Welfare state functions, the UN, Every form of government in the United States.
- III. Combat Orders for Timothy v18-20 who was clueless about life as a believer and Pastor Teacher.
  - A. He was a great student and totally afraid of people especially women whom he was terrified of.
    1. This is an impossible situation for a Pastor Teacher who must be strong enough to put women in their place and put them down or throw them out when they need it.
    2. This causes the woman to remain ladies and honorable.

- B. He has absolutely NO concept of Money and will allow people in Ephesus to do a lot of stupid things with regard to money.
1. The Root of all evil is Not Money but the LOVE of Money is the root of all kinds of evils.
  2. It is not true that “everyone has his price” because to have a price you must LOVE Money above all else.
  3. Our jurisprudence system is great but no greater than the integrity of the judge and if the judge can be bribed this inserts EVIL into the Laws of Divine Establishment which totally distorts these laws.
  4. Money therefore becomes a system of corruption for people who have a price.
  5. With Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul many believers become totally incorruptible.
  6. There is nothing wrong with money until it becomes the root of all EVILS and there is nothing wrong with money, having money, keeping your money, ETC.
  7. Some of the worst people in the world in the Christian circles are those who have their hand out for money constantly and they fail to realize that when God stops providing money their function is simply terminated.
  8. The Local Church is for communication of Bible Doctrine.
  9. No believer in the Church Age will ever advance in the Spiritual Life nor reach Super-Grace unless he is under his right Pastor Teacher and getting consistent accurate bible teaching.
  10. If the Pastor Teacher or administration of the church become corrupt and LOVE money to the point of pressuring the congregation for money this becomes EVIL.

C. Timothy had deacons who constantly had their hand out for money from the congregation and they devised all sorts of gimmicks to get the people to give more and there was no doctrine nor worship in giving at all.

1. Our government in its evil policies has destroyed our standards for money in the United States and it is worth very little these days.
2. Timothy was extremely wimpy and the worst weak sister of the ancient world and this has given us the opportunity to study about Wine, Women and Song and how to NOT be wimpy.
3. The arrogance and pride of a man makes him vulnerable to feminine wiles.

#### IV. 15-20 Paragraph Field Order to Timothy

A. You are the most arrogant person in the Christian life and think you can read your bible for yourself and grow in the Spiritual Life.

1. You advance in the Spiritual Life ONLY be being TAUGHT under STRICT academic discipline and ONLY in that way.
2. Students in all aspects of academic life should be put into their proper place as STUDENTS without rights or portfolio.
3. We have had and not it is FAR worse so much permissiveness in the home and in society and in schools that it is impossible to actually teach students so that they learn.
4. As a student in any classroom YOU HAVE NOT RIGHTS AND NO PRIVILEGES except to sit and listen to what is being taught.

5. Colleges should have a statement of conditions for matriculation which indicated what you WILL NOT DO while in school there and students should understand that they as students have no choices except to follow what that said or leave and go to school somewhere else.
  6. The opinion of students should never mean a damned thing EVER.
    - i. (My position for many years and the reason I can no longer teach as I did in the past {ff})
  7. When a student is objective despite any habits or personality conflicts with the instructor that student can concentrate on the subject.
  8. The instructor is the expert and any students opinion about what is being taught is inconsequential.
  9. The only opinion any Pastor Teacher should be concerned about is that of God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit and his only effort should be to please them and do his job as unto the Lord.
  10. A great teacher must understand that he must completely IGNORE what anyone thinks, does or says about him and his teaching.
  11. No matter who or what a student is when in a classroom especially the classroom of the Local Church it is of no consequence and that student is to sit, concentrate, exercise self discipline and learn what is taught.
  12. This is the only way to grow in the Spiritual Life and God set up the system so you MUST grow under authority and in the Local Church the authority is the Bible and Doctrine and the Pastor Teacher who teaches from the bible and presents ACCURATE Bible Doctrine.
  13. No matter your personality or Status Quo or what you think on the outside once in the classroom a person is NOTHING just a student.
- B. Paul by using this word “student” has hauled Timothy back into the classroom under direct strong discipline and has basically said “I don’t want to hear a single peep out of you just listen and follow the instructions”.
1. This could mean Child under parents when he is LEARNING something being trained by them but this does not in any way mean “son”.
  2. When you as a parent bring children into the world you become a “teacher”.
  3. Paul is using this academic authority to bring commands to Timothy and to us.
- C. Timothy has learned Bible Doctrine under Paul not Paul commands him to apply what he has learned from the study of the Old Testament Scripture prophetic lessons.
1. Timothy must be influenced by Bible Doctrine rather than evil and it must become timothy’s life and it must be more important to him than anything else in life.
  2. Timothy has not reached this point being ahead in academic success but way behind in application.
- D. Summary:
1. The 1<sup>st</sup> order from Paul to Timothy embraces the entire epistle and every command is a new paragraph in this field order for Timothy.
  2. This epistle is written like a post graduate correspondence course.
  3. Paul is the professor and Timothy is the student without portfolio or rights with only the privilege of learning under strick academic discipline.

- i. This simplifies life.
4. The combat experience refers to the ministry of Timothy in Ephesus and the whole surrounding area related to the Angelic Conflict.
5. Honorable combat experience reduces itself to the believer in Time being under the influence of Bible Doctrine and not Evil.
6. The believer influenced by Bible Doctrine receives blessing which ultimately glorifies God.
7. The believer influenced by evil receives cursing and Divine Discipline in the Plan of God.
8. The believer influenced by Bible Doctrine reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace.
9. The believer influenced by evil passes through reversionism stages and Divine Discipline resulting in the horror of the Sin Unto Death.
10. The believer influenced by Bible Doctrine has dying grace and eternal reward in eternity.
11. The believer influenced by evil has a painful Divine Discipline death and NO rewards in eternity.

**1Tim 1:17**

**v17: Now to God the Father, the sovereign of the dispensations of the ages, the immortal incorruptible one, the invisible one, the only unique one, God the Father, be to him honor and glory for ever and ever. Amen.**

**1Tim 1:18**

**v18: I, Paul a ranking apostle, am depositing THIS DIRECT ORDER or COMMAND which demands instant obedience, with you and ONLY YOU, Timothy, my STUDENT without rights or portfolio, on the basis of and with reference to previous prophecies of Old Testament Scripture doctrines communicated and taught to you, in order that by means of these same inculcated Bible Doctrines, you may, with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, have honorable combat service experience.**

**Lesson #14      Series # 467      1Tim 1:19**

**I. Doctrine of Evil:**

**A. Introduction**

1. Evil is a factor which must be faced by all believers and is NOT judged on the cross. **Heb 5:13-14**

**Heb 5:13-14**

**v13: For everyone partaking of Milk (infant believer) is ignorant of doctrine pertaining to nobility or royal righteousness of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace Status Quo because he keeps on being spiritually immature or an adult acting like a baby,**

**v14: but solid food (advanced doctrine) keeps on belonging to the mature or super grace Believer ones who because of academic self discipline or habitual use, keep on having and holding their perceptive faculties well trained or exercised with reference to differentiating between the Honorable or Noble and the Evil.**

- i. The Super-Grace believer differentiates between the honorable and evil.
  - a. The mature believer can distinguish between honorable and evil things.
  - b. He is influenced by Bible Doctrine rather than by evil.
  - c. This allows him to make the greatest distinction of the Church Age the distinction between honor and evil.
- ii. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God rightly divides the word of truth to distinguish between sin and evil both having their source in Satan but have different sources in the human.

- a. In the human sin comes from the genetic Old Sin Nature of the human body.
    - b. In the human Evil comes from the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - iii. This verse suggests that the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God distinguishes between Bible Doctrine as manifestation of the Grace of God and evil as the manifestation of the genius of Satan.
  - iv. The Grace of God is the manifestation of the genius of God while evil IS the manifestation of the genius of Satan.
    - a. In the Angelic Conflict when reduced to ultimate simplicity it is the genius of God vs the genius of Satan.
- 2. The balance of residency in the soul of the believer causes him to AVOID thinking evil.
  - i. AT Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the body is balanced by indwelling of God the Holy Spirit which offsets the genetic Old Sin Nature.
  - ii. Our body is one of corruption having its genetic distortion from the sin of Adam transmitted to all humans as the Old Sin Nature.
  - iii. God the Holy Spirit therefore balances this corruption of the body.
  - iv. In the soul there is a problem of balance of residency as well.
  - v. When a believer is in fellowship he is under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and when out of fellowship he is either quenching God the Holy Spirit or Grieving God the Holy Spirit inferring that God the Holy Spirit has not control over the soul.
  - vi. You cannot lose the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit but you can under Status Quo of carnality lose the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and his control of the soul through sin and influence of evil.
  - vii. This results in a soul out of trim and it must be balanced.
  - viii. The balancing of the soul comes from the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - ix. This is experiential sanctification.
  - x. This balance of residency in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul causes the believer to avoid thinking evil **1Cor 13:5**
- 3. Sincere do gooders impress people at Easter, Christmas and at other times and practice EVIL.
  - i. This is not sinister evil like Frankenstein but is NICE Evil, **Rom 7:19**

**Rom 7:19**

v19: For the intrinsic good which I desire, purpose or resolve to do from emotion or sincerity on certain intervals, I do not do, But the evil which I do not desire or resolve to do, this I keep on practicing or accomplishing.

**Rom 7:21**

v21: Consequently, I have discovered this rule of action or principle residing in me, that when I, wish, desire, purpose, resolve to do the honorable thing, the principle of evil is always present residing in me.

- ii. Sincere do gooder people have no roots of soul and no content of soul and no depth of soul where they can avoid evil and in doing GOOD things it comes out evil.

- iii. No matter how good sincere sweet or nice they are it always manages to wind up being evil.
- iv. This is the frustration of sincere do good people and we should feel sorry for them.
- v. Under the influence of evil their good efforts always turn out evil supporting the POLICY and PLAN of Satan.

4. Therefore the believer is warned to beware of evil practitioners **Phil 3:2**

**Phil 3:2**

**v2: Beware of and watch and look out for remaining alert from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, and understand those Judiazer dogs (the worst domestic animals in the ancient world) beware of those evil, worthless, corrupt, depraved workers opposing the ministry of teaching of Bible Doctrine, beware of that mutilation, self effacement of circumcision used as the means of Salvation and Spiritually.**

- i. Evil practitioners are those who whether believer or unbeliever are under the influence of evil.
5. Those under the influence of evil always have a price.
- i. The remark that everyone has a price is true of all those under the influence of evil.
  - ii. But not of all people. 1Tim 6:10

**1Tim 6:10**

**v10: the Love of money is the root of all categories of evil and some by lusting for it have wondered away from doctrine and pierced themselves through with many pains.**

- iii. Money is not the root of any evil and good money is the root of good economy.
  - iv. Our money is not good because the paper must represent GOLD actually on deposit somewhere in the confines of government.
  - v. There is not monetary standard today and money is NOT evil but a means of exchange.
  - vi. The love of money is the root of all kinds of evil and this means that people under the influence of evil have a price and can be bribed and for consideration of some amount they will do whatever is needed through bribery.
  - vii. Because of this some longing for money have wondered away from Bible Doctrine and you can become reversionistic because of love of money.
6. Believers are specifically warned to never be influenced by evil but only by Bible Doctrine. 3John 11
7. Influence by evil explains the basic reason the prayers of believers are not answered. Job 35:9-13

**Job 35:9-13**

**v9: Because of a multitude of oppressions (reversionistic discipline) they cry out for help to other people, because the arm of the mighty the Lord, is stretched out to them.**

**v10: But no one under the influence of evil says, "where is God my maker who gives songs in the night**

**v11: and teaches us more than the beasts of the earth, and makes us wiser than birds of the heaven"**

**v12: There they cry out but (??mankind??) He does not answer because of the pride or arrogance of evil men,**

**v13: surely God will not listen to an empty cry nor will the almighty regard, because of Pride of Evil Men.**

- i. One of the most basic reason for failure to get answers in prayer is Influence by evil in your life.
8. Submission to the authority of the Laws of Divine Establishment prevents evil and influence of evil. Eccl 8:2-5



Eccl 8:2-5

- v2: I Say keep the command of the king (government) because of the oath to God, do not be in a hurry to revolt against him,  
v3: do not join in an evil matter, revolution, for he will do whatever he chooses,  
v4: since the word of the king is authoritative who will say to him “where are you going”,  
v5: he who keeps the royal command will experience no evil, for a wise right lobe knows the proper time and procedure.

i. The king represents authority.

9. False Bible Doctrine is both evil and insanity. Eccl 9:3

Eccl 9:3

v3: This is an evil and all that is done under the sun namely that there is one fate for all men, furthermore the right lobes of the human race are full of evil from the corruption of the genetic Old Sin Nature even insanity of Human Good in their right lobes throughout their lives and after wards they go to the Sin Unto Death.

- i. To say that there is one fate for all men or “all roads go to the same place” is truly evil.
- ii. Many of the people in our government today and MANY citizens are totally under the influence of evil having rejected principles of establishment relating to freedom, privacy, property and economy including both domestic and foreign policies.
- iii. To be under the influence of evil for the believer means to be under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine which insulates from EVIL.
- iv. To be under the influence of evil for the believer means loss of blessing in life loss of dying Grace and reward in eternity.

B. Descriptive Definition of Evil

1. Evil is the policy of Satan as ruler of this world.
2. Just as grace and Bible Doctrine represent the genius of God in relationship to the Human Race so Evil represents the genius of Satan in relation to the Human Race.
  - i. Bible Doctrine is a sequence or series of THOUGHTS.
  - ii. EVIL is a series of thoughts.
  - iii. Doctrine is the thinking of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
  - iv. Evil is the thinking of Satan for the Human Race.
  - v. The Angelic Conflict appeal trial is thought vs THOUGHT and the struggle is in fact for you soul and which type of thinking will control your soul.
3. Evil is the distortion of Bible Doctrine and Laws of Divine Establishment and the Bible Doctrine and Laws of Divine Establishment came first.
  - i. Evil always tries to distort the truth which came before the False.
  - ii. Since truth came first evil will in part always be trying to distort the false.
  - iii. Something Added to the truth to distort it and make it false.
  - iv. Something twisted or distorted in the language so that it is no longer true.
4. Evil therefore comes in many forms including:
  - i. Religion
  - ii. Legalisms
  - iii. Reversionism
  - iv. Socialism

- v. Welfare
  - vi. Political Internationalism
  - vii. Brotherly Love
  - viii. Attempts to solve all human problems apart from Bible Doctrine.
    - a. You cannot abolish problems by legislating against them, this is EVIL.
5. Evil includes such practices as:
    - i. Social Security
    - ii. Governmental Welfare
    - iii. Governmental abuse of Power.
    - iv. Governmental interference with industry and Free Enterprise
    - v. Governmental curtailing of military
    - vi. Gun legislation
    - vii. Catering to minorities which do not exist under our constitution.
  6. Evil includes all systems of Christian function outside of and apart from the the authority structure of the Local Church ordained and authorized by God for this dispensation.
    - i. Denominations
    - ii. Independent organizations
    - iii. When you depart from the Local Church as set up by the word of God and the authority of the Local Church you are in evil.
  7. This means that not only are denominations EVIL but all organizations, youth movements, Christian layman organizations are all evil.
    - i. These have all distorted Christian service into spiritual growth.
    - ii. Spiritual growth only comes from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and the only bonifide function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception is in the Local Church.
  8. The worst and most detrimental thing which can occur for any believer is influence by evil.
    - i. Evil is thinking which captures you mind.
- C. Definition:
1. Evil is the Modus Operandi of Satan
  2. Evil includes many things outside of sin which is only occasionally included in evil.
    - i. Human Good
    - ii. Solving problems apart from God and Bible Doctrine.
    - iii. Anthropocentric Altruism
    - iv. Humanitarianism
    - v. Philanthropy
    - vi. Socialism
    - vii. Sociology
    - viii. Welfare functions
    - ix. Social gospel
    - x. social action
    - xi. Restriction of human freedom for the greater good.
    - xii. Distortions of law or any other system of the Laws of Divine Establishment to solve social or economic problems.

- xiii. Religionism
  - xiv. Reversionism
  - xv. Legalism
  - xvi. Apostasy
  - xvii. All deviations from Bible Doctrine and Laws of Divine Establishment.
3. Sin vs evil must be distinguished in the soul.
    - i. Both originate from Satan having a common origin but their source in the human is different.
  4. Sin originates from the genetic Old Sin Nature, Evil originates from the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - i. Evil is thinking while sin can be thinking but also can be many other things.
    - ii. The first sin ever committed was by Satan and was Arrogance which lead to much greater evil.
  5. Sin is handled by rebound because on the cross Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ completed his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on our behalf for all sin.
    - i. Evil was not judged on the cross since evil is the policy of Satan and must exist until the end of Human History.
    - ii. Evil will not be abolished until the Millennium where at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, Satan will be removed from this world and Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ will assume rulership of the world.
    - iii. Throughout the course of Human History evil must exist because it is the policy of Satan as ruler of the world and his policy must operate with human volition and they must continue together to resolve the Angelic Conflict.
- D. The Super-Grace believer is protected from Evil.
1. This believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God has maximum Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and this insulates against evil.
  2. This doctrine is derived from daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception
  3. Bible Doctrine is communicated to the believer and it enters the Left Lobe of the soul where it becomes objective reality called GNOSIS which is Bible Doctrine understood by means of Filling of God the Holy Spirit who controls the soul when the information is perceived.
  4. In the Left Lobe of the soul this Bible Doctrine is not usable it is only academic knowledge
  5. At this point volition must go into action and accept or reject this gnosis Bible Doctrine.
  6. Positive Volition at this point will allow God the Holy Spirit to transfer this Bible Doctrine to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul where it becomes epignosis Bible Doctrine and available for application.
  7. Epignosis is cycled into the Frame of Reference of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul where it resides as the basis for understanding of and orientation to life and INSULATION against evil.

8. This information is processed into the memory center for vocabulary and categorical storage and all of this is processed into new Norms and Standards which develops or changes the conscience.
9. In 2Cor 10:5 this is the process for elimination of Evil from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
10. Satan seeks to capture the soul of the believer by his system of thinking, an angelic thinking in revolt against God.
11. Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine results in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace and therefore the believer in Super-Grace is protected from Evil. Ps 21:11

**Ps 21:11 (Evil frustrated by Super Grace Status of David)**

**v11: For they stretched out evil upon you and devised or invented a conspiracy or revolution but they are not able to carry it out.**

**Prov 12:12, 20-21**

**v12: The Evil desire the plunder of evil men, but the Root of the Righteous (Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul) produces**

**v20 Deceit in the Right lobe of those who devise evil, but counselors of prosperity or Laws of Divine Establishment have happiness in the Right Lobe of the Soul.**

**v21: No Evil happens to the righteous or super-grace believer, but the evil are filled with trouble.**

12. Doctrine produces not only insulation against evil but happiness in the soul.
13. When it is time to die our Status Quo, the nature of our dying will be based on whether we are influenced by Bible Doctrine or by evil.
14. If influence is from evil we have the Sin Unto Death the most horrible death.
15. If influence is from Bible Doctrine you will have the greatest blessing in death. **Ps 23:4, Gen 50:20**

**Ps 23:4**

**v4: Also, when in this life, I, as a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, walk through or in a valley overshadowed by physical death, I cannot, will not, and do not fear anything about the manner of my death, about harm, malignancy, sting of death, violence of death from another person's or any category of evil, because or since you, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as God, are with me (reciprocity), Your rod of Blessing from Divine discipline from the Justice of God and your staff of Blessing and protection from Divine Deliverance and Bible Doctrine from the Justice of God, They both console and comfort me.**

**Gen 50:19-21 (Joseph talking to his brothers)**

**v19: Therefore Joseph said to them, (his brothers after their father Jacob's funeral), "Do not be afraid, for am I in God's place or Am I God, Obviously Not, or I am NOT God?"**

**v20: As for you, you intended evil against me (They were going to kill him and then instead sold him into slavery; but God meant it for good, in order to bring about as it is this day, to preserve many people alive.**

**v21: Consequently do not be afraid; I will provide for you and your little ones." therefore he comforted them and spoke to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul .**

**Gen 48:16 (Jacob in SG)**

**v16a: The Angel Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ who redeemed me from all evil bless the lads,**

**Ps 37:16-19**

**v16: Better is the little which the mature or Super-Grace believer possesses than the abundance of those who are involved in Evil.**

**v17: So the evil unbeliever will loose all the details of life and develop a greater capacity for self induced misery to the point of the Sin unto Death but the Lord sustains through maximum divine blessings the Mature or super-grace believer.**

**v18: The Lord knows the days of the mature believer in time and their inheritance will be forever.**

**v19: They will not be ashamed in times of evil, (historical reversionism success of evil) and in the days of economic depression they will have abundance and be filled and satisfied.**

16. Evil is eliminated by the principle of Rom 8:28 for the mature believer.
17. All blessing and happiness is based on freedom from evil thus all blessing and happiness come from Super-Grace experience.

18. So if you have greatness in materialistic things such as wealth and success and prosperity and you have an evil soul money, sex, social life, promotion all will make you miserable.
19. Whatever you desire in life which is often associated with happiness, once you attain it with evil in the soul it will make you totally miserable.
20. Historical adversity does not effect the one influenced by Bible Doctrine.

**Ps 91:10, 97:10,**

21. You come to love the Lord only through maximum Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the more you love the Lord the more you will despise EVIL and thus be insulated from evil by the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
22. The thinking of evil will not have any effect in your soul and the thoughts in your soul which make you a great person are involving Bible Doctrine.
23. The thinking which destroys you are evil thoughts.
24. Thinking is using your soul as a battleground and all fighting in life is thinking fighting over your soul and when you take in maximum Bible Doctrine it dispels all thoughts related to evil.

**Ps 119:101, 121:7, Prov 1:33, 2:10-14, 3:7, 19:23**

25. Bible Doctrine guards your soul and is the only protection from EVIL in this life and with it you will live in security.
26. Evil is smarter than any of us and it is that which can destroy the soul.

**E. Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine caused the believer to be changed by evil.**

1. When you reject Bible Doctrine you reject your only protection against evil.

**Prov 5:13-14**

2. Not listening to Bible Doctrine even in bible class puts you immediately under the influence of EVIL.
3. We are saturated on a daily basis by more evil perpetrated by our government than every before in its history and we ONLY are alive by courtesy of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
4. Our freedom is only enjoyed because of victory of our military on battlefields.
5. Our evil government is only protected by the vigor of our establishment and free enterprise cannot be destroyed so easily when it is deeply rooted in a nation.
6. The first 100 years of our history we remained free from the evil influence of eastern Europe and their decadent social structure clinging to our Anglo Saxon heritage and spiritual heritage in Christ, Jesus we have been protected.
7. Our government since that time of our history represents the total concept of evil and we are influenced by internationalism and the united nations which is totally evil and by evil concepts at every turn.
8. We have been made to think that the American way of life is wrong and must be changed but in fact is has been the greatest way of life of all of history being the best representation of Bible Doctrine and the Laws of Divine Establishment.
9. Our life in this country in the 1970's was hanging by a very thin thread and we have been reprieved by believers who have made it to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and today in 2017 it is far far worse.

10. We finally have a strong executive officer in our government and those below him are beginning to move with him in support of the policies he is trying to impose onto the nation.
11. We are on a very precarious position economically because of the perpetuation of a very very evil policy for many decades contrary to our constitution and the Bible Doctrine of God.
12. One of our greatest dangers today is social upheaval which has occurred since the election of 2016 and before that under BO.
13. It could also come from one of the groups who seek our destruction such as communism or islam or others.
14. People want to destroy us because they do not understand what we in this nation have because we have told no one about what he have for over 100 years.
15. We in the United States have Bible Doctrine and western European civilization is totally EVIL and we have a wonderful system and nation free from evil in its foundation and in its constitution.
16. We have had very few statesmen in our history and we produce “politicians” and our system produces these idiots and they are destructive for the whole nation and we have thousands of them at every level.
17. Evil is not understood but is widely accepted in our nation and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is our only protection.
18. We must turn from evil to Bible Doctrine but cannot do so unless we are under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
19. Only the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace will survive the historical catastrophes on the horizon for the United States.

F. The issue for the Royal Family of God.

1. Are you influenced by Doctrine or Evil.

**Prov 11:18-19, 14:22, 15:33, 16:6, 22:3, 24:1-4, Eph 5:16, 1Thes 3:2-3**

2. The choice of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is the Sin Unto Death or blessing from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
3. Grace and Bible Doctrine are to those under absolute good.
4. The omniscience and Omnipresence of the Lord are factors in providing Divine Discipline for the believer in reversionism and simultaneously for providing blessing for the believer under the influence of Bible Doctrine.
5. We are never to allow us to be influenced by evil since it has a pseudo stimulation which is self destructive.
6. Time is redeemed through consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
7. Historically we need to be under the principles of 1Thes 3:2-3 being protected by the Lord from EVIL and we need a resuscitation of national life based on Bible Doctrine the foundation of our country.
8. We can see this is trend of evil advancing in Business, Law Enforcement, Judicial branches, medicine with socialized medicine, etc.

9. Every standard for every profession has been lowered because of influence by evil and government and the military are both saturated with evil.
10. Womens lib as example is totally evil and demonstrates unequivocally that the 2 sexes never were nor can be EQUAL.
11. We do not live in the part of Human History were the concept of Bible Doctrine or Laws of Divine Establishment have much effect and it has been all but eliminated from our history books.

**Lesson #15      Series # 467      1Tim 1:19, Is 45**

I. Doctrine of Evil continued:

A. What doctrine and evil can do to each other: Doctrine Neutralizes Evil

Ps 54:5

v5: The Evil will return to those who lie in wait for me, but put them to silence with your doctrine.

1. Once you have come under the influence of evil the only possible recovery is to take in the pertinent Bible Doctrine in order to neutralize the erroneous Human Viewpoint thoughts or satanic viewpoint which lies within your soul.

Rom 12:21

v21: Stop being overcome or conquered by EVIL but overcome or conquer EVIL with the Absolute Good of intrinsic value (Rom 8:28) of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul thus the Plan of God (X + Y + Z)

B. Evil distorts Grace:

1. One little evil thought with satanic viewpoint one little thing from Stage 4 through Stage 8 of reversionism can cause the infiltration into the soul

Ps 38:19-20

v19: But my enemies are vigorous and numerous and many who hate me wrongfully, they repay evil for Good, they oppose me because I pursue the absolute Good.

v20: Those who repay evil for good they oppose me because I pursue the good.

2. Any time a person follows the absolute good and recognize the importance of Bible Doctrine he is immediately subjected to many subtle and obvious attacks of evil.
3. The Attacks of evil are subtle and they distort truth to the point where the person becomes under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine.

Ps 52:1

v1: Why do you boast in evil you mighty men or hero (sarcasm), while the Grace of God endures all the or continues every the day long.

4. Grace endures in spite of evil and this demonstrates that even though EVIL attacks by a distortion of Grace, Grace is the factor which brings us back to the Plan of God.

1Cor 15:33

v33: Be not deceived, the communication of evil doctrine from friends corrupts establishment principles; or Evil companions corrupt good morals.

5. This means that some of the nicest and most attractive and stimulating people and successful people and whose company we enjoy will in social intercourse through out thoughts and concepts of evil and when you accept these concepts because you accept the person you become corrupted in your soul.

C. Evil also distorts Laws of Divine Establishment.

Ps 50:16-21

v16: But to the evil, God Says, “what right do you have to distort my Laws of Establishment, and to take my covenant in your mouth distorting what God has provided and trying to interpret what is not there?”

v17: For you hate discipline and Authority (evil rejects all authority) and you cast my words behind you with Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine,

v18: when you see a thief you are pleased with him, and you socialize with those who are spiritually unfaithful, adulterers

v19: you propagandize in the field of Evil, and your tongue frames deceit, and you criticize what you do not understand.

v20: you sit and speak against your brother, and slander your own mothers son (communism and people courts)

v21: these things You have done and I have kept silent says God, you thought I was just like you, I will show you I am not, I will reprove you and state the Case in order before your eyes (5 Cycles of Discipline).

1. These laws of God, the Laws of Divine Establishment are what are constantly distorted by our government in every level of its function.
2. Laws have been distorted for many decades and have been used for panaceas while the only panacea in life is Bible Doctrine.
3. The use of law as a panacea becomes a distortion and a satanic function.
4. One of the basic characteristics of EVIL is the rejection of authority especially divine authority constituted in the Laws of Divine Establishment.
5. The correction of evil in a person or nation starts with warning Divine Discipline or the beginning of the first cycles of discipline for the nation and progresses to Intensive Divine Discipline or the middle cycles of discipline for the nation and culminates with dying Divine Discipline or the Sin Unto Death and the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of discipline in national destruction

D. Reversionists are under the influence of evil.

Ps 36:1-4

v1: A divine word within the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of my soul concerning the rebellion or defection of the reversionist of Kelah, who have no respect of God before his, God's, eyes.

v1: Transgression speaks to the ungodly withing his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there is no respect of God before his eyes.

v2: For he, the reversionist of Kelah, flatters or complements himself in his own eyes, to find his own egotistical sins of pride or megalomania is to hate his sin,

v3: The flattering words of his, the reversionist of kelah's, mouth are emptiness or vanity and deceit, he has ceased to be wise or lost all their doctrine in reversionism, he has ceased to be pleasing to God,

v4: He, the reversionist of Kelah, plans or plots vanity, wickedness, nothingness, or evil to hurt someone in his bed before he sleeps, he takes a stand in a way that is not Good being treacherous, and praise a person to his face while cursing him behind his back, he does not reject evil and will do whatever he can get away with.

1. Evil begins to exert its influence in certain stages of reversionism.
  - i. In the reaction stage of reversionism you have reactor factors such as self pity and loneliness etc but once you start into the Frantic Search for Happiness it is inevitable that you will contact evil.
  - ii. This stage is not dangerous in contact with evil but by the time you get to operation boomerang and the intensification of reaction you are moving deep into evil.
  - iii. With Emotional Revolt of the Soul and when the emotion revolts against the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul this brings on stronger and stronger evil.
  - iv. Once Negative Volition is consolidated and the vacuum is opened in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul into this vacuum go the doctrines of demons and all evil thoughts and functions. 1Tim 4
  - v. This leads to Black Out of the Soul leading to Scar Tissue of the Soul leading to Reverse Process Reversionism
  - vi. From Emotional Revolt of the Soul on to the final stages of reversionism there is evil in every stage of reversionism so that evil



and reversionism become the same thing and evil becomes the thinking of reversionism.

2. One of the greatest problems among Christians is blind arrogance and fundamentalists ie Holy Rollers think that their word is law and what they think is the absolute and they try to superimpose it on all others around them.
  - i. This is refusal to live your life as unto the Lord and allow others to do so, and they constantly try to relate self to people and this is true arrogance.
  - ii. We are commanded to relate ourselves to GOD not ever to people and fundamentalism cannot and has not done this for decades.
  - iii. Our job is to relate our life to God ONLY through Metabolized Bible Doctrine and never to what people think or are whether good bad or indifferent.
  - iv. When you relate your life to God you are thus safe from evil but when you relate life to people you become more and more arrogant.
  - v. No one can relate their life to people without becoming saturated with arrogance or discouragement both which are sinful and EVIL.
  - vi. This idea of relating life to people is the satanic thought behind much of the mental therapy conducted by psychology and group therapy is related to this and when you get into the group you try to orient to life by orienting to the group.
  - vii. Thus group therapy sponsors EVIL in the name of good and the name of Healing.
  - viii. This is also the function of communism and their CELL process.
3. This is sensitivity training.

**John 3:19**

**v19: And this is the judgment that light has come into the world and men love darkness rather than light because their deeds were evil.**

- i. The reason people like certain forms and activities in life is that it matches what is in their soul and especially in the conscious.

**E. Evil Rationalizes:**

1. Evil must avoid any guilt reactions and to do so it has its own system of rationalization.
2. In order to rationalize you must distort the conscience therefore under evil influence the conscience distorts the Norms and Standards of Bible Doctrine and sets up its own Human Viewpoint Norms and Standards
3. With these Human Viewpoint Norms and Standards you can go out and do whatever you want to do because the reality of what you are doing lines up with the reality of the Norms and Standards you place in your soul.
4. Once you set up a series of Norms and Standards in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul you call those good.
5. The conscience is composed of a set of Norms and Standards which you have accepted and when you have accepted them they become "GOOD".
6. Therefore you may have set up a Norms and Standards in your soul which may be EVIL and you call that GOOD.
  - i. Illicit Drugs are evil.

- ii. Universal military training is GOOD
- iii. Compulsory Education is EVIL
- iv. Voluntary Education is GOOD
  - a. Private education is all we should have except in areas requiring technical expertise.
- v. Freedom in Enterprise function is GOOD
- vi. Government regulation or control of business is EVIL.
- vii. Medicine and Health Care is Good
- viii. Socialized medicine and government required medical insurance is EVIL.

“Whoa to them who call evil good and good evil who substitute darkness for light and light for darkness who substitute bitter for sweet and sweet for bitter.”

F. Conspiracy and Revolution is also EVIL.

Ps 64:4-5

v4: They that shoot in secret or from ambush at the one equipped with Metabolized Bible Doctrine the blameless, honorable, shooting at him suddenly and by sneaking and do not fear.

v5: They encourage each other to hold fast to themselves and their evil purpose or plans; they discuss laying snares secretly, thinking, "Who can see them?"

1. Under the concept of assassination the principle is that you cannot solve ANYTHING by violence and when you kill an evil person you don't knock out EVIL.
  - i. There are always 10 others to take the place of the one you see.
  - ii. Satan always has people in training to function under evil.
2. Bible Doctrine is the only thing which can solve evil.
3. From the Kennedy Assassination came the WORST anti gun legislation this nation has ever seen.
4. Assassination is Murder a sin and behind it is EVIL and when you add EVIL to murder it is a heinous thing.
5. Revolution does this also and revolution assassinates and conspiracy does also.
6. You cannot destroy evil by killing an evil person and it will be here until the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
7. You can only defeat evil by Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
8. V4 says Assassination is MURDER and v5 says it is EVIL and when these 2 are together, SIN and EVIL, you have the worst possible combination of things.
9. We never are to advocate any violent overthrow of government no matter how we might criticize the government.
10. We cannot ever go along with any organization which advocates violent overthrow of government no matter how bad or corrupt it may be.
11. The answer is never to meet evil with more evil because EVIL + EVIL does not neutralize evil but INTENSIFIES it.
  - i. French Revolution, Russian Revolution, Chinese Revolution
  - ii. France has never recovered from the revolution and never will and the French are not what they were a few hundred years ago and this

is despite the rise of a genius in Napoleon who was a Corsican Italian not a Frenchman.

- a. The genius of Napoleon could not change the evil accomplished by the revolution even though he brought them out of the revolution.
- b. The Bourbon dynasty had reached a point of great evil there were true evils in the country but the evil which tried to correct that evil was 2x as bad as that of the government.
- iii. Russia and the world have not to this day recovered from the Bolshevik revolution in Russia.
  - a. We are so stupid in this country we constantly think these people want to be our friends both the Russian and Chinese communists.
  - b. They only use friendship to gain breathing room in their nation and the objective of both Russia. and china is to make the United States a communist satellite and this has never changed.
  - c. Compulsory education in the United States of America has been taken over by communism and we have seen this to a greater extent in the “common core” curriculum.
  - d. Teachers may or may not be communist or socialists but they propagate communist concepts whether they know it or not.
  - e. The best education is now and has been in private schools and home schooling in the current times.
  - f. We need to abolish all compulsory education and remove all federal funding for education so that we have to return to private or home schooling functions.
  - g. We must have conservative private schools who have in their charters a mandate to teach American Principle and Christian principles OR at least NOT to deny Christian principles.

#### G. Evil is self destructive

Ps 34:21

v21: Evil of Reversionism will destroy the reversionist through the Sin Unto Death; and those who hate the super-grace believer will be in great agony.

Prov 24:19-20

v19: Do not fret yourself because of evil doers or be jealous of evil doers or be jealous of the reversionist

v20: for there will be no future for the evil one and the lamp of the evil will be put out

1. Evil people are always trying to solve the problems of the world by violence as seen in Antisemitism.
  - i. All aspects of antisemitism is truly evil and it has been warned against by God himself.
  - ii. Antisemitism. is a compounding of 3 different evil and 2 sins in a concentration of evil so bad that conservatism in this country has in the past been destroyed by it.
  - iii. Antisemitism is a greater curse than liberalism could ever be.
  - iv. Liberalism is IDIOTIC while Antisemitism is the most concentrated form of EVIL ever in the world.
2. There are no simple solutions to the problem of evil in the world because HISTORY tells us from the biblical perspective that EVIL will and MUST

continue to exist as the policy and plan of Satan in the Angelic Conflict appeal trial.

- i. The only answer to evil is concentration of Bible Doctrine
- ii. Doctrine is the solution and we must get rid of the idea we can solve any problems by getting rid of someone by killing them.
- iii. The only answer is a positive answer and it is in Bible Doctrine.
- iv. At the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ the lamp of the wicked, EVIL will be put out but in the mean time it is dimmed in any generation by a saturation of Bible Doctrine.

H. Evil seeks to build happiness on someone else's unhappiness

Ps 35:12

v12: They repay me evil for good to the bereavement of my soul

1. When evil is repaid for good it always hurts the soul of the one who is doing the good.
  - i. This is building happiness on someone else's unhappiness.
- I. The Laws of Divine Establishment protect the Human Race from EVIL.
  1. This means believers and unbelievers.
  2. The world is protected from birth to the point of evangelization by the Laws of Divine Establishment.
  3. There must be freedom for evangelization and the answer is found in Laws of Divine Establishment
  4. This is why orthodox fundamental BIBLICAL Christianity is always pro Laws of Divine Establishment.
  5. This is why we are for universal military training and this is the basis for our freedom and for the basis of continued evangelism in this country and so that from this country can go missionaries to evangelize other parts of the world.

Rom 13:3-4

v3: For government rulers or authorities or officials of national state, are not a cause of fear for Good of intrinsic value or moral functions under Laws of Divine Establishment Good of freedom, privacy and property, but for the evil of crime, revolution, conspiracy for violent overthrow of the government, assassination, socialism, communism, any system which deprives the individual of freedom, privacy and property in the name of common good, really now, (sarcasm) do you desire to continually, not or have no, fear of authority then keep on doing what is Absolute Good in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and good in the time in which you live and fulfill the equation of hope under Royal Family Honor Code, and you will have legitimate recognition, praise, approval from it, the authority of human government.

v4: for it, Human Government authority functioning under Laws of Divine Establishment, is a minister of God or one with delegated authority to serve from God to You for the purpose of the Good under the Laws of Divine Establishment for your advance to Spiritual Maturity, but if you do what is EVIL ie criminal activity, being a traitor or communist or draft dodger, cheating on income tax, advocating liberalism, supporting welfare panaceas, maybe you will and maybe you will not, you should keep on fearing or being afraid for Government does not wear the sword of authority and bear the sword of capitol punishment for nothing or in vain, for you see certainly it, government, keeps on being the civil servant minister of God with delegated authority as government, a punisher for the purpose of divine wrath to him who accomplishes or practices evil.

6. We see sin and evil crossing here and it is crime crossing into evil.
  - i. Crime is sin but also evil when it becomes anti establishment.
  - ii. Sin and Evil in crime means that you MUST HAVE capital punishment to control crime.
  - iii. Those involved in criminal activity are also involved in EVIL and must be extracted and removed from the Human Race.

- iv. The bible says that capital punishment is the only true means of controlling crime because it eliminates from society those who are influence by both sin and evil together.
- v. This combination demands that these people be permanently removed from society.
- vi. We have lost freedom in this country because crime is not in any way controlled.
- vii. Ladies cannot walk in the street of any city any longer because criminals are not executed.

J. There is NO EVIL in God.

**Ps 5:4**

**v4: For you are not a god who takes pleasure in evil no evil dwells in you.**

- 1. God is sovereign, Absolute Righteousness, Absolute Justice, Love, Eternal Life, Omniscient, Omnipotent, Omnipresent, Absolute Truth or Veracity, Immutable, Sense of Humor and there is no evil in any part of the Essence of God.
- 2. The Eternal Life of God preexisted evil and cannot possibly have evil in it since God is also immutable and his Eternal Life cannot and has not ever changed.
- 3. The Absolute Truth or Veracity of God is the total complete antithesis of EVIL and is what is honorable in society.
- 4. God's sense of humor tolerates all these things in order to bring the Angelic Conflict to a close.
- 5. God therefore is minus sin, evil and minus the ability to tempt.

**James 1:13**

**v13: Let no man say when he is tempted "I am tempted by God" for God cannot be tempted by evil and he himself does not tempt anyone**

- 6. Since God has nothing to do with evil and we must recognize that his character does something with evil.

K. God judges Evil

**Ps 34:16**

**v16: The face of the Lord is against those who do evil in judgment and it will cause to cut them off from the memory of the world.**

- 1. Every part of the Essence of God is totally opposed to Evil.
- 2. Evil exists ONLY because:
  - i. There being 3 volition types in history, Divine, Angelic and Human
  - ii. It is the presence of volition in time which makes it possible for evil to exist and for Satan to perpetrate his genius on parts of the Human Race.

**Is 13:11**

**v11: Thus I will punish the world for it's evil and the wicked for their iniquity, I will also put an end to the Interlocking System of Arrogance related to the proud and I will humble the pride of tyranny.**

L. In spite of evil Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ continue to control Human History.

**Prov 16:3-4**

**v3: Commit your work to the LORD, and your plans will be established.**

**v4: The LORD has made everything for his own purpose, He has even manufactured the wicked for the day of evil.**

1. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls Human History and this is demonstrated in Is 45;17 a problem passage.

Is 45:6b-7

v6: that men may know, from the rising of the sun and from the west, that there is none besides me; I am the LORD, and there is no other. (Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ Creator)

v7: Forming or Sculpting the Light or Bible Doctrine and creating out of nothing Lucifer the prince or originator of Darkness, I am the one manufacturing out of Bible Doctrine prosperity and creating out of nothing the evil one, Lucifer the source of EVIL, (synopsis of History), I, Jehovah, am the still one manufacturing out of history all of these things in MY PLAN.

2. Verbs for Creation:
  - i. (heb) Barah == to create out of nothing
    - a. Used for the creation of the Soul of Man.
  - ii. (heb) Asah == to manufacture something out of something out of existing material
    - a. Used for the personality which emerges from the soul of man.
    - b. The personality of man is related to the soul of man.
    - c. We all have self consciousness, mentality, volition, emotion, conscience or Norms and Standards, an Old Sin Nature which draws us to others who have compatible Old Sin Natures and separates us from those with incompatible Old Sin Natures
    - d. These all are part of the composition of our personality.
  - iii. (heb) Jatsar == have to do with the Molded male body
  - iv. (heb) Banah == to build the body of the female body
3. “Forming the Light” == Jatsar == Light was molded and it represents truth and colors etc.
  - i. Light comes in waves and particles and the waves of light are molded by God and can be broken into the primary colors of light.
  - ii. They are sculpted by God for the world.
  - iii. “Forming light” is a structurized concept in the passage all 4 statements being parallel and related.
  - iv. There is set up an antithesis between 1+2 and 3+4 so that 2 relates to 3 and 1 to 4.
4. “Darkness” == Barah == caused by the fall of Satan Gen 1:3-5 therefore Darkness is associated with Satan.
5. This puts an antithesis in this structurized concept.
  - i. Light if formed or sculpted and Darkness is created.
  - ii. Darkness comes from Barah and Light from Jatsar and this is extremely important.
  - iii. Darkness is not created by God directly but God created the creature who with his volition brought darkness into the picture.
  - iv. This “darkness” refers to SATAN as AUTHOR of Darkness.
  - v. When God created Satan he was perfect but in his volition there were negative elements contrary to Bible Doctrine and to God and from these negative elements came DARKNESS.
  - vi. While God created Satan and gave him and free will Satan created darkness the antithesis of the Light formed by God.
  - vii. We are to think of Light in terms of Waves and Darkness BREAKS the Waves.

- viii. God created a creature and gave him free will and the first thing he did when he God oriented in heaven was to make sure he broke the waves of light God set up.
  - ix. Darkness is the creation of Satan and was caused by the fall of Satan and the angelic revolution.
  - x. In preparing the Earth for man's habitation he restored the earth with light.
  - xi. Light provided HEAT to melt off the ice pack so that man could live on the earth and complete his function of resolution of the Angelic Conflict.
  - xii. The concept we are to derive from this passage is that the CREATOR continues in control even though the creature from his own free will went away from what God had formed.
  - xiii. GREATER IS HE IN YOU THAN HE IN THE WORLD.
  - xiv. This says that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls Human History even though the greatest genius which came from the hand of God was Lucifer Son of the morning who IS the author of Darkness.
6. Prosperity == (heb) Asah == manufacturing something out of something.
- i. God is the manufacturer and manufactures SHALOM or PROSPERITY out of something.
  - ii. Prosperity is manufactured for us our of Bible Doctrine and this is where our Super-Grace blessings come from.
  - iii. This prosperity comes in 5 categories 4 of which we receive in time.
    - a. Spiritual
    - b. Material
    - c. By Association
    - d. Historical Impact
    - e. Dying.
7. This is teaching by antithesis
- i. God formed Light
  - ii. He created the one who brought on Darkness
    - a. This is antithesis
  - iii. God manufactures prosperity for the believer from Metabolized Bible Doctrine and this glorifies God.
    - a. You don't glorify God by working for God.
    - b. You are motivated to produce Divine Good production as a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - c. You can only glorify God by taking in a maximum Bible Doctrine so that God can GIVE to you THE 5 CATEGORIES OF BLESSINGS IN MATURITY.
  - iv. The antithesis of the believer reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace and receiving his Super-Grace blessings is EVIL.
8. (heb) 'RA' THE EVIL ONE == (heb) Barah == created out of nothing, Satan created darkness and therefore created EVIL.

- i. God created a multitude of creatures but he wanted one with free will so that the free choice of these creatures would glorify God by STAYING under the Plan of God and NOT BEING REQUIRED TO DO SO.
  - ii. God created Satan and he in revolution against God brought darkness to the light of the Plan of God.
  - iii. Satan then created a policy and plan called “EVIL” because of his revolt.
  - iv. Darkness and Evil are synonymous terms for the policy of Satan.
  - v. God created Satan perfect but in his own Negative Volition he authored DARKNESS and EVIL.
  - vi. In contrast to DARKNESS and EVIL is LIGHT of Bible Doctrine and PROSPERITY from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God the result of Bible Doctrine.
  - vii. This is a structured passage and is to be used and understood literally and there are results and antitheses in its content.
9. God in essence is saying that HE, Jehovah is the one manufacturing all these thing and still controlling all things in HIS PLAN.
- i. He is saying “I am the one controlling history even though there are those running loose in history with free will.”
  - ii. No matter how free volition is it is never going to make us break through control of Human History by God, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  - iii. Even though all this free will volition is loose in the universe he still is in control.
10. The only thing we must do is ensure we constantly LINE UP with his control of Human History and that is ONLY by means of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- i. This shows us that assassination, revolution, voting, writing congress, completing surveys ETC. cannot help us line up with the Plan of God and the only way to be lined up with his plan is through consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit to saturate our souls with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine.
11. For those with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul who have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God we know who controls Human History and love the one controlling history and the more we become a part of that control of history.

**Lesson #16      Series # 467      1Tim 1:19, Is 47:**

- I. Textbook, 1895 Pennypacker, History of Texas, by Anna Pennypacker
- II. The saturation of evil means national destruction by the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline.
  - A. This is the most destructive thing which can happen to any nation.
    1. People sin in a nation but the nation continues
    2. Vigorous nations have vigorous sinners but the nation continues.
    3. Sin is never the issue in survival of a nation but it is EVIL which is the issue.



4. Some of the greatest empires in history have been saturated with people who were also vigorous in their sinning.
5. This does not excuse sin but sin in itself is not the cause of downfall.
6. EVIL is the cause of downfall by any national entity.

Is 47:10-11

v10: Because you (Chaldean Empire / Southern Kingdom) have trusted for your security and blessing in your evil, you have said no one sees me because the Laws of Divine Establishment have gone and cannot stop you, your wisdom and knowledge, the saturated thinking of evil, have seduced you, therefore you have said in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of your Soul, I AM, and there is no one else beside me (arrogance or Pride),

v11: Therefore, as a result of national pride, evil shall come upon you and you will not recognize or understand it's source or origin, consequently historical disaster after disaster shall fall upon you and you will not be able to avert nor prevent it, and suddenly violent destruction of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline, shall come upon you and you will not be able to understand it.

- B. This passage is talking about the Chaldean empire which has had at this point a great revival.
  1. Daniel, Shadrak, Meshak, Abednigo were great administrators but also they were great as a spiritual influence and were the salt of this empire and they evangelized many who became believers.
  2. They were responsible for dissemination of Bible Doctrine to that nation as well.
  3. Daniel was a communicator of Bible Doctrine and thus the empire flourished but in the time of the grandson of Nebecannesar the empire has reverted to a saturation of Evil which had existed in the early days of Nebecannesar.
- C. Nations not influenced by Bible Doctrine and without any Spiritual Life will eventually be taken over by EVIL because eventually the Laws of Divine Establishment structure is undermined.
  1. There are 3 sources of protection from evil:
    - i. Spiritual Vigor from evangelism == Revival.
      - a. This does not mean spiritual growth and there is not spiritual growth in evangelism and evangelizing
      - b. The only objective of evangelism is to LEAD a person to an understanding of the Gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and to a place of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone **Eph 2:8-9**
      - c. Evangelism is a bonifide function outside the Local Church and all men with the gift of evangelism should function outside the Local Church and this is seen perfectly in Billy Graham.
      - d. God gives the man who has a gift of evangelism authority for his function but it should be conducted OUTSIDE of the Local Church just like Witnessing.
      - e. The Local Church is the only means of spiritual growth after evangelism.
      - f. Evangelism and perpetuation of Missionary activity in a country is a protection from evil.
    - ii. Spiritual Growth from proper effective bible doctrine teaching IN the Local Church.
      - a. The only way to ever grow up is to be under the authority and teaching of your right Pastor Teacher consistently.
      - b. This is the basis for the SALT function of the believer in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

- c. The Chaldean empire was preserved in the time of Nebecannesar because of men like Daniel.
  - iii. Laws of Divine Establishment which are for the entire Human Race are to protect the Human Race during the Angelic Conflict.
    - a. Satan is a genius and knows that the simplest way to win a victory in the Angelic Conflict is to destroy or corrupt the Human Race.
    - b. The Laws of Divine Establishment were designed to stand against the destruction and corruption of the Human Race.
    - c. When the Laws of Divine Establishment leave in the nation it is over taken by EVIL and this results in destruction of that nation.
- 2. There are 3 things any nation must have for survival and blessing:
  - i. Evangelism
  - ii. Spiritual Growth in the Local Church under a Pastor Teacher.
  - iii. Laws of Divine Establishment functioning in the framework of the government.
- 3. Nations not influenced by Bible Doctrine or the Laws of Divine Establishment and having no spiritual growth are eventually influence, infiltrated, inculcated with, and destroyed by EVIL.
- 4. Evil is the plan and policy of Satan as ruler of this world.
  - i. Both evil and sin originate from Satan and have the same source in Satan.
  - ii. Evil and Sin however have different sources in our life.
  - iii. Evil is from the thinking of the mentality of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - iv. Sin is from the genetic Old Sin Nature combining with our volition.
- 5. Evil includes:
  - i. Human Good
  - ii. Social and Economic Panaceas
  - iii. Trying to solve the problems of life through legislation
  - iv. Social Gospel
  - v. Social Action
  - vi. Psychology or counseling solutions to problems of life.
  - vii. Socialism
  - viii. Any form of anthropocentric altruism
  - ix. Humanitarianism
  - x. Legalism
  - xi. Religion
  - xii. Reversionism
  - xiii. Victorious Life Panaceas
  - xiv. Any system of Pseudo Spirituality
- 6. Sin was solved at Salvation with the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross.
  - i. Evil however was not even dealt with at the cross and ignored at the cross so that it could be the issue in the Angelic Conflict until the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

- ii. Evil will not be solved until Satan is removed as ruler of this earth at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent.
  - iii. Evil can only be handled in each generation by those who are influenced by Bible Doctrine.
- 7. Sin can be solved in live as quickly as we can use the rebound procedure.
  - i. Evil in any form as above can only be solved by consistency in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
  - ii. Being influenced by evil puts a believer directly under the policy and control of Satan himself.
  - iii. The classic illustration today of a Christian under the influence evil is seen in the Senator from Oregon 1975.
  - iv. We see this in our legislators who try to promote things such as Welfare, Gun Legislation, Anti Military efforts, ETC.
  - v. If you don't get with stay with and grow up with Bible Doctrine and engage in daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit then you will eventually come under the influence of EVIL.
- D. Here we see that Chaldean empire has become a stronghold for evil with national apostasy in the time of the grandson of Nebecannesar totally under the influence of EVIL.
  - 1. The manifestation of evil in the Old Testament Scripture often turns toward Idolatry.
- E. Arrogance is the one sin which always links with evil.
  - 1. It always encounters evil and it meets with reversionism at the point of evil.
  - 2. At some stage of reversionism where arrogance exists EVIL is the result.
  - 3. Evil is produced by reversionism and arrogance where they meet
  - 4. The original sin of Satan was Pride or Arrogance from which his policy of EVIL originated.
  - 5. When the woman as first sinner of the Human Race fell because of Arrogance thinking she would be a smart as God.
  - 6. Satan's original sin was arrogance and therefore he knew how to tempt the woman who was arrogant as well.
  - 7. He did not try to tempt Adam because he was NOT arrogant.
  - 8. The ORIGINAL pride in the Human Race was with the FEMALE
  - 9. Because the woman was arrogant she being created SMART became stupid from her arrogance.
  - 10. Many times ladies have been able to wrap a male around their finger because the male was arrogant.
  - 11. Satan simply appealed to the pride of the woman and this was a simple thing to cause her to fall.
  - 12. He knew he could not appeal to the Man but if he got the woman she would then get the man.
  - 13. It is total arrogance and evil to assume that man by his schemes and policies can solve his own problems.
- F. Evil is the source of national destruction and it brings on the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline.

1. When divine judgment occurs on a nation in the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle the Divine Discipline cannot be averted.
  2. When the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle occurs HELPLESSNESS is the only thing which can function and it cannot be averted.
  3. There is no way to understand any disaster in history if you are under the influence of Evil.
  4. If you are under the influence of evil you cannot ever cope with disaster and the only result of your trying to cope with disaster is to ADD disaster to disaster.
    - i. This is why drug abuse occurs.
  5. These people have no understanding of the real problem and only seek an easy way out.
- G. Evil never understands Grace functions.
1. The Laws of Divine Establishment and Bible Doctrine and Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ always advocated Free Enterprise
    - i. The bible opposes government interference with business or industry
    - ii. Capitalism is not a bad thing but in fact a Bible Doctrine.
  2. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ himself advocated strongly Capitalism.
  3. He being the author of the Laws of Divine Establishment and thus the author of capitalism.
  4. He understands and the Laws of Divine Establishment present the fact that the man who starts a business has the only right to say any thing about policy in the business.
  5. Labor has no right except to WORK.
  6. Labor has the same right as any of us that is to work and do a job as best we can.
  7. Labor has no right for bargaining except when the contract is made.
  8. Matt 20: In the ancient world vineyards were exclusively to make wine and the capitalist owned a complex of Vineyards and he invested his money in to this land and business.
    - i. He went out every day at 6:00 am and contracted labor to engage them to work for the 12 hour day.
    - ii. He did this again at 9:00 am and contracted with them also for 9 hours of work
    - iii. He went again at 12:00 noon and found more laborers to work but only for a 6 hour day.
    - iv. He went again at 3:00 pm and found more laborers to work for a 3 hour day.
    - v. He went out one more time at 5:00 pm just before the work day was over and contracted for more labor to finish the job for a 1 hour day.
    - vi. He being the owner of the business HAS THE RIGHT TO DO THIS AND PAY THEM WHATEVER HE WANTED TO.
    - vii. He in fact agreed to pay all the men from all the time periods the same amount.
    - viii. The capitalist can set up any policy he wants to since it is his business and his money.
    - ix. When men invest money in business they have the only right to say anything about how it will be run.

- x. Labor is stupid and has no right to dictate policy of any kind.
  - xi. When the men were finished for the day and went to receive their pay they were upset because the ones who worked less received the same amount as the ones who worked MORE.
9. Labor does not make policy Capital makes policy and it is Totally EVIL for labor to try to make any policy with regard to any thing in any business.
- i. This is the same whether it is a small business or a great industrial complex.
  - ii. The one who invests the money is the only one who has any right to make policy.
  - iii. The management of any organization is the only one who should make judgmental decisions and NEVER ask anyone for what they think.
  - iv. This is true for the Pastor Teacher especially and if they are not right in their decisions they manager knows how to HURT them just right.
  - v. The policy of this man was Good and fair and his contract with each group was fair and his concept was to get the good workers even those who only worked 1 hour to think he was worth working for and they come back as 6:00 am the next day.
  - vi. There is often much more wrong with labor than that which is wrong in Management.
  - vii. This man took his money and put it into business and had fair policies which work.
  - viii. The critics of the man's policies were EVIL and had an evil eye.
  - ix. Their eye is the soul's window therefore having an EVIL EYE is a Greek idiom for evil thinking in the soul.
  - x. The labor complaining about their wages were WRONG and did not understand and did not HAVE to understand the man's policies.
  - xi. Their contracted pay rate ONLY required that they do their job properly.
  - xii. The fact that they drew a salary from a job did not and never does give any laborer the right to complain about the policies of management.
10. EVIL never understands GRACE function for what this man was doing with his laborers was GRACE.
- i. The laborers after those who came at 6:00am did not earn nor deserve their whole contracted pay rate but he paid them in GRACE the whole days wages.
  - ii. EVIL NEVER DOES NOR WILL UNDERSTANDS GRACE.
  - iii. Evil believers are saved by grace and never understands it.
  - iv. This business owner represents a grace principle and was a grace oriented man.
  - v. The labor who complained did not understand grace and are said to be evil.
  - vi. The did not understand grace because their thinking was evil.
11. Matt 20:30-34 the blind men understood grace.
- i. The shouted first "Kurios" == DEITY and said GOD have mercy on us.

- ii. Then they shouted “Son of David” == HUMANITY and his Hypostatic Union
- iii. They knew he could heal them but did not say they deserved to be healed.
- iv. There was no attempt to ingratiate themselves to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the basis of their talent or ability or bad fortune etc.
- v. The simply asked to be healed.

**Lesson #17      Series # 467      1Tim 1:19**

- I. Freedom and Free Enterprise, Freedom through Military Victory:
  - A. Morris E. Crane, Tech Sgt, 36<sup>th</sup> Infantry Div. Moder Germany River Crossing
    - 1. Without men like this we would have not freedom and there would be no United States
    - 2. No politicians have ever contributed anything to our freedom and they are the most destructive and evil men in the world.
    - 3. Politicians get us embroiled in wars were we lose the best men never being prepared for the wars and they have no sign of statesmanship at all.
    - 4. The last great statesman was Alexander Hamilton.
- II. Doctrine of Evil continued:
  - A. Evil distinguished from other categories in Scripture
    - 1. From War and Disease

**Jer 28:8**

**v8: The prophets who were before me and before you from ancient times, prophesied against many lands against great kingdoms prophesied of war and of evil and of disease.**

- i. Under the Hebrew system of structure EVIL is distinguished from both War and Disease and War and Disease are NOT evil.
- ii. Warfare nor Disease are not either classified as EVIL.
- iii. Warfare is a means to maintain national freedom and a means of suffering and pressure but it is NOT itself evil.
- iv. It is possible to take warfare as an entity and INSERT EVIL OR SIN into it.
- v. When liberals try to abolish war for world peace it is a very bad concept since war is a good thing under the Laws of Divine Establishment and is part of how a nation secures and maintains its freedom.
- vi. Infiltration of sin as sinful things done in war or evil things done in war does not change the concept that WAR is NOT evil and in fact is good for the nation prepared for it.
- vii. This same thing is true of Disease and people may have disease because of sin or evil but disease in itself is not evil.
- viii. Both sinful and evil things may be done in war but war is not sinful nor evil.
- ix. Both sinful and evil things may be done and as a result there may be Divine Discipline in the form of a disease but disease is not evil.
- x. Disease may be punishment for sin or evil but it is not itself evil.
- xi. Everyone in the liberal faction of our nation is trying to fight against war and bring peace and the government is trying to bolster our economy artificially but in fact in the United States of America today

what we need is a GOOD, BIG war and another GREAT DEPRESSION to rid the nation of idiots and Riff Raf.

- xii. If we would simply stop welfare we would have a depression and get rid of the scum of our society all at the same time.
- xiii. In principle War and Disease are both GOOD not evil When these 2 are used for Divine Discipline on individuals or nations they then depart from this principle being USED for other purposes.
- xiv. When this is understood then believers can easily avoid becoming involved in any group or Effort which is trying to abolish War or Cure all disease.
- xv. These people are trying to abolish that which God has permitted as part of Human History and the Angelic Conflict and to abolish any part of what he has planned in the Angelic Conflict is to destroy it.
- xvi. They want to abolish war, disease even death and these are not a disaster as they claim they are.
- xvii. The reality of these things is that there never was a Super-Grace believer in any dispensation or location on the earth who has missed anything in time of disaster or depression OR in national prosperity.
- xviii. Super-Grace is not subject to any economic variations nor any historical variations or any national or historical disasters.
- xix. With the Super-Grace believer in depression or prosperity or in war or disaster it makes not difference to the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and nothing changes his Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and the Lord does not and cannot withdraw from him any of his Super-Grace blessings and especially not his happiness.

2. From Sin:

- i. There are passages in the bible and functions in life which are not understandable unless you can distinguish evil from sin.

**1Chron 21:17a**

**v17: and David said to God, It is not I who ordered the numbering of the people, indeed I am the one who has sinned and I have done evil, in doing evil I have caused evil, But these sheep what have they done.**

- ii. Sin is not the issue in the Angelic Conflict and David had at least 5 wives and 19 mistresses and was promoted into Super-Grace while Saul who was Monogamous and moral was demoted and suffered the Sin Unto Death.
- iii. David distinguished it confessing his sin and distinguishing it from Sin.
- iv. 2 times in his life David got hooked up on evil and as far as believers go he has the greatest record for AVOIDING Evil and his avoiding of evil is why he was considered the Man after God's Own Heart.
- v. This is also why he was one of the greatest believers who ever lived.
- vi. He was FREE from evil.
- vii. We all will sin until we die because we have a personal Old Sin Nature.
- viii. On the cross Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ died a Substitutionary Spiritual Death for every sin.

- ix. All we have to do when we sin is NAME or CITE them to God and we receive instant forgiveness.
- x. Evil however was not judged on the cross since evil is in fact the PLAN and POLICY of Satan for ruling the world and it must continue until the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent.
- xi. At the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ will judge and condemn Satan and incarcerate him removing him from the world.
- xii. Evil is the genius policy of Satan and everything related to evil is satanic and the genius of Satan expresses itself through evil as God's genius is expressed through Grace expressed as Bible Doctrine.
- xiii. The great issue is always Bible Doctrine vs Evil
- xiv. David was a man of doctrine and avoided evil but when he did not avoid evil he KNEW what he had done and expressed it beautifully distinguishing between SIN and EVIL.
- xv. He confesses his sin and it is instantly forgiven but recovery from evil is a prolonged process at best.
- xvi. Satan himself as Lucifer Son of the Morning was at that point originator of Both SIN and EVIL.
- xvii. He is the first sinner and author of evil and evangelist of evil throughout all Human History.
- xviii. Sin and evil having a common origin are often confused but they are separated in the soul of man.
- xix. The area of weakness of the Old Sin Nature is the source of temptation for sin.
- xx. The Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the source of EVIL.
- xxi. Evil is a thought a satanic viewpoint and policy while sin is a violation of the Laws and Standards of GOD.
- xxii. Despite having a common origin in Satan they are separate in the Human Race.
- xxiii. The sin of David in this passage is Pride or Arrogance and the evil was his checking up on God.

**1Chron 21:1**

**v1: Then Satan stood up against Israel, and motivated David to number the People.**

- xxiv. Both sin and evil are involved here and are distinguished as separate categories of failure.
- 3. From Evil where it is talked about with reference to evil.
  - i. There are 2 kinds of evil in the scripture.
  - ii. It is evil in the nation when the citizens generally reject the Laws of Divine Establishment or when the believers reject Bible Doctrine and enter reversionism.
    - a. Progression into Reversionism and a saturation of evil parallel each other.
  - iii. When either rejection of the Laws of Divine Establishment or rejection of Bible Doctrine reaches a saturation point in the nation it results in the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline for the nation.
  - iv. This is from the Lord as Divine Discipline on the nation but when the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline is used to destroy a nation saturated



with evil it is CALLED an evil onto an evil nation and therefore God matches the punishment to the crime.

**Jonah 3:10**

**v10: When God saw their deeds, how they turned from their evil way, God repented of the evil which he declared he would do to them; and he did not do it.**

- v. When God saw what the response of the Assyrians to Jonah was he did not administer the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline to them.
- vi. This was what made Jonah so mad and he was an unwilling missionary and was not very much in favor of being a missionary to the Assyrians.
- vii. This proves the point that when we hear about missionaries who think they have to LOVE the people to whom they go but the fact is that NO ONE has to minister for God and LOVE PEOPLE.
- viii. The more you minister for the Lord the less you will in fact love people and it is always LOVING the Lord not people which counts.
- ix. Jonah was a perfect missionary and he did not want to go to the Assyrians a Wild Fierce people and Jonah had a racial antagonism toward them.
- x. Jonah despised Assyria and when he was called by God to go to Assyria he decided to get as far away from Assyria as possible and he headed for Tarshish in Spain on the Atlantic Coast.
- xi. After the great fish got through with him he finally went to Assyria and when he closed in on Assyria he finally got his message and it made him very happy.
- xii. Jonah's message was one he wanted to give to the Assyrians.
  - a. Assyrians are NO DAMNED Good.
  - b. All Assyrians are going to DIE and go to HELL.
- xiii. He said this for 3 days every time he had a crowd and when he was finished after 3 days traveling across the city of Nineveh he went up on the hill to watch them die.
- xiv. But when they heard such a vigorous message from such a fearless man they responded and changed their minds and a great spiritual revival started which became the basis for the greatness of the Assyrian empire under such as Sennacherib.
- xv. Because there was a revival there was not destruction of Assyria.
- xvi. The evil which God "repented" of was the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline on Assyria.
- xvii. Jonah did not go through Nineveh and tell the Assyrians that he loved them all but only that they would all die and go to hell.
- xviii. The Assyrians changed their minds and turned away from evil and then God did not deliver the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline.
- xix. The Assyrians practiced evil in following the satanic policy and were about to be overtaken by evil and God in making the punishment suit the crime was about to administer the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline on them.
- xx. Jonah saved the day for them.

- B. Rightly dividing the word of truth not only means recognizing differences in dispensations but also means recognizing other differences when the bible makes a clear distinction and they become the basis for great wisdom.
1. We have many so called great bible teachers who say believer can be demon possessed but this is false and failure to rightly divide the doctrines of the word of truth.
    - i. This is understood by understanding the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit
    - ii. It is the soul which is at issue in the Spiritual Life.
    - iii. Filling of God the Holy Spirit is God the Holy Spirit controlling the soul.
    - iv. We are commanded to retain the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and we lose it by means of entering carnality or coming under the influence of evil or entering reversionism.
    - v. We are told to recover the Filling of God the Holy Spirit by rebound procedure functions.
    - vi. We are also told that we have an imbalance in the soul at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God which must be corrected in time.
    - vii. We are without Bible Doctrine at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God aside from the doctrine of the gospel.
    - viii. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit has not dynamic in the Spiritual Life until there is a balance of residency in the believer.
    - ix. Through the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception the lack of Bible Doctrine is replaced with an accumulation of Bible Doctrine which if consistent will be a maximum amount and then balance the residence of God the Holy Spirit indwelling the body and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit in the soul with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul.
    - x. There is no way any demon can enter the body of the believer in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ for he is indwelt by God the Holy Spirit.
    - xi. No demon can enter the soul of any believer with or without any doctrine in the soul aside from the gospel.
    - xii. Something worse than demon possession can occur to the believer where he can be EVIL Possessed rather than demon possessed and evil is the thinking, religion, philosophy, and genius policy of Satan and thoughts can infiltrate the soul of the believer.
    - xiii. The soul possesses thoughts and if you listen to evil it can possess your soul.
    - xiv. Evil is the satanic viewpoint while Bible Doctrine in the Divine Viewpoint and the Grace Viewpoint.
    - xv. These 2 struggle over your soul and your soul is a battleground for Bible Doctrine vs Evil.
    - xvi. No demon can ever enter your body but the very thinking of Satan can become your thinking and Satan controls through thinking and thought.
    - xvii. Evil is the satanic viewpoint and evil possession is worse than demon possession.

- xviii. Demon possession is for the unbeliever only while evil possession is for believers or unbeliever.
- xix. Many cases of what is thought to be demon possession is simply EVIL controlling the mind of a person.
- xx. Therefore we must understand and distinguish between demon possession of the unbeliever and evil possession of the believer
- xxi. Therefore demon possession of the believer is not an issue but EVIL possession or Evil Influence of the believer is far worse.

C. It is obvious that EVIL is often mistaken for GOOD and people call EVIL – Good and GOOD – Evil.

**Micah 1;12**

**v12: For the people the citizens of Maroth, the suburb of Sumeria, became weak in the mind and soul waiting anxiously for good, but evil came down from the LORD all the way to the gate of Jerusalem as administration of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline by the Assyrian invasion.**

1. The northern kingdom had many capitals after breaking away from the southern kingdom.
  - i. Sumeria finally became the last capital and it was the Assyrians who besieged this city and finally too it.
  - ii. The big problem in the northern kingdom was the infiltration of evil.
  - iii. The only insulation against evil is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the only protection against evil is the function under the Laws of Divine Establishment.
  - iv. The northern kingdom had a dirth of both.
2. This is like the United States of America today where everyone is waiting for something Good to happen to turn our situation around.
  - i. One of the most idiotic things you hear is how some presidential candidate could get into office and change things in the country.
  - ii. WE see today after the 2016 election of Mr. Trump that despite all the good he is attempting to do he is opposed at every turn to try to prevent anything good from coming to this nation.
  - iii. The system has to be destroyed and rebuilt as it is anti doctrine and anti establishment to the core.
  - iv. The system we fight is evil and the author of it is Satan a far greater genius than any of us in this world.
  - v. People go right on waiting for good mean while EVIL overtakes you.
  - vi. While waiting for Good the people become WEAK because in order to try to get GOOD for the nation they neglect Bible studies.
3. In waiting for good they, believers, were campaigning for things to change as in the United States today:
  - i. They try to get more welfare and welfare and education for ILLEGAL ALIENS.
  - ii. They want more labor unions
  - iii. They wanted to abolish war by abolishing the military
  - iv. They wanted to solve crime by Gun legislation.
  - v. They want More taxes on industry
  - vi. They want to nationalize industry in the nation.
  - vii. Waiting for good is searching for or creating some solution other than Bible Doctrine.

- viii. People who get hooked up with elaborate solutions and great candidates and neglect Bible Doctrine will never recover and become possessed with EVIL.
- ix. NO ONE can ever neglect Bible Doctrine.
- x. These people work on their own human solutions as panaceas to their problems.

D. Evil provides false security for reversionism.

**Micah 3:11**

**v11: Her leaders or judges pronounce judgment for a bribe distorting justice, Her priests instruct for a price charging for doctrine, Her prophets divine for money charging for new doctrine; yet they lean upon the LORD and say, "Is not the LORD in our midst? No evil can come upon us."**

**v12: Therefore because of you evil types Zion shall be plowed as a field; Jerusalem shall become a heap of ruins, and the mountain of the house a wooded height.**

1. Judges in the nation were pronouncing judgments based on who gave them the greatest bribe.
  - i. Evidence must be the only consideration when a judgment is required.
  - ii. Under Jewish law evidence must be the result of 2 or more witnesses corroborating an event.
  - iii. NO hearsay is ever allowable and his courtroom must be orderly and sift through the evidence.
  - iv. Instead of looking at evidence he looks at the 2 contracts and the one which offers him the biggest bribe is the way he judges for the case.
2. The priests taught the Old Testament Scripture canon based on who gave them the most distorting the doctrines for gain again.
3. Prophets taught the new information as spoken word of God based on who paid them the most.
  - i. The Old Testament Scripture had written word of God and spoken word of God.
  - ii. The priests taught the written word
  - iii. The Prophets taught the spoken word.
  - iv. Both were doing their part for the greatest payment.
4. Teaching of Bible Doctrine by anyone to any group should never be based on a price.
  - i. Selling a book which has information about the bible of a spiritual nature is EVIL.
  - ii. Christian book stores are evil.
  - iii. Charging even the publishers price for anything which has Bible Doctrine and spiritual truth within it is EVIL.
  - iv. The content may very well be incredibly accurate as Bible Doctrine goes but CHARGING anything for them is EVIL.
  - v. It is evil to buy and sell doctrinal truth it is Received FREE from God and it should only be passed on without charge.
  - vi. All the crap on the market today from "Christian sources" would dry up if it was based on blessing from the Lord and free will offerings.
  - vii. Never does anyone ever have any right to sell the truth of Bible Doctrine.
  - viii. Many try to justify their system of charging for doctrinal truth by saying it is the Lord's Truth.

- ix. These people are involved in evil and rationalize the existence of security from the Lord and uses the Lord as a front for their false security.
- 5. When a people start and persist in selling Bible Doctrine truth the next thing to come is destruction of the nation.
  - i. Doctrine is free from God as a grace provision and grace is not for sale.
  - ii. The day you ask for money as a Christian institution (see Dallas Seminary in 1975) that is the day you fall into functioning under an EVIL Policy.
  - iii. No Christian institution should ever ask for money.
  - iv. Offerings from free will donations are the only legitimate support and when they stop coming in then the doors of the institution should immediately close.
  - v. The TRUTH is and should be FREE and it is EVIL to charge for Bible Doctrine.

E. Evil national leadership is always opposed to God.

**Nahum 1:11**

v11: From you has advanced one who plots evil against the Lord, a counselor or policy maker of maximum evil?

- 1. This is a description of the leadership of the land at this time.
- 2. The leadership is evil and their policies are evil.

F. Evil will be eliminated in the millennial reign of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

**Zeph 3:14**

v14: Shout with happiness oh daughters of Zion, Shout or Israel, rejoice with a superabundance of happiness, and exalt with all your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, oh daughters of Jerusalem.

**Zeph 3:15**

v15: The Lord has removed or taken away his judgment of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline against you, and the king or ruler of Israel ( Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ ) has cast out or mopped up your enemies, the Lord the king of Israel is in your midst, you will not see evil any more.

- 1. The 2 great issues Satan brought up in the Angelic Conflict are SIN and EVIL and These are separate issues
- 2. Sin was covered at the cross where Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ paid the price for all sin with his Substitutionary Spiritual Death.
- 3. Evil is to be covered at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
  - i. Evil is eliminated by Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ superseding Satan as ruler of this world at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent.
- 4. Evil is the policy and represents the genius of Satan.
- 5. Grace is the policy of God in dealing with the Human Race
- 6. Bible Doctrine is the manifestation of that grace and is the genius of God.
- 7. The genius of Satan is greater than that of any human being therefore Satan's great ability to perpetrate evil in the Human Race in Human History.
- 8. This will end when Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ rules the world at the end of history in the millennium.

G. Evil is located first and basically in the soul of man.

- 1. When Satan succeeds in causing you to inculcate evil it resides in the soul of both believer and unbeliever.

**Matt 6:23**

v23: but if your eye is evil from evil residing in your soul, your whole body will be full of darkness as reversionistic Blackout of the Soul, If therefore the light within you is darkness (you know only about the Cosmic Dynasphere) how great is that darkness.

2. This is evil resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and evil in the soul results in progressing of the individual through the stages of reversionism.

**Matt 15:19**

v19: For out of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul come evil thoughts, murder, adultery, fornication, theft, false witness, slander.

H. Evil is altruistic

1. There is always some great sincere Human Good movement around trying to infiltrate evil into our soul.

**Luke 11:13**

v13: If therefore you being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will the heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to those who ask him!"

2. Parents even though evil know how to give good things to children and EVIL knows how to give.

I. Evil is related to Satan in many ways:

1. Evil spirits are Satan's fallen angels Luke 7;21:8:2, Acts 19:12-16
2. Satan's Domain is an EVIL World Gal 1;4
3. Satan's Policy is EVIL 1Thes 5:22, 2Thes 3;3
4. Those under Satan's policy and Influence are Evil Men 1Tim 3:13, Job 35;12, Matt 12:35
  - i. Evil Workers Phil 3;2
5. Satan's administrators are Inventors of Evil Things Rom 1:30

**Lesson #18      Series # 467      1Tim 1:19**

I. Freedom Through Military Victory:

- A. Desmond T. Doss, PFC US Army, Medical 77<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division Apr 29-May 21, 1945 Okinawa
- B. John W Dutco, PFC US Army, 3<sup>rd</sup> Infantry Division, 23 May 1944 Ponteroto Italy
- C. Douglas MacArthur 15 Sept 1942 Australia, Telegram Q999.
  1. Texas A&M Graduates show incredible courage Gen George F Moore.

II. Importance of avoiding Evil & Reversionism:

- A. Timothy is under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine but he has failed to apply it under the authority of his own spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher.
  1. This epistle is ONE command after another and a set of field orders issued from Paul to one of his weakest field commanders, Timothy, his best student.
- B. (gr) Pistis == 3 meanings:
  1. That which causes trust of faith, Faithfulness, Reliability, Pledge, Proof, Solemn Promise.
    - i. This is least used in the New Testament Scripture.
  2. Active Faith, Trust or confidence, recognition and acceptance of Christian doctrine.
  3. Passive Faith is that which is believed, and is what is found most frequently in Hebrews and Pastoral Epistles

- i. This is the body of belief or Bible Doctrine.
- C. Timothy's problem more than anything else is that he had been raised by his mother and grand mother but they did a fantastic realm in the realm of the Spiritual Life.
  1. The father was apparently antagonistic to his being raised under the concepts of the Old Testament Scripture.
  2. His mother and grand mother were Jewish his father a Greek and antagonistic to Old Testament Scripture.
  3. Timothy was not a believer until Paul made is 1<sup>st</sup> missionary journey but he had a great background in the Old Testament Scripture.
  4. When a man is reared by his mother and grandmother it is inevitable he will be a gentleman. See Robert E. Lee
    - i. Lee's father was never home but his mother with help from George Washington was able to be very effective in rearing her children.
    - ii. Lee was a GREAT gentleman and like Timothy was used and pushed around by the female.
  5. No Pastor Teacher can afford to be human too much for if he is too much a gentleman his congregation especially the females will ride over him and he will have a matriarchal church.
    - i. If the Pastor Teacher is going to control his congregation and they are going to be blessed he must deal properly with frustrated women who tend to gossip and maligning.
    - ii. Horsey women always nose their way into congregations and they must be TRAINED as horses and must learn to obey the rules and follow protocol.
    - iii. No man who is in authority can ever allow any background rearing of any kind to offset the importance of functioning properly in that authority.
    - iv. It is more important to be a Pastor Teacher protecting people from gossip, maligning and horsey women than it is to be a gentleman and let women take over a Local Church.
  6. Timothy did not know when it was time to stop being a gentleman and get tough and failed to see that the authority vested in him was extremely more important than the tenderness and background under which he was reared.
    - i. He admired his mother and grandmother and loved them dearly but just because of this it does not follow that he was to allow the women in the Ephesian Local Church to take over.
    - ii. A man who cannot control his wife has no business administering in the Local Church.
    - iii. No man has any right to be brutal to women or any pastor to bully women and they must when possible be as much a gentleman as possible.
    - iv. Some pastors hate women and should not function as a pastor under those conditions.
    - v. Women must however keep their place and it is the job of the Pastor Teacher to see that they do in the Local Church.
    - vi. The Pastor Teacher must know when to be tough and when to be a gentleman.

- vii. There are times when ladies prevent this from occurring and he must be strong enough to handle them.
7. Timothy was supposed to HAVE and HOLD Bible Doctrine and have a good conscience and in the area of Bible Doctrine being in the conscience in the Norms and Standards he was failing.
  - i. All males have definite standards regarding the female of the species.
  - ii. There are standards as to what we like and dislike and of attractiveness and non attractiveness, and character, function and Modus Operandi of the female.
  - iii. Some have deep standards and others very superficial.
  - iv. Men who truly love the woman and admire the souls and courage and character of the woman have deeper standards.
8. Timothy is apparently a bachelor and all he knows about women he learned from his mother and grandmother who were fine gentle ladies.
  - i. Timothy grew up in an environment where no one ever shouted and there was no argumentation.
  - ii. He assumed that all women were like his mother and grandmother soft spoken and polite and therefore Ephesus was a terrible shock to him and he failed miserably in Corinth never understanding the beautiful women there.
  - iii. He was successful in Philippi and Thessalonica because the ladies there were in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and he could be his gentle self there and they never took advantage of him and challenged his authority.
9. He finds he is defective in his Norms and Standards regarding women assuming they are all like his mother and grandmother and he has not clue as to how to cope with a horsey woman.
  - i. When he is nice to these women as he was to his mother and grandmother she assumes he is weak and takes advantage of him.
  - ii. In effect he then becomes a wimpy type and he does not know how to cope with the woman who is unscrupulous, horsey, pushy, and arrogant.
  - iii. Every woman in the world has some arrogance and many don't think they are arrogant but it is the first thing you will spot.
  - iv. A woman is not a real woman until she is 30 years old.
  - v. There is always a time when some woman will challenge the authority she is under.
  - vi. The woman is designed to be under authority and she is basically a responder and her aggressiveness comes from good or bad response, response or reaction.
  - vii. The woman will challenge the many authorities and her breakout links with her arrogance and the easiest path is the Local Church or come female club or their weak boss at work.
  - viii. This is where they express their arrogance as they set aside the authority over them.
  - ix. They may resent the authority but Authority is Authority and it must be respected and followed.



10. Paul had to support Timothy with these field orders because the women in Ephesus were breaking out and they chose to do so in the Local Church.
    - i. Wimpy Timothy cannot handle it at all and they are running over him to express their liberation and freedom.
    - ii. There always is a time when every woman considers herself a free spirit and when this occurs she will always have to find some authority and knock it down.
    - iii. If she gets away with it she loves it and will go on and on until you get the women's Lib type of female rejecting all authority and crusading for all women everywhere.
  11. Timothy is not an ordinary believer but it extraordinary being a Pastor Teacher
    - i. He must have a 2<sup>nd</sup> set of Norms and Standards and this is the "good conscience"
    - ii. He is a great believer but has not kept up on his prayer life.
    - iii. Timothy must line up his Norms and Standards with his spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher.
  12. When there are a large number of horsey women in a group there is a great deal of legalism accompanying them.
    - i. Timothy has a conscience about certain things but it is not compatible with his spiritual gift.
      - a. Alcohol Drink
      - b. Money
    - ii. All his problems come from gaps in his Norms and Standards where the Bible Doctrine in his soul has not filtered into his Norms and Standards.
- D. Many of the things in this passage are things in which people cannot go half way.
1. If Paul says "don't let the ladies get away with anything" many think this gives them an excuse to abuse women.
    - i. It does not.
  2. Timothy will be told to take some wine and some people will want to now get drunk.
  3. As a Pastor Teacher there needs a greater balance in timothy's life and he is too withdrawn and needs to come out to greater reality.
  4. Some abuse women, some abuse alcohol to the point of where it becomes a serious problem, some abuse money, some abuse GRACE.
  5. Ladies need to be kept feminine with soap and cosmetics and all women must be kept from their overriding arrogance which in the Human Race was first in the WOMAN.
  6. Because the woman is a responder and has an Old Sin Nature and always has a bit of arrogance it is inevitable that her arrogance will challenge any authority she is under.
  7. Authority is to the arrogant woman as the red cape is to the bull.
  8. When it is time to lower the boom the women in the congregation are no longer ladies but must be controlled and after they can again be charming ladies.
- E. When a man has a gift of Pastor Teacher whatever conscience or Norms and Standards failures he has will come out in the pastorate as weaknesses.

1. These must be overcome by heavy development of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which will give him the Norms and Standards to fairly and justly under GRACE administer the highest spiritual authority which exists from God in the Church Age.
  2. There are many ecclesiastical hierarchies which are not authorized by the word of God and no matter the organization the Pastor Teacher is the HIGHEST authority in the Spiritual Life which God has given in the Church Age for the Royal Family of God.
- F. There are a couple of men in Ephesus which Timothy needs to remove they being totally out of line.
1. They need to be dealt with in the most severe terms possible.
  2. He is just too nice to do it.
  3. There are times when a man stands up to opposition no matter the cost to him and he fights with everything he has to the best of his ability.
  4. He must at times never give in and never gives up.
  5. There are certain people who cannot be loved into correction but must be disciplined into correction.
  6. There are certain people who take love as a manifestation of weakness and therefore Timothy having shown them love they are riding roughshod over him and are unchecked in their reversionism and EVIL.
  7. Because of this and Timothy is simply putting them into the lord's hands and being nice to them and loving them.
  8. This will not work and in YOUR LIFE you will meet sooner or later someone who does not understand your kindness and sweetness and takes it for weakness and when you meet this one this is the one you have to smash with everything you have.
  9. This is what communism does from the 70's to today and even more so.
    - i. The very interesting thing we see today in 2017 is that with the STRENGTH of Mr. Trump as president the Chinese and Russians both are taking a step back from their aggression and disdain for Americans.
    - ii. In china in the first year the communists took over 20,000,000 people were killed.
    - iii. Throughout South East Asia many people were and are murdered to keep them in power.
    - iv. We only hear about things like what occurred under Lt Callie and the killing of people in Vietnam.
    - v. We hear nothing about the murder of millions by communism but let 1 American kill a communist child and we have to persecute those men.
    - vi. Because the United States in the 70's and more so today have weak Norms and Standards and have taken out of the manuals that our men must KILL KILL KILL the enemies of this nation.
    - vii. We in the United States are victims of a bad national conscience.
    - viii. IN COMBAT you must have a different set of Norms and Standards and when battle is imminent it must be KILL the enemy above all else.

- ix. A great soldier in a combat situation has a different set of Norms and Standards for combat and the objective of battle is to WIN by killing as many enemies as possible.
  - x. A weak conscience and weak Norms and Standards is one which is missing appropriate Norms and Standards for specific situations.
  - xi. A good conscience fills in appropriate Norms and Standards for every situation.
10. Rejection of proper Norms and Standards by some is a positive indication of residence in reversionism and being under the influence of evil.

**1Tim 1:19**

**v19: Be having and holding or keeping the Bible Doctrine in the Human Spirit and Soul and keeping good of intrinsic value Norms and Standards of Bible Doctrine in the conscience, free from evil, which good conscience or Norms and Standards some reversionistic Believers have rejected, cast off, thrust away or repudiated, have suffered shipwreck concerning their Bible Doctrine being in reversionism with influence from evil resulting in bad Norms and Standards. (cut the happiness from God out of your life)**

**Lesson #19      Series # 467      1Tim 1:20**

- I. Freedom through military victory
  - A. William George Harrow, Sgt USMC, 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion, 28<sup>th</sup> Marines, 5<sup>th</sup> Marine Division, Iwo Jima, 3 Mar 1945 from Rio Grande City TX
  - B. James H. Howard, Lt Col US Army Air Corps, Ausherleven Germany, 11 Jan 1944
- II. The result of influence by evil and reversionism.
  - A. Hymenaeus is in a group containing Philetus and they are gossips and maligners and possessing a female soul.
    - 1. Blind Arrogance:
      - i. Many arrogant people are not aware of their arrogance in many cases in the Spiritual Life and they go blindly on their way assuming that their confidence and peculiarities of personality are free from any sinful characteristics of any kind.
      - ii. Blind Arrogance in the Royal Family of God is a travesty.
  - B. Alexander is a reversionistic believer and will be responsible for the death of Paul having betrayed him to roman authorities where by he was apprehended and brought to trial a 2<sup>nd</sup> time and then executed.
    - 1. Alexander the Coppersmith brought in to the romans lies and perjured evidence against Paul.
  - C. Both of these men are reversionists and under the influence of evil and their END is described here.
  - D. Timothy being wimpy did not do anything about these 2 men as they ran through the congregation causing trouble but as a result of this Paul in Rome lowered the Boom.
    - 1. Paul knew what to do and got as tough as an apostle could be without personally beating them.
    - 2. Paul was one of the greatest believers who ever lived and one of the manliest men who ever lived.
    - 3. Our current standards for Manhood are idiotic and reflect only physical and sexual prowess and not the strength of character and soul a man must have.
    - 4. Timothy was a weak person sloppy and yellow but PAUL was a hard a steel and a real man.

5. Paul did what Timothy should have done and put these 2 men right under the Divine Discipline of the Sin Unto Death and in such a way that it would be better than any administration of punishment ever devised by man.
  6. To be turned over to Satan is the most horrible thing which could happen to any believer and is not only the Sin Unto Death but it is the administration of the Sin Unto Death under MAXIMUM pain and disaster.
- E. It is not pleasant when any pastor has to administer discipline to a believer as his primary responsibility is to teach Bible Doctrine.
1. Occasionally the Pastor Teacher will have this responsibility and he MUST NOT avoid it but when he does avoid it it means someone is preying on the sheep in the congregation.
  2. These 2 men were bullies and trouble makers and pushing Timothy around so much that Paul steps in and puts them under discipline.
  3. He also had to step in in Corinth again where Timothy failed with regard to the believer who was having sex with his MOTHER. **1Cor 5:5**
- F. This was accomplished through prayer and took only a very short time.
1. The Apostolic authority had the power of turning a reversionistic believer over to Satan for administration of dying Divine Discipline.
  2. It was possible for apostles but not today for the Pastor Teacher.
  3. A person who bullies a pastor or tries to destroy the ministry of a pastor would certainly be turned over to Satan by GOD for his destruction.
  4. Dying discipline administered by Satan has NO advantage for the believer in any way and has a maximum of misery and as much suffering and misery and disaster and heartache as a believer can ever experience.
- G. It is much easier learn Bible Doctrine by Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine than to learn by severe Divine Discipline.
1. This Sin Unto Death proclamation is potential here for these 2 men CAN recover if they want to.
  2. The incestuous Corinthian believer did and moved on to Super-Grace Status Quo.
  3. Believers influenced by Bible Doctrine are blessed while those influenced by evil are cursed and under severe Divine Discipline where they can learn and recover if their volition is behind it.
  4. Progress in the field of training by Divine Discipline is very slow and painful and often results in the Sin Unto Death.
  5. This is the LAST CALL for these men to recover or die painfully.
- H. These men have been slandering God, maligning his character and his grace.
1. These men under the influence of evil malign and Essence of God and Plan of God.
- I. Many pastors are in this category today being weak men and are easily pushed around by bullying or frustrated females.

### III. Doctrine of Reversionism:

#### A. Definition:

1. It is negative attitude toward Bible Doctrine by the believer.
2. It is characterized by Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine resulting in failure to function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
  - i. This is being influenced by EVIL.

3. It also involves a system of perpetual carnality in the life which results in perpetual Divine Discipline. **Heb 12:4-15**
    - i. This is being influenced by SIN.
  4. It is one thing to sin another to be influenced by SIN.
  5. We all sin but not all are influenced by sin and to be under influence by sin you have to be in a pattern of sin where you exclude taking in Bible Doctrine.
  6. It is recession from any state of spiritual growth even including Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  7. It is lack of spiritual growth and neglect of Bible Doctrine and crosses over with evil and becomes being influenced by evil.
  8. It crosses with sin and results in being influenced by sin.
  9. The believer in or moving toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is in a PROGRESSIVE state in the Spiritual Life in time the Reversionist is in a RETROGRESSIVE state moving away from spiritual advance to painful death.
  10. It is analogous to apostasy in the believer where as in the unbeliever it is rejection of and departure from the Laws of Divine Establishment **2Pet 2:17-22**
  11. It must be distinguished from carnality in the same way spirituality must be distinguished from Super-Grace.
  12. Spirituality is an absolute where by God the Holy Spirit controls the soul of the believer.
  13. Super-Grace is a relative status of maximum spiritual growth were by the believer is under maximum influence from Bible Doctrine.
  14. Carnality is an absolute status where by the believer is out of fellowship with God and out of the Plan of God because of sin.
    - i. This believer can be under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and recover through rebound.
  15. Reversionism is a relative status of degrees of spiritual failure.
    - i. This believer under the influence of sin can REBOUND but he is far from recovery which requires prolonged consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
  16. It is a technical synonym for being under the influence of evil, sin and being under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
  17. God blesses the believer influenced by Bible Doctrine and curses the one under the influence of evil.
  18. Reversionism can apply to Apostasy, influence of evil, influence of sin all or part of these.
- B. The mechanics of reversionism are divided into 8 stages:
1. **Reaction** == instability, discouragement, boredom, disillusion, inability to cope with loneliness, being overcome by self pity, being frustrated, rejection of authority of the Right Pastor Teacher, Personality hangups with members of the congregation OR the Pastor Teacher, Hypersensitivity and lack of objectivity under rebuke or normal conditions of life (being flaky) including Mental Attitude Sins especially jealousy, bitterness, vindictiveness, implacability, arrogance, guilt, Operation Vengeance or seeking to build happiness on another's unhappiness, distractions luring one from Bible

Doctrine, Rationalizing distractions to the point of neglect of function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, these may include social, sexual, family health, policy, personality, Drug Addiction, Mental Illness, Academic or mental incompetence as distractions.

2. ***Frantic Search for Happiness*** == How a person tries to assuage their REACTION.
  - i. The reactor factors in the life of the believer results in the Frantic Search for Happiness and is the alternative to daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - ii. It is the accepted solution for frustrations in Reaction Stage.
  - iii. It follows the trend of the Old Sin Nature toward asceticism or lasciviousness.
  - iv. Asceticism generally leads to false emphasis on experience construing Christian service as both spirituality and maturity.
  - v. Asceticism included Emotional Stimulation and Tongues and legalism, works, spirituality by self denial, discipleship, one shot decisions to make things all right, Taboo-ism where no Christian function are all rejected, Getting involved and social action and social gospel, Naive stupidity of trusting everyone.
  - vi. Some of these is the beginning of EVIL and evil influence for the reversionist.
  - vii. Lasciviousness generally includes debauchery, drunkenness, chasing, seduction, being users of narcotics and drugs, nymphomania, homosexuality, ETC.
3. ***Operation Boomerang*** == the Frantic Search for Happiness intensifies the reaction stage.
  - i. It is derived from the boomerang used in Australia which is thrown so that it can come back to the thrower.
  - ii. Frustration becomes intensified and whatever the Frantic Search for Happiness is it will only make the person more miserable rather than solving anything.
4. ***Emotional Revolt of the Soul*** == Emotion is designed to respond to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - i. Emotion is equivalent to the Right Woman while the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is equivalent to the Right Man.
  - ii. The soul has male and female parts as the body has male and female hormones.
  - iii. Emotion is the female part of the soul and has not Bible Doctrine content, no mentality nor character and can only respond to what is in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - iv. In the Spiritual Life it is designed to respond to Bible Doctrine.
  - v. Once there is revolt by the emotion it becomes the aggressor and it loses all capacity for life and it distorts life and becomes a tool for the Old Sin Nature and the basis for launching into many categories of evil. **Rev 2:23**

- vi. Emotions of the reversionist resist Bible Doctrine and bible teaching and do not find it pleasant or entertaining nor conducive to any type of blessing they are interested in **2Cor 6:11-12**
  - vii. We are warned to keep away from people going in this direction **Rom 16:17-18**
  - viii. It causes the emotion to respond to the Old Sin Nature rather than the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - ix. It therefore takes over as dictator of the soul and is aggressively involved in neutralizing Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - x. It becomes a tyrant neutralizing Bible Doctrine and short circuiting grace in any form and causing malfunction of every soul function.
  - xi. Believer who live by emotion or use their emotion for any type of criterion are invariably apostate, disoriented, flaky, degenerate, mentally ill ETC.
5. ***Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine*** == It is characterized by many types of Negative Volition.
- i. Indifference or Apathy to Bible Doctrine taught by the Pastor Teacher.
  - ii. Too busy to engage in bible studies.
  - iii. Antagonism or personality conflict with the Pastor Teacher.
  - iv. Antagonism or personality conflict with others in the congregation.
  - v. Failure to use grace provision for function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception including failure to assemble, rebound, in respect for authority, poor manners, lack of concentration, NO poise or objectivity in the Local Church.
  - vi. Inability to handle prosperity occurs often when people reach a certain stage of spiritual growth and blessings associated with it and they cannot handle this prosperity.
  - vii. Disorientation to the factors of living grace where by God keeps us alive and provides all things for us to live in the world ruled by Lucifer and this person cannot appreciate these factors and fail to use them in the assimilation of Bible Doctrine.
  - viii. Active campaign against the ministry of one's own Pastor Teacher.
6. ***Black Out of the Soul*** == this is the opening of the vacuum of the soul through which the doctrines of demons come **1Tim 4:1** including:
- i. Religionism, liberalism, every form of evil therefore being totally under the influence of evil is a characteristic of this stage.
  - ii. Infiltration of satanic doctrine leads to demon influence in the Black Out of the Soul and becoming under the total control of evil **Eph 4:17-18**
7. ***Scar Tissue of the Soul*** == whereby the valves of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul are frozen and there is malfunction in the soul where Bible Doctrine cannot be applied and is eventually destroyed by misuse or lack of use.
- i. This is also known as hardness of heart as well as Scar Tissue of the Soul. **Prov 21:29-31**
  - ii. It is a state of revolt against the Lord **Jer 9:16-17**.
  - iii. Hardness of the Neck is insubordination to the point of revolution

- iv. It is related to Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine **Jer 7:25-27**
- 8. **Reverse Process Reversionism** == this is where all values are destroyed and one becomes occupied with everything which is antithetical to spiritual values.
  - i. Cat I love is replaced by Blind Arrogance.
    - a. Instead of Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ but still having the vocabulary about loving Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ but are in fact on an ego trip of arrogance.
  - ii. Cat II Love there are false lovers
  - iii. Cat III Love includes False Friends.
- C. Divine Discipline for Reversionism:
  - 1. There are 3 stages:
    - i. Warning **Rev 3:20** Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ standing at the door knocking is Divine Discipline warning the believer of his reversionism.
      - a. This is designed by God to warn believers they are traveling the wrong path going in the wrong direction in the Spiritual Life.
      - b. This discipline is designed to remind them they are in the early stages of reversionism.
      - c. They are to hurt and awaken the believer and make them realize they are moving in the wrong direction. **James 5:9**
    - ii. Intensive Divine Discipline is for those who reject the warning Divine Discipline from the Lord.
      - a. Prosperity of every type begins to shrink away and be removed and life becomes very miserable.
      - b. This is generally found in the last 4 stages of reversionism.
      - c. It is best described by **Ps 38:1-14, 2Thes 2:11**
      - d. This is getting very close to dying Divine Discipline.
    - iii. Dying Divine Discipline is the Sin Unto Death.
      - a. It is generally often executed by Satan Himself and God often permits Satan to take this type of believer slowly out of this world.
- D. Reversionism Principle: **Gal 5:4** Drifting Off Course from Grace
- E. Categories of Reversionism Include:
  - 1. Phallic **2Cor 12:21, Eph 4:19, 5:5, Col 3:5, Rev 2:14**, etc
  - 2. Legalistic **Gal 5:4, Col 2:16-128, Heb 5:11-6:16**
  - 3. Monetary **Eccl 5:10-16, James 4:13:14, 5:1-6, Rev 3:14-20**
    - i. This was a problem which Timothy faced and was not doing a very good job of it. **1Tim 6**
  - 4. Alcoholic and Narcotic **Is 28:1-9, Gal 5:20**
  - 5. Anti Establishment **Rom 1:18-32, Hos 4:1-7**
  - 6. Mental Attitude **1Tim**
  - 7. Verbal **James 5:9-12**
  - 8. Psychotic **2Pet 2:15-19**
- F. Biblical Nomenclature for Reversionism:
  - 1. **Gal 5:4** Drifting off course from grace
  - 2. **Phil 3:18** Enemy of the Cross



3. **Jer 9:25-26** Uncircumcised of Heart (ie the Evil has not been cut away from the heart).
  4. **Heb 12:15**, Failing from the Grace of God
  5. **2Pet 2:7-8** A Tortured Soul.
  6. **2Pet 2:14**, Unstable Soul
  7. **Rev 2:4**, Leaving your first love
  8. **Rev 2:5**, Fallen
  9. **Rev 3:15-16**, Luke Warm
  10. **1Tim 1:19**, Suffering Shipwreck from Bible Doctrine.
- G. Profile of a Reversionist: **Ps 7:14-16**
1. Labor pains of warning Divine Discipline
  2. Vanity is influence by evil
  3. Pregnancy is reaction stage
  4. Frustration is intensification of reaction
  5. Life of Deceit is being influenced by Evil
  6. Digging a Pit for intensive Divine Discipline
  7. Exploring the Pit for a grave is dying the Sin Unto Death.
- H. Contamination of Reversionism **Heb 12:15** Root of Bitterness
- I. Psychosis of Reversionism: **2Pet 2:15-19**
- J. Reversionism eliminates special blessing paragraphs for time and eternity:
1. **Heb 3:10-12**
- K. Hebrew Reversionism **Heb 5:11-14**
1. There is no blind arrogance with the advancing believer who certainly knows what he is doing.
- L. Reversion Recovery **Heb 6:1-3** Impossible without daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
1. **Heb 6:4-6** it is impossible when there is religious reversionism perpetuated and BLIND Arrogance takes over.
- M. Reversion often leads to Perversion **Rom 1:26-27** and produces national disintegration **Rom 1:29-32**, **Hos 4:1-6**
- N. Reversionism intensifies Suffering **Ps 77:1-10** all good things are remembered but are now out of reach.
- O. Reverse Process Reversionism (review it).

**1Tim 1:20**

**v20:** Among whom are Hymenae'us a gossip and maligner and Alexander, who keep on being in reversionism and under the influence of evil, whom I have delivered over to Satan in order that they might be taught the hard way by pain and discipline not to blaspheme.

**Lesson #20                      Series # 467                      1Tim 2:1, Matt 19:27-20:34**

- I. Grace & Arrogance OR Blind Arrogance
  - A. God's standards for Maturity and qualifications for blessing are the same for every believer they are advance in the Spiritual Life through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - B. It becomes blind arrogance for a believer to imply he has achieved what no other believer ever has, maturity through some unique experience, Or his life is more important than someone else's.
  - C. Blind arrogance comes in many forms especially Legalism
    1. Legalism:

- i. Salvation by works
    - ii. Spirituality by works
    - iii. Spiritual Maturity by works
  - D. Emotional Arrogance of the Holy rollers who associate spiritual advance with an obsolete spiritual gift called “tongues” is blind arrogance.
    - 1. Everyone involved in the holy roller or tongues movement is a victim of blind arrogance.
    - 2. They are the most arrogant SOBs on the earth today.
  - E. The self centered Arrogance of that believer who assumes his life, activities, opinions are more important than anyone else’s is blind arrogance.
  - F. The person who assumes that the Plan of God stands or falls on the basis of this personal behavior or on his efforts is in blind arrogance.
  - G. It is arrogance to assume that the Plan of God depends on any believer and the Plan of God obviously only depends on the Essence of God that is a fundamental concept of GRACE.
    - 1. It never depends on who or what we are.
  - H. The arrogance of the person who sets up false standards and then complies with these standards and by his compliance with these standards concludes that he is a great believer is BLIND Arrogance.
  - I. The person who assumes that any form of kindness or friendliness from the opposite sex means that this person is madly in love with him is in blind arrogance.
  - J. The arrogance of assuming a few dates means a declaration of undying love or a silent agreement to marry is blind arrogance.
  - K. The arrogance of perpetuating your enthusiasms on others who are not interested and harshly judging them because they are not interested is blind arrogance.
  - L. There are MANY more signs of blind arrogance.
  - M. Blind arrogance is a subtle amalgamation of the Mental Attitude Sins Pride plus the influence of evil.
- II. Blind Arrogance of Peter, Labor Unions, Wife of Zebedee, Selone Mother of James and John, James and John, Mob of Jericho.
- A. Only one capitalist and 2 blind men from Jericho are without blind arrogance.
  - B. There is the principle of “The first shall be last and the last first” seen in every paragraph.
    - 1. The First == Those in Blind Arrogance and under the influence of evil and they are last in God’s economy of things.
    - 2. The Last == Those with Super-Grace humility from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and they are first for blessing in time and rewards in eternity.
  - C. There is an occupational hazard for all members of the Royal Family of God is blind arrogance.
    - 1. Arrogance is a sin but in combining with reversionism forms a concentrated system of evil.
    - 2. Pride and Evil meet to form the occupational hazard for believers called BLIND ARROGANCE.
    - 3. For the believer Blind Arrogance is the hindrance to and frustration of spiritual advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Super-Grace living.

- D. 4 paragraphs in this passage:
    - 1. Case of the Arrogant Apostle Matt 19:27-30
    - 2. Grace Illustration Matt 20:1-16
    - 3. Arrogant Mother Matt 20:17-28
    - 4. Grace Illustration Matt 20:29-34
  - E. This is all lumped together under the title of the “Jericho Discourse” we will call it BLIND ARROGANCE
- III. Jericho is the place of the curse and when Jericho was destroyed a special curse was pronounced on the one who rebuilt it.
- A. This man died in a horrible way under that curse and the curse continued generation after generation.
  - B. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is the ONLY one who can change the curse of circumstance, life or any adversity or difficulty or problem of life.
    - 1. No problem is too great in life for God but every problem of life is too great for Satan.
    - 2. Manifestation of Satan’s problem solving is EVIL.
    - 3. Manifestation of God’s problem solving is GRACE.
    - 4. We always have the issue of Grace vs Evil or Bible Doctrine vs Evil.
  - C. The first statement of the blind apostle is with regard to what they have given up.
    - 1. Peter implies that the apostles have given every thing they had up to follow the Lord and this simply is NOT True.
    - 2. The word used here to “Follow” the Lord is a case of blind arrogance but at the end of Chapter 20 the same word used with the same morphology is sued as a case of GRACE Orientation and Dynamics.
    - 3. Blind arrogance always emphasizes the individual person and here all the disciples are involved and are carried away with pride and have assumed self importance and since Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ has given them a little authority that somehow what they think and do is more important than anything.
    - 4. Peter is trying to emphasize to the Lord just how important he is and this is ARROGANCE, LEGALISM, REVERSIONISM and EVIL all tied together.
    - 5. This is what caused the fall of Satan and Ishah she being the first member of the Human Race to have blind arrogance.
    - 6. Satan was the first creature of any kind to have blind arrogance and it led to the fall of Lucifer son of the morning who became Satan and also to the fall of the Ishah wife of Adam who became Eve.
    - 7. In both cases BLIND ARROGANCE was behind it all.
    - 8. Peter is not talking about Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and he has that straight and clearly understood it and was a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
    - 9. His concern is not about his salvation but his own personal reward in eternity and has assumed that his importance is so great that God cannot get along with him and he will have a very special place in heaven.
      - i. Peter will not ever rank with David and Paul and Moses etc.
    - 10. Here we see Peter's very arrogant confidence is great future reward and that peter has lost the perspective of grace in emphasizing what he has done for the Lord rather than what Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ has done for him.

- i. The only thing peter has done to this point which counts is that he has followed the Lord in regeneration.
- D. The sentence starts with the question by peter as to what he would have to show for following the Lord and ends with the lord's reply that they would have Eternal Life.
1. These disciples are believers in blind arrogance and have nothing to show for spending 2 years with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and apostles to Israel.
  2. These men are 12 fat headed apostles and only have blind arrogance to show for their time in the Spiritual Life.
  3. These men have no basis for reward at this time having NOT given up any of the things mentioned in v29 for Bible Doctrine.
  4. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul often displaces certain things in the life of the believer.
  5. They have made no doctrinal decisions and have nothing on which to base any deserved rewards at this time, they all flunked their Efficiency Rating.
  6. These 11 are saved and that is all and after 20 chapters of Matthew all Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ can say to them is that they will inherit Eternal Life and that is all.
  7. These 11 are saved since Blind Arrogance does not take away salvation but it does neutralize it and all they have is Eternal Security and nothing else.
- E. The First:
1. These are the ones who guilty of blind arrogance and they are last in blessing in time and rewards in eternity and have no reward.
  2. This refers to blind arrogance and are minus Super-Grace blessing and dying grace and minus surpassing grace blessings in eternity.
  3. The only thing they have is what they have now Eternal Security and inheritance of Eternal Life.
  4. These are influenced only by Blind Arrogance and Evil.
- F. The Last:
1. These are those who through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul have grace humility and Grace Orientation.
  2. These are moving toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace and will be PLUS Super-Grace blessings and surpassing grace rewards for eternity and leave under dying grace.
  3. They will have Sharing the Happiness of God, Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine for application to any and every situation in life, capacity for life, love and happiness, great temporal blessings, blessing by association, historical impact and leave by dying grace blessings.
  4. In eternity they will have surpassing grace blessings for eternity.
  5. The LAST Apostle was Paul and he will be first with greater blessings than anyone else in history except possibly David who will have the highest award in heaven but Paul will be the greatest decorated believer of the Church Age.
  6. Paul will be the highest decorated with greater humility than any other.
  7. These are influenced by Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

#### IV. The Grace Illustration:

- A. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ illustrates by setting up a parallel between the divine policy of Grace and the policy of a capitalist in the agricultural economy of the time.
  1. The roman empire had as a major source of its blessings Free Enterprise.
    - i. Rome had more millionaires than any other period of history and had them for over 1000 years.
  2. Rome was one of the most prosperous nations in history because of following the Laws of Divine Establishment with regard to free enterprise.
    - i. There was minimal taxation of business and free enterprise, no government interference with business, capitalism made policy for business
    - ii. As part of the Laws of Divine Establishment the principle has always existed and always will that the man who invests the capital is the only one who has the right to SET POLICY.
    - iii. NO LABOR has any right to set any policies EVER for any reason any more than any STUDENT has any right to a voice in the administration of an academic institution.
    - iv. Workers are there to work and labor and are not policy makers.
- B. We will see “UNION” labor who are the first who will be last.
  1. They will illustrate Blind Arrogance and it is the best illustration for it in union labor.
    - i. This is in the United States of America or Rome the same.\
  2. Free or non union or Scab Labor which illustrates Grace Orientation humility and they will be first.
  3. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ advocated free enterprise and was ANTI socialism, welfare or government control of business for any reason.
  4. The Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ invented the Laws of Divine Establishment and never made any statements contrary to them.
- C. The kingdom of heaven is LIKE a CAPITALIST, a man who is LORD of an empire.
  1. This is the man who invests money in the business and who declares policy.
  2. He creates jobs for labor and labor never tells him what to do but he tells them what to do.
  3. He can hire or fire and makes all the policy and determines what they will get and what they will not get.
  4. This is the way is should be and the way to prosperity.
- D. The first men he hired were union laborers and they were the only men who BARGAINED for their wages and when they reached an agreement the workers were to work from 6:00 AM to 6:00 PM for 1 Denarius.
  1. He has a big operation and needs much more labor so at 9:00 AM he went out and hired those who were standing around most likely unskilled labor or what we would call SCAB labor.
  2. He told them to go into the vineyard and he would pay them what was “RIGHT” and they did not engage in any bargaining for their wages.
  3. He went out again 3 more times at 12:00 noon, 3:00 Pm and 5:00 Pm
  4. These were all unskilled labor, scab labor and NOT in the union group and they did not bargain with him for a wage for the day but “TRUSTED” him to give them what was right.

5. When he paid them he started with those hired LAST and paid them all up to the first group.
6. The people from 9, 12, 3, and 5 o'clock had no contract with him but trusted him to pay them what was a reasonable salary.

E. Principles:

1. v2 show us labor union workers who have bargained with the capitalist for a day's wages which was for them 1 denarius and have a union contract for that day.
2. These were under contract to management.
3. The capitalist needs much more labor so he hired more NON union labor, scab labor.
4. Management invests the money and therefore management makes policy.
  - i. Labor does not dictate to management any policy, only under the principle of evil does labor ever dictate to management.
  - ii. Management dictates all things to labor and the whole concept of prosperity in the Laws of Divine Establishment depends on management NOT ON LABOR. (This is a biblical principle).
5. It was the policy of this capitalist to hire all the scab labor he could find and to treat them right.
6. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment capitalists the ones who put up the money and management have the ONLY right to make policy for their business.
7. Neither the government nor labor have any right to make policy under free Enterprise
  - i. No one has any right to dictate policy to business.
8. The non union labor did not bargain with management but left it up to the discretion and policy of management what they should receive for a day's or part of a day's work.
9. In this way a parallelism is set up between labor unions and legalism on the one hand, on the other hand grace orientation and non union labor.
  - i. In this way labor unions represent blind arrogance.
  - ii. Non union labor represents Grace Humility.
10. Management chose to pay each group the same amount.
11. He chose to pay those who did not dicker or bargain with him the same as the union labor and this is fair and just.
12. The labor union men when they came to collect their wages ASSUMED that they would be paid more but they had a contract and were paid 1 denarius as the contract stipulated.
13. With the labor union men he MUST stick with 1 denarius as that is what was contracted for the day by the MEN but they are saturated with BLIND ARROGANCE.
14. The union laborers had a contract for their salary and management stuck with this contract but also CHOSE to treat the other part time workers in GRACE by paying them all the same.
15. The parable advocates both Free Enterprise in business function but also God in determining eternal rewards on the basis of his policy.

16. In Matt, peter was bargaining with the Lord for his eternal rewards and no one bargains for their blessing from God Therefore peter was full of blind arrogance
17. It is the right ONLY for management to make policy and treat labor in any way they want to.
18. Blind arrogance is evil thinking and it does not understand grace but maligns and judges grace because it has not Bible Doctrine standards
19. Labor unions are here and always anti establishment and anti free enterprise just as our government is in its policy.
20. The labor union group judged the capitalist by their standards which were false and evil legalistic rather than GRACIOUS.
21. NO ONE had reward for eternity on the basis of his own legalistic standards but only on the basis of the GRACE standards of God.
22. No one ever dictates to God as peter was when he said to God, we have followed you so what is in it for us NOW, this is blind arrogance.
23. Labor union men then and even now have not concept that the principle of business is that management invests the money and therefore makes the policy
24. Like believers in reversionism and under the influence of evil the labor union men in blind arrogance had erroneous standards.
25. Only blind arrogance made them cling to their bad standards instead of Embracing THE superior policies of managements.
26. If they had not bargained maybe they would have come away with double pay.
27. Blind arrogance keeps the believer from yielding to the superior standard of the Grace of God and GRACE is related to Bible Doctrine and never to works.

F. Principles Last first and First last.

1. Rewards for believers in eternity depend on the policy of God and not the arrogant legalistic anthropocentric standards of evil and blind fundamentalism.
  - i. Many people think their viewpoint or opinion or what they are doing or they themselves are more important than anything or anyone else.
2. God does not bless the believer in time nor reward the believer in eternity on the basis of the arrogant standards of evil nor on the basis of any form of legalism.
3. Arrogance is always critical of grace, salvation grace, rebound grace, Logistical Grace, Super Grace, Dying Grace, Surpassing Grace and when this occurs it becomes evil.
4. The first, those under the influence of evil have blind arrogance, Arrogant thinking of the Black Out of the Soul and by their own Norms and Standards which are wrong rather than by divine standards which are right.
5. The last are those who through Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul have true Grace Orientation therefore true grace humility.
6. These last are the Super-Grace believers who avoid the influence of evil in time and will be first reward and in surpassing grace blessings.

G. The arrogant mother:

1. Women have a great propensity for arrogance are carried away with their own self importance and their own brand of legalism and that their opinions are more important than any other's opinions in life.
2. The manner in which they superimpose their opinions are a great fascination and form the whole pattern of arrogance.
3. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is trying to shake the disciples out of their blind arrogance and they have been with him for 3 years and the only thing they understand is salvation.
4. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is predicting his Substitutionary Spiritual Death and then his resurrection and were it not for the resurrection on the 3<sup>rd</sup> day the disciples would have died and gone to heaven without a single one of them having any reward or decorations knowing NO Bible Doctrine at all.
5. It was the resurrection which snapped the disciples out of their stupidity and blind arrogance.
6. Salome wants to bypass the objective of the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ the CROSS and take part in the Crown which is the objective of the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent.
7. She fails to see the cross must come before the crown and her pride and approbation lust have caused her to only listen when Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ spoke about the future kingdom and she wants he 2 boys in the top tier of the new kingdom.
8. Salome's blind arrogance totally ignored what Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ had just said to them and interrupt with a stupid request for the kingdom of the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent.

#### H. Principles:

1. This is arrogance, legalism and idiocy in view of what Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ has just taught them
2. The baptism of the cup is the cross where Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ will provide from his Substitutionary Spiritual Death our great salvation.
3. Neither James nor John could provide salvation since they could not die in substitution for all sins of the world just as Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ has already stated.
4. If man can do anything to provide salvation then there is no salvation.
5. Man appropriates salvation by faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone but man cannot provide anything toward salvation.
  - i. Only the absolutely unique Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Hypostatic Union could do this and DID.
6. Only a perfect man could do this thus the impeccability of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
7. Blind arrogance is a combination of the sin of pride and evil thinking and is minus Bible Doctrine.
  - i. The doctrine has just been taught but has not been accepted by these people.
8. James and John would die being martyred James the first to be martyred and John the last.



v27: Then Peter, having answered or replied as a result of many questions not in the context, said to Him, "Behold, WE {Peter was the talker but ALL the Apostles were in on this thought having discussed this prior} have abandoned or forsaken or given up everything or all THINGS and followed You. What therefore shall WE have or will there be for us?"

Matt 19:28

v28: And so Jesus replied to them (Peter and all the disciples in blind arrogance), "Truly I say to you {point of doctrine}, that you who have followed Me in regeneration, (all but Judas Iscariot) (Open Parenthesis discussing rewards in eternity) when the Son of Man shall sit on the throne of His glory, you also (including Paul who replaces Judas) shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel

v29: and every one that has forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands or businesses for My name's sake shall receive an hundred-fold {maximum reward}(Close Parenthesis) also even you shall inherit everlasting life."

v30: But many (that are) first (in the vineyard) (1<sup>st</sup> century Believers Matt 20:10) Shall be last in blessing and reward, and many last (Believers) shall be first in blessing and reward.

Matt 20:1-34

v1: "For the kingdom of heaven is like a capitalist who went out early in the morning to hire laborers for his vineyard.

v2: and when he had bargained with the labor union laborers for a denarius a day, he sent them into his vineyard. (6:00 AM)

v3: And going out about the third hour (9:00 AM) he saw others scab labor standing idle in the market place not part of the labor union;

v4: and to them he said, 'You go into the vineyard too, and whatever is right I will give you.' So they went and trusted him.

v5: Going out again about the sixth hour (12:00 noon) and the ninth hour (3:00 Pm) , he did the same thing.

v6: And about the eleventh hour (5:00 pm) he went out and found others standing; and he said to them, 'Why do you stand here idle all day?'

v7: They said to him, 'Because no one has hired us.' He said to them, 'You go into the vineyard too.'

v8: And when evening came (6:00 pm), the owner of the vineyard said to his steward, 'Call the laborers and pay them their wages, beginning with the last group, up to the first group the union men.'

v9: And when those hired about the eleventh hour (5:00 pm) came, each of them received a denarius in GRACE.

V10: Now when the first came, they thought with EVIL thinking that they would receive more; but each of them also received a denarius.

v11: And when those in the labor union received their wages at the end of the day they began to complain against management and the capitalist.

v12: saying, 'These last men worked only one hour, and you have made them equal to us (this is wrong they have been in fact made superior) who have endured and carried the burden of the day and the scorching heat.'

v13: But he replied to them and said, 'My friends, I am doing you no wrong; did you not bargain with me for a denarius?'

v14: Take what is yours, and go; But If I desire to give to this last group as I give to you.

v15: Is it not lawful for me as a capitalist to do what I desire with my own capital, YES IT IS!, or are you jealous because I am generous, or is your eye or perspective evil because I am Good (agathos intrinsic good).

v16: (JC said) So the last will be first, and the first last."

v17: And as Jesus was about to go up to Jerusalem, he took the twelve disciples aside, and on the way he said to them,

v18: "Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man will be delivered to the chief priests and scribes, and they will condemn him to death,

v19: and deliver him to the Gentiles the Romans, to be mocked and scourged and crucified, and on the third day he will receive resurrection."

v20: Then the mother, Salome, of the sons of Zeb'edee, sister to Mary mother of Jesus, came up to him, with her sons, James and John, Bowing down and kneeling obsequiously before him she asked him for something, making a request.

v21: And he said to her, "What do you want?" She said to him, "Command that these two sons of mine may sit, one at your right hand and one at your left, in your kingdom."

v22: But Jesus answered, "You do not know what you are asking. Are you able to drink the cup that I am to drink?" They said to him (Blind Arrogance), "We are able."

v23: He said to them, James and John, "You will drink my cup, but to sit at my right hand and at my left is not mine to grant, but it is for those for whom it has been prepared in the past with the result that it stands prepared by my Father."

v24: And when the ten heard it, they were indignant with the two brothers.

## Lesson #21 Series # 467 1Tim 2:1, Matt 20:25-34

### I. Blind Arrogance Continued:

#### A. Arrogance is always critical of Grace

1. Salvation, rebound, logistical, super, dying, surpassing GRACE.

2. Super-Grace or Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is composed of 5 categories of blessing for the believer in time:
    - i. Spiritual
    - ii. Temporal
    - iii. By Association
    - iv. Historical
    - v. Dying
- B. The Jericho discourse by Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was to protect Salome from her blind arrogance.
1. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ foretold his betrayal and his future trials and execution.
  2. He had to be betrayed and tried and crucified in order that he could solve the problem of SIN in the whole of the Human Race.
  3. Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is always the same from Adam to the end of the millennium it is FAITH alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ ALONE.
  4. When the individual believes in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and becomes part of the family or Royal Family of God he then must use volition to consistently take in Bible Doctrine to the point of saturation of the mentality of the soul with Bible Doctrine thus reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  5. At Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God the believer has now capacity for life and blessing and therefore God can provide unimaginable blessings for time and eternity and THIS IS WHAT GLORIFIES GOD IN TIME.
  6. To bless a believer in the world of Satan is the ONLY means the believer can glorify God.
- C. There are 2 absolutes which the believer must consider:
1. Bible Doctrine which existed before we existed and will exist after we are gone from this life.
  2. Evil which existed before we existed and will be here after we are gone also.
  3. YOU cannot ever change evil but evil can change YOU and the believer under the influence of evil is under cursing until he dies and he dies by being under Sin Unto Death Divine Discipline.
  4. The difference between blessing and cursing for the believer is the difference between glorifying God or failing in the Spiritual Life and YOUR attitude toward Bible Doctrine is what determines the way you will go.
    - i. See David vs Saul.
  5. Sin is not an issue except in being in or out of fellowship and under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit or NOT.
  6. Sin is totally resolved at the cross by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and for the believer SIN is resolved personally by the Rebound Procedure.
- D. The blind arrogant believer is the one who rejects the grace way of salvation, progress, maturity, blessing, which is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- E. In v25 Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ called the apostles to himself to solve the problem of blind arrogance with the teaching of Bible Doctrine.

1. The historical trend is demonstrated in v25 saying that the roman leaders and rulers of the province exercise a controlling influence over the Jews there.
2. V26 says to the 11 that they should not learn how to be overbearing like the romans in controlling those under them.
3. Greatness in the Spiritual Life is based on Grace Orientation and Service in the Spiritual Life is based on Grace Orientation and that is based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and use of the inner resources provided by Metabolized Bible Doctrine.
4. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in effect said that in the Royal Family of God greatness is being under the authority of Bible Doctrine.
5. This results in avoidance of both blind arrogance and evil and this greatness is not in exercising authority over others.
6. Believer will have the chance to use authority many times and how they use the authority they have must be based on the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
7. Human standards always relate greatness to the attaining and exercising great authority over many.
8. Divine standards demand that all believers be under authority of Bible Doctrine for greatness.
9. Thus the principle of the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception to establish the inner dictator of the soul to control you with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine which also insulates from the influence of evil and protects from Blind Arrogance.
10. No matter our station in life whether having maximum or no authority ALL must come under the authority of Bible Doctrine.
11. The believer must come under the authority of Bible Doctrine and transfer it to the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
12. The primary objective of the believer is to obtain maximum Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to establish a command post of the soul and put on the whole armor from God and maintain this condition for all of life.

F. The GRACE ILLUSTRATION:

1. There were 2 blind men who were stranded by the side of the road being dumped there and being totally helpless to go anywhere.
2. These 2 men upon realizing that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was coming by called him GOD immediately.
3. They shouted to the Lord to ask him for GRACE deliverance from their plight and then recognized him as true humanity who was qualified to be savior.
4. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is followed from Jericho by a mob of arrogant believers and 12 arrogant disciples and the arrogant mother of 2 of them.
5. Everywhere he has turned he has encountered Blind Arrogance which hinders the intake of Bible Doctrine and the concept of Grace Orientation.
6. These 2 men were helpless, hopeless, and useless and were dumped out of society and totally dregs of life.
7. The Lord said these 2 were the only 2 great ones he had encountered in all his trips to Jericho.

8. He said these were great NOT because of what they could do but in what they were thinking.
9. A thought can make or break you and greatness lies in the soul not in service or functions.
  - i. Many organizations are guilty of Blind Arrogance because they say a believer is great based on his EFFORTS or WORKS as a Christian.
  - ii. Bible Doctrine says that these types are not spiritual in any way but suffer from Blind Arrogance.
10. These 2 blind men were thinking Bible Doctrine calling Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ Deity, and also son of David his humanity and understood the doctrines of the Davidic covenant, Hypostatic Union, Impeccability, etc.
11. Their dynamics were in their soul and had their thinking straight and could see Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ with the eye of their soul.
12. They had a command post set up in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and had true humility from maximum Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
13. Believers under the influence of evil having rejected Bible Doctrine like Peter and Salome here have ignored the doctrine of resurrection are spiritually blind and have Blind Arrogance.
14. Out of the whole mob and Salome, and the 12 all were in some state of Blind Arrogance.
15. They ignored the allegations of the resurrection and everything he had taught and they were anxious to do something and turn things upside down.
16. They all wanted to do something to change the situation of their times and none understood the true issue except these 2 men.

G. Mobs:

1. Mobs cannot think, reason, accomplish anything worthwhile in life.
  - i. Mob activity and mob rule is totally antithetical to the Laws of Divine Establishment.
2. Mobs are the historical illustration of mass Blind Arrogance.
3. Mobs are the antithesis of the Laws of Divine Establishment by which we gain and keep our freedom.
4. Mobs destroy freedom, privacy and hinder spiritual growth.
5. Mobs are anti authority, discipline, establishment, revival and you cannot have a mob and a revival of the Spiritual Life.
6. This mob was typical where non authorized persons stick their noses into other's business, violating privacy and freedom of the 2 blind men.
  - i. These 2 men call to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as deity and son of David and the mob sticks their nose into the business of the 2 men and this is typical of MOB Blind Arrogance.
  - ii. Blind Arrogance is always guilty of this and is always judging, gossiping, maligning and sticking their nose into the business of others.
7. The doctrine of the Mental Attitude Sins of gossip and maligning and sticking of the nose into the business of others is a detriment to spiritual growth.
8. Nosy people who invade your privacy and reversionistic and influenced by evil and guilty of Blind Arrogance.

- i. No one has any right to stick their nose into your business except:
      - a. Parents with children.
      - b. Bosses in business
      - c. ETC.
  9. The mob is guilty of Blind Arrogance and these 2 blind men have not gained the approbation of the mob and this is a positive thing on their side.
    - i. If the judgment of the mob had prevailed these 2 blind men would have been ignored.
  10. Blind arrogance always censors, criticizes and reprimands others.
  11. These 2 men are recognized as to Grace Orientation persons in contrast to those who are rebuking them.
- H. There is now contrast between the Super-Grace position and Blind Arrogance.
  1. The mob has the same “evil eye” as the union labor in v15
  2. These 2 blind men when told to shut up were not intimidated by the mob despite being helpless and easy prey for the mob and they shouted for the Lord even louder.
  3. For these 2 blind men they had great courage and all that they were doing was based on their thinking.
  4. The dynamics of life are not based on physical activity but always found in the soul of the believer.
    - i. It is a thought which can make or break you and it is the importance of what you think which matters.
    - ii. Today Bible Doctrine oriented thinking is GONE from our society.
    - iii. This is what gives us Blind Arrogance and so little common sense and so many ridiculous things occurring in the nation today.
    - iv. We have failed in every possible way and in so many ways by Blind Arrogance.
  5. These men had a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and their shouting and thinking was totally based on Bible Doctrine.
  6. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ knows what these 2 blind men are thinking, they recognize him as God and son of David thus the Hypostatic Union and his uniqueness.
  7. He wants to know what they desire of him.
  8. They now have the opportunity to express their desire to God himself.
  9. His question to them indicates he will do for them whatever they want of him.
  10. This emphasizes free will and volition in the historical stage of the Angelic Conflict.
  11. Free will in man never detracts from the sovereignty of God under grace.
  12. They have made their grace appeal from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and under that same grace policy the sovereignty of God says to them “What do you wish”?
  13. Under grace Free will complements and glorifies the sovereignty of God and ONLY Blind Arrogance is in opposition to the sovereignty of God.
  14. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as God made an issue of their free will by asking them what they desired because their volition was so oriented to the

Will of God and Plan of God as to be non meritorious and totally compatible with Grace.

15. They are Grace Orientation and the antithesis to Blind Arrogance.
16. These blind men asked for something which they nor anyone else could do for them.

I. V34 the dynamics of Grace Orientation humility and how the last may be first.

1. The last are those who with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul have true grace humility.
2. The blind men are a contrast with those who have Blind Arrogance and they have Grace Orientation humility seeing with the eyes of the soul based on Bible Doctrine and don't have the evil eye of v15.
3. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ now has compassion on these 2 men and as God he always has had compassion and as humanity he had in a moment of time compassion on them.
4. He instantly touched their eyes.

J. Principles:

1. To follow Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ originally and initially is to express faith alone in him for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
2. To follow Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ for the believer is to be faithful in the intake of Bible Doctrine.
  - i. It is what you think which counts in life and it is the content of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which is where your thinking is built.
  - ii. The content of the soul is fed from the mentality of the soul and when the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul has maximum Bible Doctrine in the soul the believer is influenced by Bible Doctrine.
3. There is only one way to follow Christ after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and that is to be consistent in the Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
4. Once the believer has a command post of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul he is then free from evil and from Blind Arrogance.
5. He sees with the perceptive grace eyes of the soul and fulfills the phrase that the last shall be first in reward and blessing.
6. The Super-Grace believer is first in blessing in time and for reward in eternity.
  - i. The first with Blind Arrogance is last for blessing in time or eternity.
7. Peter was influenced by evil and would be rebuked and worse while the 2 blind men from Jericho were influenced by Bible Doctrine and were given perfect sight and had many other super grace blessings.
8. Peter followed Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Blind Arrogance and the 2 blind men followed Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in grace humility and this difference is being influenced by Bible Doctrine vs being influenced by evil.
9. Peter had physical sight but was blind in the soul paying no attention to the doctrine that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ had taught.

10. The 2 blind men had no physical sight but had great sight in the soul being influenced by Bible Doctrine only.
  11. It took peter a LONG time but he finally reached Super-Grace Status Quo but almost died first.
  12. He also admitted there was a great deal of Bible Doctrine he did not understand 2Pet 3.
  13. Peter was LONG in reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and never had the greatest Super-Grace blessings.
  14. Peter was exposed to Bible Doctrine and picked up the vocabulary and only used it to fool others.
  15. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ not only healed the vision of the 2 blind men but made it possible for them to go on to greater levels of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- K. Blind Arrogance goes from misery to more misery while grace humility goes on to great blessing promotion and success in the Spiritual Life.

**Matt 20:25-**

v25: But Jesus called them to himself and said, "You know that the rulers of the Gentiles that is the Romans, lord it over them, the Jews, and their great men in command of the province, exercise authority over them.

v26: It shall not be so among you, some are already acting like romans; but whoever would become great among you must be your servant,

v27: and whoever wills to be first among you shall be your slave;

v28: just as the Son of man did not come to be served but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for the many."

v29: And as they, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and the disciples, went out of Jericho, a great mob followed him, out of curiosity.

v30: And behold, two blind men sitting helplessly, having been dumped out of life, by the roadside, when they heard that Jesus was passing by, they shouted, "(Kurioi, Deity) Lord, Grace us OUT, or Have mercy on us, Son of David, (perfect humanity)!"

v31: And the mob, with their Blind Arrogance, censored and severely reprimanded or rebuked these same 2 blind men, that they might shut up or keep silent; but they began to shout out all the more loudly, "Lord, Grace us out, deliver us, Son of David!"

v32: And Jesus having stopped momentarily summoned them, and said, "What do you wish what do you desire me to do for you?"

v33: They said to him, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, "Lord, that our eyes may be opened, given sight."

v34: So Jesus had and was moved with compassion, instantly touched their eyes, and at immediately once they recovered their sight with absolutely perfect vision and with grace humility followed him wherever he went.

## **Lesson #22      Series # 467      1Tim 2:1**

- I. Freedom Through Military Victory
  - A. Laws of Divine Establishment say that the nation must have military victory for freedom to be maintained.
  - B. Jack Loomis 1<sup>st</sup> Lt., 2<sup>nd</sup> Battalion, 27<sup>th</sup> Marines, 5<sup>th</sup> Marine Division, Iwo Jima, 8 Mar 1945.
  - C. Douglas Thomas Jacobson PFC, 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalion, 23<sup>rd</sup> Marines, 4<sup>th</sup> Marine Division, Iwo Jima, 26 Feb 1945.
- II. In 1975 we have a situation which was just like ROME in the time of writing of 1<sup>st</sup> Timothy.
  - A. Historical Background for 1<sup>st</sup> Timothy:
    1. Written about 66 AD but the impact of Bible Doctrine had not changed the course of roman history.
    2. The Augustan Age and that of the Antonine Caesars is what changed the direction of Rome and it started with Gaius Julius Caesar.

3. In 5 years Julius Caesar paved the way for Rome to advance for another 500 years and to allow Bible Doctrine to be disseminated freely under the function of the Laws of Divine Establishment.
  4. He was one of the greatest men of all of history.
  5. This epistle is based on the fact that GOD obviously uses different men in history and at the time of this writing he had used Caesar an unbeliever and his influence which continued for many years.
  6. He set up a system of government which was not dependent on the quality of the rulers where by the roman empire went right on because of what he set up.
  7. In addition Paul writing Timothy and other epistles resulted in a great number of Ultra Super-Grace believers who stabilized the roman empire.
  8. Timothy was so wimpy and needed to be directed by strong commands from Paul.
- B. One great thing which occurred at the time of the Antonine Caesars was establishment throughout the world of the mystery doctrine of the Church Age which resulted in 100 years of world peace.
1. There was unprecedented prosperity under a system of free enterprise where government did not in any way interfere with business.
  2. Charity to the poor was so great that welfare was cut to a bare minimum.
  3. Animals were well treated, slavery became mild, emancipation occurred on an individual basis, Women were treated better than at any other time in history.
  4. This was considered by the great historians the greatest period of human history which was the result of the saturation of Bible Doctrine at the grass roots level of Rome.
  5. When doctrine has penetrated the society Women are always treated best.

### III. Outline:

- A. v1-8 Challenge to pray for establishment
- B. v9-15 Dynamics of the Christian Woman

### IV. The Challenge to Prayer:

- A. Paul is giving a nicely worded command order for prayer which has been omitted.
  1. It is not a dissertation on prayer nor a delineation on the facets of prayer but a command to start recognizing the relationship between the power of prayer and the Laws of Divine Establishment.
  2. The royal priesthood has as a bonifide function the praying for our military and the support it gives to our men is beyond imagination.
  3. Pray for increased military budget and universal military training and for men on the prayer list who face the most discouraging situations being constantly abused and used by politicians and being victims of religionism and evil and reversionism.
  4. We must pray that the government get its hands off of business and labor unions will be broken up and smashed being part of evil and that taxes would be reasonable and that bureaucracies would be disbanded.
  5. We must pray for our local government and there is a relationship between our freedom to take in Bible Doctrine and the Laws of Divine Establishment.
- B. Entreaties vs Prayers



1. Entreaties is prayer for individuals who you know personally and may be on a prayer list.
  2. Prayers here is to pray for principles which support our nation and to ask for changed in things like military budget, better infantry weapons, artillery men and material, and many other things.
  3. Intercession is prayer on behalf of others under the principles of establishment and for individuals believer and unbeliever, to surround the whole area of concept with regard to principles of establishment.
- C. With regard to Timothy he is in Ephesus and this is the capital of the roman province of Asia and it is important in that it keeps out the barbarians and is a center for great commerce.
1. It is the center of Christianity and Ephesus is the capital and therefore prayer is needed for support of the Laws of Divine Establishment there.
  2. As you pray for changed in the nation to align with the Laws of Divine Establishment you benefit from the prayers yourself in that police will function better, judges will follow the law not subjectively interpret it, that criminals will get their due punishment and capital punishment will be used more, etc.
  3. We MUST pray for the local government and our city in order for it to continue to prosper.
- D. V2 limits “all mankind” to establishment for spiritual advance of the Royal Family of God in this generation.
1. These prayers are for rulers of the nation or kings or anyone in authority under the Laws of Divine Establishment government.
    - i. Local rulers
    - ii. Judges and others who make decisions in the law
    - iii. Law Enforcement
    - iv. Military
    - v. Any overall government authority where policy is made and enforced.
    - vi. State Government
    - vii. National Government
  2. Prayer for the government functioning under Laws of Divine Establishment is the means of the perpetuation of the Human Race in the Angelic Conflict.
  3. This guarantees evangelism in every generation and for believers to be consistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and reach Super-Grace and stabilize and support the nation.
  4. In the Angelic Conflict as part of the Royal Family of God and all those in his vicinity should be able to lead a tranquil undisturbed life.
  5. Believers must pray and they must also get the results of their prayer in a tranquil life, in piety in fulfilling human relationships.
- V. Doctrine of Godliness:
- A. Definition:
    1. Godliness is derived from (gr) (n) Eusebeia which in the New Testament Scripture connotes duty and responsibility of the member of the Royal Family of God royal priesthood to God under the grace Plan of God.
      - i. It is our duty and responsibility as members of the Royal Family of God.

2. Godliness refers to the balance of residency in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul therefore is synonymous with experiential sanctification.
  - i. As a believer we have and always will have the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit
  - ii. In the soul however we have 2 sides to consider:
  - iii. Filling of God the Holy Spirit as a result of consistent use of rebound has no meaning in the soul until there is resident Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - iv. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit has no where to God in the soul except to assist in our taking in Bible Doctrine under the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception until there is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - v. Then with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, God the Holy Spirit uses that Bible Doctrine in application to situations in life and this is the balance of residence in the soul or experiential sanctification.
3. Godliness is based on the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit in the body of the believer which cannot be lost by any believer.
4. Godliness is the balance of residency in the soul of the believer by which we have Filling of God the Holy Spirit + maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - i. The only function of God the Holy Spirit in the soul is to take in Bible Doctrine UNTIL we get Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
5. Godliness is the Status Quo of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace and is a synonym for it.
- B. The establishment and human authority is needed for the function of the believer under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and resultant godliness. **1Tim 2:2**
- C. Godliness is related to the function of the believer under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and knowledge of Bible Doctrine **Tit 1:1**
- D. Therefore godliness demands discipline **1Tim 4:7**
- E. Godliness is profitable for time and eternity **1Tim 4:8**
  1. There is profit from physical exercise but ONLY for time and there must be self discipline which is the key for spiritual growth which is profitable for both time and eternity.
- F. The basis for godliness is the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in the 1<sup>st</sup> advent **1Tim 3:16**
  1. Our godliness is the tactical victory which goes with this strategic victory.
- G. Godliness is distorted by reversionists under the influence of evil, **1Tim 6:3-5**
  1. If you don't go for Bible Doctrine continuously you will be one of the STUPID BLIND Arrogant believers.
  2. Reversionists under the influence of evil have a form of pseudo godliness from blind arrogance and which is another distortion **2Tim 3:2-5**
- H. The great gain of true godliness is in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Super-Grace, Ultra Super-Grace, Dying Grace, Surpassing Grace and all the capacities for life. **1Tim 6:6**
- I. Godliness is attained under the principle of living grace or Logistical Grace **2Pet 1:3**

J. Godliness is a Christian virtue **2Pet 1:6-7, 3:11**

1Tim 2:1

v1: First of all, therefore, I, Paul, keep continually requesting via strong command decision order, personal prayer entreaties for personal needs of others in need, prayers for changes in situations in the nation, earnest intercessions, and thanksgivings be made for functions under the Laws of Divine Establishment on behalf of all mankind.

1Tim 2:2

v2: On behalf of rulers or kings and on behalf of all who are in establishment government authority (executive, legislative, & judicial branches of government, in client nations), in order that we may lead an undisturbed and inwardly and outwardly tranquil pattern of life, in all piety or dutiful responsibility owed to God in time as part of the Christian Way of Life with a balance of residence in the soul and probity and integrity, in reverence and respectfulness in prayer

**Lesson #23                      Series # 467                      1Tim 2:3**

- I. Freedom through military victory:
  - A. Joseph, Rodolph Julion, Plt. Sgt, USMC, 1Battalion, 27<sup>th</sup> Marines, 5<sup>th</sup> Marine Division, IWO JIMA, 9 Mar 1945
  - B. Joseph F Merrill, Pvt, US Army, 15<sup>th</sup> Infantry, 9<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division (holding records for the most CMH recipients) Lohei Germany,
- II. The command given to Timothy in the last 2 verses was to pray for all those involved in the functions of the Laws of Divine Establishment in the nation.
- III. Review Doctrine of “Godliness”
- IV. Review Doctrine of Divine Institutions or of Laws of Divine Establishment.
  - A. We are told to pray for establishment or the Divine Institutions but You cannot pray for what you do not understand.
  - B. Establishment is a set of divine laws for orderly function and survival of the Human Race during the Human History phase of Angelic Conflict
    1. They operate from the fall of man to the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and apply to the believer and unbeliever alike.
    2. They provide protection and blessing for the Human Race and guarantee the perpetuation of the Human Race, evangelism and bible teaching in Human History.
  - C. The basic concept around which all the Laws of Divine Establishment function is VOLITION which is Divine Institution #1
    1. Volition is the divine law of free will which guarantees both human freedom and privacy.
    2. This freedom of choice and right to live gives the Human Race the rights to life, freedom, privacy, pursuit of happiness in the constant consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit in order to facilitate our arrival at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Super-Grace blessings.
    3. One of the spiritual blessings of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is Sharing the Happiness of God and in effect in every bible study we engage in we are in the pursuit of happiness and where we receive capacity for life, love and happiness.
    4. There is both an inherent and acquired variation in human ability all members of the Human Race are free to believe or reject Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as savior John 3:18, 36, and after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God are free to accept or reject Bible Doctrine as God’s plan for phase II life in time.

5. FREEDOM is the true basis for evangelism and for the true function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
- D. The extension of freedom and privacy.
1. God has designed Category II Love Romance / Marriage of Right Man / Right Woman to be second ONLY to Category I love Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  2. Both Right Man and Right Woman must be free to enter into their relationship and have mentality by which they identify their right relationship.
  3. No one can identify your opposite number except YOU from the Norms and Standards in your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  4. These standards are often ignored or set aside because of inability to wait on the timing of God.
  5. The identification of Right Man or Right Woman is a soul identification between 2 members of the OPPOSITE SEX, 1 male for 1 female.
  6. Volition is the key factor when a coalescence of soul is recognized by both involved.
  7. The coalescence of souls eventually (too quickly today) leads to the fact that both souls being housed in a body eventually result in coalescence of bodies in SEX.
  8. In order to have coalescence of body and soul the couple involved MUST have privacy and this is part of the Divine Institution #1.
  9. Marriage is a mechanism to extend human freedom and provide privacy to the couple involved.
    - i. One of the most idiotic ideas ever to come along is that once a couple marries then they MUST have children.
    - ii. God ordained in the Right Man and Right Woman relationship 2 sides of the coin of this Status Quo and SEX.
    - iii. Recreation in SEX.
    - iv. Perpetuation of the Human Race in Procreation from SEX.
    - v. Not everyone in a relationship of Right Man / Right Woman should have children and the reality is that children destroy privacy for the 2 individuals involved.
  10. Marriage is designed for privacy and living conditions and having children or not will effect the level of privacy you have.
    - i. It is the framework and protection for Category II love and is in reality an extension of freedom in the field of privacy.
    - ii. Marriage forms the underlying basis for stability in society and rejects the concept of anarchy known as communal living.
- E. Another extension comes from the deliberate destruction of the privacy in marriage called Family and is Divine Institution #3.
1. Physical birth of infants finds them helpless and useless but much loved.
  2. God provided protection, provision and training for children through parents.
  3. All Right Man / Right Woman combinations are NOT all qualified to be parents.
    - i. Many people who have children are not qualified to have and raise children and they may be great lovers but great lovers do not make great parents.

- ii. Once you have children you have responsibilities which are life long.
  - 4. Parental authority is the basis for all authority in life.
    - i. This is what is wrong in our nation today.
    - ii. In addition to providing food, shelter, and clothing parents MUST train children in the functions of LIFE.
    - iii. This includes inculcation of the principle of authority, respect for privacy of others and respect for property and rights of others, and for LAW AND ORDER and patriotism.
    - iv. For parents who are believers in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ there the added responsibility of evangelism and train their children in the content of Bible Doctrine.
    - v. There must also first be taught respect for the Pastor Teacher and his authority. **Heb 13:7, 17**
    - vi. Families do not stay together today because there are too many malfunctions and mistakes and too little respect for Laws of Divine Establishment.
- F. Nationalism is Divine Institution #4
  - 1. It is the guardian and custodian of FREEDOM where as Internationalism is the greatest enemy of freedom.
  - 2. In this guardianship of freedom there is a very strong principle Gen 10:5, Acts 17:26-18, Deut 32:8, ETC.
  - 3. Divine Institution #4 is not only guardian of freedom and rights of people in the Human Race but the basis also for blessing and prosperity in the Human Race.
    - i. All verses and passages teaching nationalism in the bible define it on the basis of racial, geographic, and linguistic categories.
    - ii. Most are a combination of things.
  - 4. When in a nation there is a combination of races you can compound the problems in the nation but like being in the Royal Family of God whether Jew or Gentile you no longer are what you were before and when you become what you were not before.
    - i. In the Church Age at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God you are not Jew or gentile but members of the Royal Family of God.
    - ii. In the United States you are not German or Italian or English or Japanese, and once you become an American citizen this is above and beyond all other designations and there is no higher nor greater dignity.
    - iii. You should not hold ties with whatever you were before and once an American you become Anglo Saxon whether black, white, yellow, or red.
  - 5. Everyone should take a course in English history because it is the basis for all our American history.
  - 6. Under nationalism there is interior protection of your privacy, property and freedoms which is proper law and proper Law Enforcement.
    - i. Where there is failure to meet the status of the law there must be proper Judicial administration of punishment.
    - ii. This is criminal law enforcement and punishment for infringement of the law.

7. Under nationalism there is an exterior protection of your freedom, privacy and property by effective military establishment.
  - i. In most ancient countries this was both inner and outer protection for the nation.
  - ii. In most modern countries there is a distinction between military and Law Enforcement functions in protection.
  - iii. This is the basis for gaining and regaining and maintaining freedoms if and when politicians lose them.
8. The principle of government which protects the freedom and rights and citizens is found under ANY form of government administration which has sound laws and fulfills all the areas of government, executive, judicial and legislative.
  - i. These can be tied up in only 1 person in a monarchy or dictatorship.
  - ii. When the monarch is enlightened and serve for the benefit of the people this is the BEST form of government.
  - iii. Or this can go all the way down to a republic form of government.
  - iv. There has never been a successful form of democracy in history and the United States is not a democracy but a republic.
  - v. We are degenerating into a socialistic democracy and NO democracy has ever been successful.
- G. Economy under the Laws of Divine Establishment must be FREE ENTERPRISE
  1. Under this system the function of the business in the economy gives the investor and management the sole right to set and enforce policy.
  2. Neither the government, labor, nor any criminal organization have any right to make any policies for business.
    - i. In the United States of America today we have all 3 forcing business to change or set policies.
    - ii. Our government is immoral and evil and has interfered with both big and small business and has under its socialistic bureaucratic efforts tried to right perceived wrongs and has all but destroyed our economy.
  3. Labor and unions have no right to formulate policy in business and if the government was functioning correctly they would outlaw and break up all labor unions systematically and completely.
    - i. There should be no such thing as a LABOR UNION and no such thing as a communist party.
- H. There must be common law with objective legislation to protect freedom, privacy and property of the individual.
  1. This has not been accomplished in any area to date and every time there is some form of social unrest and riot the local government has failed to protect the property of businesses in the area.
    - i. See the WATTS Upheaval in LA or the FERGUSON Riots MO.
  2. Law must not be subjective so as to avoid invading individual rights or confiscating personal property.
  3. There must be common culture reflecting the Spiritual Life, morality, nobility and patriotism of the nation through its literature, art, drama and music.
    - i. All this has degenerated in our culture.

- I. Divine Institution and Laws of Divine Establishment protect human freedom making evangelism a bonifide function in every generation.
  1. The national entity must keep separated religion and government functions totally to protect the freedoms, rights and property of individuals.
  2. The state must never penalize anyone for accepting or rejecting Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  3. There must never be a state church and the state must never force nor coerce anyone to believe in anything or reject anything which has to do with evangelism or religion which is false.
  4. Within a nation a persons relationship with God or lack of it should be a matter totally of his own personal choice and he should have a right to his beliefs or lack of them, to own property, to his privacy, and the same right of protection against crime or invasion as any believer in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
- J. As part of the Angelic Conflict Satan attacks both the bible and Bible Doctrine as well as the Laws of Divine Establishment.
- K. When a nation begins to decline certain alternate divine laws of nation judgment become the basis for nation disaster and result in degeneration and destruction of the nation from the outside by the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline and from the inside by the removal of the Laws of Divine Establishment which brings chaos in the nation this is something which no one should want.
- V. The doctrine of Authority:
  - A. It is a great issue in Timothy as it is very hard to recognize the authority of a wimpy leader.
  - B. Definition:
    1. Authority is the legal power delegated by God under the Laws of Divine Establishment whereby certain members of the Human Race have jurisdiction and responsibility for enforcement of the Laws of Divine Establishment and for the protection of others.
    2. Authority exists in both temporal and spiritual realms according to Bible Doctrine.
  - C. Authority in the fall of man:
    1. Rejection of authority held by Adam and Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the part of the woman contributed to her fall.
    2. She failed in the garden having rejected 2 kinds of authority
      - i. That of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ her bible teacher
      - ii. That of Adam the ruler of the world and her husband ruler of the woman and her Right Man.
  - D. Areas of authority in life include:
    1. Authority of God himself revealed through Bible Doctrine.
    2. Authority in the spiritual realm
      - i. Local Church with Pastor Teacher
    3. Authority in the Divine Institutions:
      - i. Divine Institution #1 == Volition
      - ii. Divine Institution #2 == Husband over the wife
      - iii. Divine Institution #3 == Parents over Children
      - iv. Divine Institution #4 == Government over citizens.
    4. Academic Authority is the teacher over the Students

- i. Students are in class to learn not to teach and have no rights.
    - ii. Policy for academia is set up by administrators.
    - iii. Administration has a right to make policy
    - iv. Teachers have a right to teach.
  - 5. Athletic Authority is the Coach over the Players
    - i. Coach or manager has authority over the players.
  - 6. Business Authority is management or executives over labor.
  - 7. Military Authority is superior officer or higher ranking enlisted men over lower officers or enlisted men respectively.
    - i. RHIP == Rank has its privileges.
- E. Words in the original languages will be described as encountered.
- F. Commandments from God carry a principle of authority.
  - 1. This is seen in any imperative mood statement in the bible or participles in the imperative and infinitives uses as imperatives.
  - 2. These are commands from God directed toward believers for obedience
    - i. Deut 11:27, 1Sam 15:22, Jer 7:23, 11:4+7
    - ii. These come from the omniscience and sovereignty of God and are executed by the believer under the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
    - iii. There is therefore authority stated from God throughout the scripture.
- G. Authority over nature is found in divine laws established over nature called laws of science.
  - 1. Matt 8:27 Mk 4:41, Luke 8:25 states that Nature Obeys God.
- H. Authority over angels where angels are subject to divine authority Mk 1:27, 1Pet 3:22
- I. Authority in the Human Realm:
  - 1. Pastor Teacher over the Local Church 1Cor 16:15-16, 2Cor 10:8, 1Thes 5:12, Heb 13:7, 17.
  - 2. Husband in marriage Eph 5:22, Col 3:18
  - 3. Business to stabilize economy Eph 6:5, Col 3:22
  - 4. Freedom through military victory is based on the authority of the military establishment Neh 4:13-15.

VI. v3:

- A. We must pray for the Laws of Divine Establishment to be enforced and functioned under.
  - 1. Military men
  - 2. Police and Law Enforcement
  - 3. Judges in courts to be objective and stick with the law
  - 4. Branches of government in their every function.
- B. The Laws of Divine Establishment gives the person the freedom to accept or reject Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as savior.
  - 1. This verse is directed to those who have made a positive decision to believe in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - 2. This is a reminder to all believers that they would not be saved without the existence of the Laws of Divine Establishment then in Rome now in the United States and other world nations.



3. Laws of Divine Establishment means the freedom for the function of evangelism and this means that SOME people respond to the gospel and some do not.
4. This is therefore addressed to those who have made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone.

C. Principles:

1. Prayer is a noble and acceptable function of the royal priesthood of the Royal Family of God in the Church Age.
2. The nobility of prayer is emphasized here in relationship to authority and establishment.
3. The theological implications here are very important:
  - i. Not only did Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ have to be a man to be our savior but this emphasizes that he also had to be God as per the Hypostatic Union here called the “Savior God”.
4. The importance of prayer in the field of establishment guarantees the perpetuation of evangelism for the unbeliever and bible teaching for the believer.

D. Principle:

1. Since it is the sovereign Will of God for all members of the Human Race to be saved and since Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ died in Substitutionary Spiritual Death for all human sins on the cross it is obvious that man’s free will plays an important role in resolving the Angelic Conflict.
  - i. The doctrine of unlimited atonement says that man’s free will plays a key role in the resolution of the Angelic Conflict.
2. This phrase of v4a establishes the existence of the free will of man to act in conjunction with the sovereign Will of God or to act independently against the Will of God.
3. The fact that God wills all mankind to be saved and some are not saved indicates the reality of free will volition in the soul of man.
4. This free will of human volition is part of the creation of man in his role of resolving the Angelic Conflict.
5. It is both awesome and thought provoking to realize that sinful, stupid and spiritually dead mankind can set his volition up against the perfect volition of the sovereignty of God.
6. Truly therefore God has a sense of humor to permit the free will of man and make human volition the basis for solving the Angelic Conflict and the Laws of Divine Establishment.
  - i. This also demonstrates his sense of humor in making volition the basic principle in the Laws of Divine Establishment.
7. In the Plan of God this human volition can only respond to the grace Plan of God in a nonmeritorious way and he did not design human volition for any MERIT in entering the Plan of God.
8. This means Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is ONLY by faith and that spiritual growth in the Royal Family of God is a totally GRACE system and also nonmeritorious system of perception.
9. The doctrine of unlimited atonement is compatible with this phrase in that Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was judged for all human sins on the cross and did not only die for the ELECT but for the entire Human Race.

10. Since angelic volition was involved in the fall of Satan and the angelic revolution against God, Man's volition is used under the grace Plan of God for resolving that entire revolution.
11. Human History is the record of man's volition subordinated to the Sovereignty of God vs Man's volition revolting against the Sovereign Will of God.
12. Evangelism is the first issue and man subordinates self to the Sovereignty of God by personal faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone.
13. Every time a person acquires Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ the FALLACY of Satan's position and the doom of his revolution is demonstrated.

**1Tim 2:3**

**v3: This praying for every aspect of Laws of Divine Establishment, is HIGHLY honorable and noble, and HIGHLY acceptable in the opinion of our Savior God.**

**Lesson #24      Series # 467      1Tim 2:5**

- I. Freedom through military victory:
  - A. Truman Kimbro, Tech 4<sup>th</sup> Grade, 2<sup>nd</sup> Infantry Division, Rokrath Belgium, 19 Dec 1944;
- II. The Volitional Issue of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is also carried into the Christian Way of Life in the Plan of God.
  - A. The great objective of the Spiritual Life is reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super-Grace and is the tactical victory of the Angelic Conflict.
    1. The believer using Positive Volition consistently toward Bible Doctrine passes the test of volition with regard to Bible Doctrine.
    2. This is the continuation and perpetuation of the Angelic Conflict in time and the believer enters the Angelic Conflict at birth and the great issue is whether he is influenced by Bible Doctrine or evil.
    3. The objective for the believer is stated in v4 as being influenced by Bible Doctrine.
  - B. Concept:
    1. Here is the Will of God stated for man stated in 2 parts and related to the volition of man.
      - i. Part 1 is the issue of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through nonmeritorious faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone which breaks Satan's back every time it occurs.
      - ii. It becomes a demonstration over and again that GOD is totally right and Satan totally wrong.
      - iii. Part 2 is the issue of spiritual advance of the believer through full knowledge of Bible Doctrine which is the perpetuation of that concept so that the REAL battleground in Human History is the SOUL of each believer and in fact all of mankind.
      - iv. In part 1 the soul of man must be saved and this is the essential to demonstrate the fallacy of the satanic revolution.
    2. The first objective demands the function of the Laws of Divine Establishment and true evangelism through correct presentation of gospel information under the doctrines of Soteriology and Christology.

- i. We must as Royal Family of God pray for the proper function of the Laws of Divine Establishment in our nation because establishment provides the necessary elements for true evangelism including:
    - a. Freedom
    - b. Privacy
    - c. Property.
  - ii. These are essential for true proper evangelism:
    - a. You must be free to use your volition in a decision for or against Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
    - b. You must have privacy for this function
    - c. You must have roots in an area (property) so that you would have an interest in this subject.
3. This evangelism is accomplished in 3 ways in the Church Age:
  - i. Gift of Evangelism
  - ii. Through the teaching of the Pastor Teacher of salvation passages
  - iii. Personal Witnessing of any member of the Royal Family of God who is QUALIFIED to do so.
4. The 2<sup>nd</sup> objective is accomplished through the function of the believer under the Grace Apparatus for Perception which requires:
  - i. The Local Church
  - ii. The textbook of the bible.
  - iii. The prepared authoritative teaching of the Pastor Teacher.
5. You can see the importance of believers praying for the Laws of Divine Establishment in their environment.
  - i. Police
  - ii. Local Government
  - iii. Wisdom in national and state government
  - iv. Areas where Laws of Divine Establishment are under attack.
  - v. This is a very important wide neglected field of prayer.
6. All blessings from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God are based on the principle that the freedom of the individual to hear the gospel and respond with faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone and the freedom of the believer to hear the teaching of Bible Doctrine and respond in growth all come by courtesy of the Laws of Divine Establishment.
  - i. God ordained the Laws of Divine Establishment as the very principle and vehicle by which these things are accomplished.
  - ii. This is why when we see emotional believers, Jesus freaks and hippies who think they are doing something for the Lord are actually anti establishment and on Satan's team despite being believers.
  - iii. They are the enemy of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution 2 besides being a wimp in the soul.
7. The Laws of Divine Establishment are designed by God to perpetuate the Angelic Conflict on the earth despite Satan ruling the world.
8. Laws of Divine Establishment is the means of freedom, evangelism and fulfillment of the role of the Local Church which depends totally on the Laws of Divine Establishment.

- i. The Local Church could not function freely without the Laws of Divine Establishment.
  - 9. This is why war is GOOD.
    - i. War preserves the freedom of the nation engaged in evangelism and missionary efforts and the true function of the Local Church to teach Bible Doctrine.
    - ii. This is why every believer with even a small amount of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul fully supports the Law Enforcement officers, judges, and military functions of the nation.
  - 10. We as part of the Royal Family of God who fail to use our spiritual weapon of a barrage of prayer put out for the Laws of Divine Establishment
    - i. Police
    - ii. Judicial functions
    - iii. Military functions.
  - 11. The importance of the doctrine of establishment and it as the subject of effective prayer as seen in v4.
- III. Biblical basis for any kind of specific intercessory prayer:
  - A. This is one of the greatest spiritual weapons ever conceived in heaven for use by the Royal Family of God.
    - 1. The doctrinal and divine basis for it are in v5-6 and are a parenthesis still concerning the function of prayer but departing from the specific command to pray for the Laws of Divine Establishment.
  - B. Mediatorship:
    - 1. Requires 2 parties to function:
      - i. Party of the first part is God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit.
    - 2. Mediator is the one who conducts arbitration between two parties so that they can reach a common goal.
- IV. Doctrine of Mediatorship:
  - A. Etymology dealing with the word in the original language:
    - 1. Mesitase == Hellenistic Greek == to represent or have someone neutral to represent or act as an umpire between 2 contesting sides in disagreement.
      - i. It was used for the concept of a neutral or umpire to come in a arbitrate between 2 sides.
      - ii. This is therefore an Arbitrator who has the power and ability to judge in a dispute between 2 parties.
      - iii. A Judge, Umpire, Arbitrator, Mediator between 2 contesting sides.
      - iv. He is chosen to settle the differences between the 2 parties in their controversy.
    - 2. Verb Mesiteuo == to act as an umpire or peace maker, to establish a relationship between 2 unrelated parties and mediate their coming together.
  - B. Definition:
    - 1. A mediator removes estrangement and disagreement between 2 contesting antagonistic parties bringing them to unity or common goal.
    - 2. He arbitrates between 2 hostile parties establishing peace or reconciliation.
    - 3. The problem must be agreeable to both parties and in the case of hostility between GOD and man he must be equal with both parties.

4. To have the authority to mediate, arbitrate and reconcile 2 hostile parties a mediator between God and man must be God and Man.

C. Old Testament Scripture use of Mediatorship:

Job 9:1-2

v1: Then Job answered:

v2: "In truth I know this is so, But how can a man be in the right in reconciliation with God?"

v32: For he, God, is not a man, as I am, that I may answer him in judgment, or that we may come together in judgment.

v33: There is no umpire between us, who can lay his hand upon both of us.

1. (heb) Mokiach == Participle of verb Jakach == Umpire == to cause to arbitrated == Mediator == one equal with both parties who can "lay his hand on both".
2. This confirms the concept of Mediatorship in the bible and the mediator must be equal with both contesting parties.

D. The Hypostatic Union qualifies Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as mediator between God and man.

1Tim 2:5

1. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is equal with God being God and equal with God being impeccable man.

E. The Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross forms the basis for Mediatorship between man and God.

1. The mediator removes the estrangement between the 2 hostile parties and brings them to a common goal.
2. The estrangement between God and man is Sin and Spiritual Death.
3. The Sin of estrangement is not personal sin but it starts at physical birth when Adam's Original Sin is imputed to the genetic Old Sin Nature.
4. When you sin the first time is a moot question but personal sin demands the use of volition so you had to be old enough to have operation of your volition but SIN is the result of the Old Sin Nature functioning in the body not the cause for having an Old Sin Nature.
5. We are born with the Old Sin Nature and imputed Adam's Original Sin and we sin personally because we have the Old Sin Nature
6. We sin in 3 categories
  - i. Mental
  - ii. Verbal
  - iii. Overt.
7. The wages of sin is death is totally misunderstood by most.
8. The wages of having the Old Sin Nature is Spiritual Death NOT physical death.
9. Being BORN makes us automatically HOSTILE to God being born in Status Quo Spiritual Death and we prove this by sinning somewhere along the line of our life.
10. Too much emphasis is put on personal sins in theology because the basis for our condemnation before God is not our personal sins but our possession of the genetic Old Sin Nature.
11. This was not that way in Adam but he got us into this mess with his volition.

12. We are hostile to God from BIRTH and are under Spiritual Death from physical birth.
13. At the same time we receive physical life we are also spiritually dead.
14. Spiritual death means we are HOSTILE TO GOD even if we have beautiful thoughts toward God.
15. We therefore MUST have a mediator, arbitrator, or umpire and that is Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
16. On the cross Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ provides the basis for our umpire.
17. All our sins as manifestation of the Old Sin Nature along with Adam's Original Sin and Ishah's sin are all imputed to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and judged in him on the cross.
18. This allows the Old Sin Nature to no longer totally control the situation in our life and we can and do have an Old Sin Nature and still be saved because Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was judged in substitution for us.
19. This provides:
  - i. Propitiation == satisfying God
  - ii. Reconciliation == we are now acceptable to God with all barriers removed.
  - iii. Redemption == A strong part of Mediatorship
20. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ had to be the right person being God and Man but had to be the right person doing the right thing.
  - i. This eliminates the sermon on the mount as applying to life today unless it is repeated in the epistles.
  - ii. This is less than 5% of the sermon on the mount.
  - iii. The meek are not inheriting the earth but being buried every day.
    - a. Aside: the communists of North Vietnam had a massive army much of which was from china but NO equipment and then the US army left Vietnam they left BILLIONS of dollars worth of equipment there to arm the communists.
    - b. This was the stupidity of Lyndon Johnson and no one including him ever listened to Douglas MacArthur who said "don't ever engage in a land conflict with the Asiatics. There are ways to defeat them but never commit American troops to a land war in Asia."
    - c. In 1975 we had weakened ourselves to the point of military impotence and armed Asiatic communists.
    - d. This would not be surprising if this error was a deliberate plot and conspiracy by communist sympathizers in this country to ensure that they received great amounts of equipment in communist china.
    - e. We also armed French army personnel when we left material behind in Africa and also armed many Arabs as well.
21. The blood of Christ is the basis for Mediatorship and is synonymous with the word of Christ.
  - i. In order to summarize the work of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross and relate it to the Levitical offerings which were shadows

of the work of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross the phrase “blood of Christ” is used.

**Heb 9:12**

v12: And not by means of the blood of goats and young bulls, but by means of his own blood (figurative) he our great high priest entered into the holy of holies once and for all having procured eternal redemption for us.

v13: For you see if the blood of goats and bulls and the ashes of the red heifer which becomes ceremoniously unclean continue purifying with reference to the ceremonial cleansing of the flesh and they do,

**Heb 9:14**

v14: How much more than ceremonial cleansing through the shedding of animal blood shall the blood of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who through his eternal spirit (divine essence) has offered himself without blemish (impeccability) to the God, purify by an expiatory offering, our conscience from dead works to serve the living God.

v15: And because of this, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ becoming true humanity and went to the cross without Adam’s Original Sin nor personal sin, accomplishing redemption, by means of a new contract or covenant he is mediator, a death having occurred for the purpose of redemption from the transgressions against the first covenant, in order that they having been called may take into their possession the promise of eternal inheritance,

22. There is a very close relationship between mediator and redemption.
23. The Blood of Christ provides the work of Mediatorship and is a combination of redemption, reconciliation and propitiation.
24. Redemption is related to Mediatorship being toward sin where as reconciliation is toward man and propitiation toward God.

F. The law anticipated Mediatorship Gal 3:19-20

**Gal 3:19**

v19: Why the law or What is the purpose of the {Mosaic} law? It was added for the sake or purpose of defining the transgressions (to see sin as transgression of God’s laws) having been ordained or arrangements precisely made in a point of time through the instrumentality of angels in the hand of a mediator (the preincarnate Jesus Christ), until the Seed (of the woman Gen 3:15, the incarnate Jesus Christ) should decide to come to whom the promise was made.

**Gal 3:20**

v20: Now the mediator of the law is not of one party only, whereas God is One party only.

1. The Mosaic Law under supervision of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was taught to Israel by angels.
2. The purpose of the law was designed to define the hostility between God and Mankind and it clearly defined this.
3. When Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ became man he was qualified as mediator meanwhile the Mosaic Law defined both the hostility and estrangement as well as anticipating the solution to both.

G. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ the God man fulfills Mediatorship Heb 8:6, 12:24

H. If one member of the trinity is satisfied by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross all are satisfied.

1. If God the Father is propitiated at the cross all are propitiated and all are protected from anything which would compromise the Essence of God in any way.

**1Tim 2:4**

v4: Our Savior God, who wills all mankind throughout Human History in the Angelic Conflict to receive salvation and to go or advance to the epignosis full knowledge of Bible Doctrine .

**1Tim 2:5**

v5: For you see, One God in Essence, and one mediator, umpire or arbitrator between God and Mankind, Unique man Christ Jesus,

**Lesson #25      Series # 467      1Tim 2:5**

I. Doctrine of Redemption:

A. Where mediatorship is related to the cross we always have redemption mentioned

B. Etymology of Hebrew & Greek Words:

1. (gr) antilutron == ‘on behalf of’ with substitutionary connotation
  - i. Substituting money for the freedom of a slave or prisoner
  - ii. Payment of money for the freedom of a slave from the slave market.
2. (gr) apolutrosis == deliverance from the slave market procured on payment of a ransom
3. (gr) Lutron == Payment of a ransom
4. (gr) Lutroo == to release from slaver market or prison on payment of redemption money.
5. (gr) Lutrosis == deliverance or freedom or redemption.
6. (gr) Lutrotes == redeemer, deliverer, the one who pays for the freedom.
7. (gr) Agorazo == to buy or purchase, purchasing freedom from slavery.
8. (gr) Exagorazo == to purchase freedom of a slave from the slave market.
9. (heb) gaal ==
10. (heb) padah ==

C. Definition:

1. Redemption is the work in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross directed toward sin.
2. There are 3 aspects of the cross which must be fulfilled for salvation to be real:
  - i. Work toward God == Propitiation
  - ii. Work toward Man == Reconciliation
  - iii. Work toward Sin == Redemption
3. The Human Race is born with a genetic transmitted Old Sin Nature and therefore under Spiritual Death toward God.
  - i. We are not spiritually dead because we sin but simply because we are born.
4. This means that the Human Race is born into the slave market of sin.
  - i. The ONLY exception is Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
  - ii. There must be someone outside the slave market in order to get the slaves out.
  - iii. The virgin birth is so important because it means Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was Born without the Old Sin Nature and therefore spiritually alive not spiritually dead.
5. Redemption is The saving work of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ by which he purchases our freedom from the slave market of sin.
6. The coin of the realm by which the purchase is made is called “the blood of Christ” which is referring to the Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ accepting the imputation and judgment of our sins resulting in his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross Eph 1:7, Col 1:14

D. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is the only qualified redeemer.

1. The qualification begins with the virgin conception and the virgin birth by which he came into the world without the genetic Old Sin Nature passed down from a male father and without the imputation of Adam’s Original Sin.
2. His perfect life of impeccability results in him being perfect humanity and as such qualified to go to the cross and be judged for our sins and therefore provide the potential to effect our release from the slave market of sin. **Is**



**53:9, John 8:46, 19:4, 2Cor 5:21, Heb 1:3, 4:15, 7:26-28, 1Tim 3:16, 1Pet 1:18-19**

3. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was willing to redeem mankind.
  - i. Without his human volition this would not have been possible.
  - ii. His divine volition was not an issue since it was part of the divine decree.
  - iii. The redemptive work of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross was an act of his own free will.
  - iv. This means that in Eternity Past his divine sovereignty was willing to redeem mankind by his going to the cross.
  - v. Part of the Divine Decree is the record of the sovereign decision of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Eternity Past to go to the cross for us LONG before we even existed.
  - vi. Knowing what we would be seeing us under Spiritual Death he was still willing to go to the cross for us.
  - vii. This means that in time his human volition had to line up and coincide with his divine sovereignty and in his human volition he was also willing to endure the cross.
  - viii. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was obedient to the Plan of God the Father in his sovereignty and in his human volition. **Luke 22:42, Rom 5:19, Phil 2:8**
- E. The doctrine of redemption was taught in the Old Testament Scripture by means of animal blood from animal sacrifices **Heb 9:22**
  1. Salvation forgiveness and the portrayal of redemption in the Old Testament Scripture was by animal sacrifice.
  2. The Old Testament Scripture understood redemption and applied it **Job 19:25-26** this expresses the doctrines of redemption and resurrection.
- F. The blood of Christ is the ransom money or purchase price of redemption **Eph 1:7, Col 1:14, 1Pet 1:18-19**
  1. The blood of Christ is an analogy to the blood sacrifices of the Old Testament Scripture which depicted salvation resulting from the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross when he was judged for our sins.
  2. The Blood of Christ mechanically **2Cor 5:21, 1Pet 2:24**
- G. It is the soul of the believer which is redeemed in salvation.
  1. There is a doctrine of redemption of the body but this is not related to salvation it has to do with resurrection.
  2. It is the soul of the believer which is redeemed in salvation. **Ps 34:22**
- H. Redemption removes the condemnation of the Mosaic Law. **Gal 3:13 (Deut 21:23), Gal 3:10 (Hab 2:4)**
- I. Therefore the results of redemption include:
  1. Deliverance from the curse of the law **Gal 3:13, 4:4-6**
  2. Cancellation or forgiveness of sin **Is 44:22, Eph 1:7, Col 1:14, Heb 9:15**
  3. The basis for Justification **Rom 3:24**
  4. The basis for sanctification **Eph 5:25-27**
  5. The basis for eternal inheritance of every believer **Heb 9:15**

6. The basis for the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in the Angelic Conflict, **Col 2:14-15, Heb 2:14-15**
7. Redemption Of the soul in salvation leads to redemption of the body in resurrection. **Eph 1:14**
8. Redemption of the body is the ultimate or Phase III Status Quo of the Royal Family of God in eternity, **Rom 8:23, Eph 4:30**

J. Redemption is related to the mediatorship of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ:

**1Tim 2:5-6, Heb 9:14-15**

1. The Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was for the purpose of redemption of transgressions of mankind.

II. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ gave himself as a redemption ransom for all mankind in order that God the Father's testimony could be given in his own times or dispensations

A. The accusative absolute followed by the 2 locatives of sphere are tantamount to an anacaluthen.

1. This makes the phrase "A testimony in his own times" totally independent of the rest of the paragraph in the context.
2. This means the redemptive work of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ plus his mediatorship is the testimony of God the Father with regard to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in the father's own time.
3. The Definitive article refers to God the Father the author of the plan NOT God the Son the executor, here the mediator between God and man.
4. The plural of "Kairon" refers to epochs of time or dispensations in which God the Father testifies regarding God the Son.
5. This anacaluthen anticipates Paul's statement of his authority in the Church Age the dispensation of the Royal Family of God.
6. Many pastors do not understand grammar especially the Greek and they cannot handle this type of passage and the whole thing revolves around the anacaluthen a part of English grammar.
7. An anacaluthen is a means by which you can take one phrase or sentence or clause and divorce it grammatically from the context and use it for an explanation for the entire paragraph.
8. There are passages in Hebrews which require one to be able to recognize the existence of the anacaluthen in order to be able to interpret the passage at all and this is the case here.

B. This tells us that if you as a believer or unbeliever do not know the difference between the Age of Israel and the Church Age then you have failed to accept the fathers testimony with regard to God the Son.

1. This is the dispensation in which God the Father gives testimony with regard to who and what Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is.
2. The uniqueness of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Hypostatic Union
3. The virgin conception and birth
4. The incarnation of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ
5. The Substitutionary Spiritual Death of the cross
6. The resurrection, ascension and session.
7. These things occurred in a previous dispensation to the Church Age and God the Father cut off that dispensation stopping it to call out the Royal Family of God for the battlefield royalty of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, this to give testimony to who and what Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is.

8. This Church Age is the age of the testimony of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.
9. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was alone in Resurrection Body seated with God the Father and God the Father stopped the Age of Israel and inserted the Church Age to give testimony to Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and this testimony is the Royal Family of God.
10. This is the age of the Royal Family of God and every believer in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in the Church Age is ROYALTY.
11. In the whole of the Old Testament Scripture the believer in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was Family of God.
12. This puts us in the position were we can recognize that our life is IMPORTANT and what we do today and every day with regard to Bible Doctrine is the most important thing in life.
13. Our service or works are not the issue but attitude toward Bible Doctrine is what is truly essential.
14. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ is seated at the right hand of God the Father and is ROYALTY and will have a Royal Family completed and then there will be the rapture of the church.
15. If you are not influenced by Bible Doctrine but become reversionistic and are influenced by evil this is why God must administer Divine Discipline while Satan tries to offset the Divine Discipline with pseudo prosperity.
16. God will take you down and take this pseudo prosperity from you and make you miserable and take you our under the Sin Unto Death where you will be transferred to heaven and face to face with the Lord but you will have a miserable time getting there.
17. We must as Royal Family of God understand why we are here and what life is all about and if we fail in this understanding we will find ourselves in blind arrogance.

### III. Paul's Authority:

- A. It is based on the fact that he understands the Royal Family of God and how it is to function.
- B. Doctrine of the Uniqueness of the Church Age:
  1. The uniqueness of the Church Age is based on the uniqueness of the person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in the previous age v6 Anacaluthen
    - i. The uniqueness of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ culminates in his strategic victory of the Angelic Conflict and the Church Age by his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross, his resurrection, ascension, and session.
    - ii. From this strategic victory comes the break of one dispensation, the beginning of a new dispensation, and the calling out of the Royal Family of God.
    - iii. Believers in the Church Age are different than believers in any other dispensation we being Royal Family of God based on the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.
  2. Every believer in the Church Age is Royal Family of God, Royal Priesthood and lives in the Holy of Holies or palace forever.
    - i. Jews could not enter the holy of Holies except the Levitical priest who had to carry the proper animal blood from the proper sacrifice,

- wearing the proper garments and in the proper way sprinkle the blood on the mercy seat.
- ii. We however live in the holy of holies and are Royal Family of God forever, and we must know how we get there, ie through Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and positional sanctification.
  - iii. As Royal Family of God being in union with Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ we share all he has and is and inherit his position as well.
3. As a sign of royalty every believer has the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit in his body.
    - i. This is unique to the Church Age.
    - ii. This is not the Filling of God the Holy Spirit which is God the Holy Spirit controlling our soul.
    - iii. Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit is God the Holy Spirit withing our body
    - iv. We will always have the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit no matter our Status Quo.
    - v. This is not the issue but the issue is whether God the Holy Spirit controls the soul or NOT.
  4. As a sign of royalty every believer is indwelt by God the Son and this never occurred in all of Human History.
  5. We have a new contract the NEW COVENANT which authorizes the royal priesthood and every believer is Royal Family of God and Royal Priest forever.
  6. The Royal Family of God has a completed canon of scripture and all our instructions and revelation are in writing.
    - i. There is No extra biblical revelation in the Church Age, NO
      - a. Dreams
      - b. Visions
      - c. Trances
      - d. Voices
    - ii. We have a new communicator of Bible Doctrine in the Pastor Teacher and a new classroom in the Local Church.
  7. The believer does not live under the Mosaic Law but the new contract which abrogates and supersedes the Mosaic Law thus giving us a clearly defined grace way of life.
  8. The objectivity of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is now constructed through the Edification Complex of the Soul formed from Metabolized Bible Doctrine rather than the shadows of the Old Testament Scripture.
    - i. No working witnessing, using personal talents for God will ever glorify God nor will it ever help build the Edification Complex of the Soul.
  9. Every member of the Royal Family of God is in full time Christian service.
    - i. NO Laymen
    - ii. All are Ambassadors for Christ personally representing him in this dispensation

10. The strategic victory of the Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and the interruption of the Age of Israel leads to the intensification of the Angelic Conflict in this the Church Age.
  - i. The tribulation Rev 6:1-19 is NOT the intensification of the Angelic Conflict.
  - ii. The tribulation is a continuation and conclusion of the Jewish Age of Israel and is not nearly as rough nor intense on believers as the Church Age NOW.
  - iii. This is the age of believer going out as flaky believers.
- C. Preacher == (gr) Keruxz == royal herald, close to the king representing the king in a parlay and is a representative of the king and communicates the king's policy.
  1. This is not some town crier but highest royalty next to the king speaking for the king giving the King's policy.
  2. Paul was a preacher or herald of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ but also as apostle has the highest authority in the Spiritual Life being absolute dictator.
- D. Timothy is such a wimp that he has forgotten the authority of Paul to take charge of the Ephesian complex.
  1. He is such a numb skull and baby and so easily pushed around he has lost track of the apostolic authority of Paul.
  2. Authority is authority, a Pastor Teacher might be your best friend but if for some reason he must use his authority you are not his friend but another member of the congregation about to be sliced to ribbons.
  3. When this type of authority is given it must be used in total fairness and total justice therefore in any relationship when a pastor speaks as a pastor there are no friends just those who are right and those who are wrong.
  4. The Pastor Teacher must go by facts only never considering who is on which side of the facts.
  - 5.

**1Tim 2:6**

v6: Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, Who having given himself in exchange as a redemptive ransom from the slave market of sin, a substitute on behalf of everyone His, God the Father's, testimony to be given in his own times or dispensations, OR at the proper time of Gospel Hearing.

**Lesson #26      Series # 467      1Tim 2:7**

- I. Freedom through military victory:
  - A. Rear Admiral Denton 1973 Vietnam POW returned
  - B. Cpt James A Sprayberry, 7<sup>th</sup> Cav, 1<sup>st</sup> Calvary Division, Armor, 25 April 1968 D Troop 5 Battalion, Vietnam
- II. Concept of (gr) Didaskalos
  - A. The public assembly of the local church is the classroom of the Royal Family of God for this dispensation requiring a Pastor Teacher and congregation as students without portfolio.
  - B. The Pastor Teacher must have total authority and the proper spiritual gift dedication to study and teach, moral courage and dedication to honesty.
  - C. In the public assembly of the local church we have this concept of (gr) Didaskalos as Pastor Teacher or guardian and the Pastor Teacher is known by the word (gr) episkapos meaning overseer or guarding.
    1. In keeping with the principle of privacy of the Royal Family of God the believer assembles with others under the title of (gr) mathetes == to be a disciple or student without portfolio.

2. The one who faces this person is called (gr) didaskalos == a communicator to a GROUP never to one person always to a group of (gr) mathetes, “where 2 or more are gathered in my name”
- D. Therefore only in public communication of Bible Doctrine in the setting of the classroom of the local church does the Royal Family of God have the needed privacy for learning Bible Doctrine.
1. We assemble as a group and this gives privacy since there never is a one on one teaching situation.
  2. It is a matter of privacy for the believer to decide what he will do with the doctrine presented by the Pastor Teacher who has responsibility for communication of the doctrine but NO responsibility to force the believer to live up to the standards of doctrine or apply it.
  3. This is privacy for intake of Bible Doctrine.
  4. Thus public communication of Bible Doctrine in the local church gives the believer privacy for learning Bible Doctrine and for personal application and fulfilling the principle of living life as unto the lord, Col 3:16-17
- E. Personal time with an individual is an intrusion on the privacy and freedom of this individual.
1. It becomes a system of dictatorship through coercion, bullying or salesmanship or all of these.
  2. This concept of personal time violates the right of the believer to live life as unto the lord and becomes a system of personality pressure, pseudo spirituality and legalism and forcing on the believer a system of legalistic evil reversionistic gimmicks.
  3. No believer ever grows up apart from the function of didaskalos which means he is not a coach or training expert nor salesman and teaches ONLY Bible Doctrine and what they do with it is based on their volition.
  4. It is not the responsibility of the Pastor Teacher to counsel and if you take in Bible Doctrine as you should you will never need counseling.
  5. The Pastor Teacher is not a lonely hearts club director and not a social pimp finding friends for lonely people.
- F. Primarily the Pastor Teacher is a teacher, policy maker, a super student of Bible Doctrine and administrator in that he finds men who have the gift of administration as deacons and other leaders of the local church.
1. He must be able to remove poor administrators and substitute good ones.
  2. He is spiritual leader of the local church as well.
  3. He must accomplish these without intrusion into the privacy of anyone in the congregation.
  4. The only exception is when he must judge a case in the congregation and must do so only based on facts.
- G. The Pastor Teacher must have absolute authority in teaching Bible Doctrine and this is derived from the verb (gr) didasko == to teach with authority and confidence in monologue form.
- H. The objectives of Didaskalos and his teaching:
1. To construct the inner altar of the soul in the Royal Family of God priesthood.
    - i. There must be an altar before you can serve the lord, and the altar is composed of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - ii. There is no benefit from being involved in service organizations.
    - iii. The only way to build an altar in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is through consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine from your own right Pastor Teacher.
  2. To lead the believer to the tactical victory of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace
  3. To maintain Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace called equipping the believer with the full armor from God, Eph 6.

4. To challenge the Royal Family of God to pick up the cross and follow Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception the primary function of the believer in the Church Age.
- I. His Jewish background was so great that he had the greatest ability to communicate to the whole world the Mystery Doctrine of the Church Age.
  - J. Principles:
    1. The highest spiritual authority in the Church Age is derived from the Spiritual gift of Apostle or Pastor Teacher.
    2. This gift carries the authority to teach Bible Doctrine rule the local church and discipline the Royal Family of God in the local church.
      - i. This is the problem with Timothy who had no moral courage to rule or discipline and did not maintain any authority and was bullied by everyone in the congregation.
    3. Paul has this authority as an apostle and timothy has this same authority as Pastor Teacher in Ephesus.
    4. Timothy has been reluctant to use this authority and Paul is telling him to GET WITH IT.
- III. 2<sup>nd</sup> command to prayer: pray for Laws of Divine Establishment understanding by weak politicians and ignorant people and those who cater to people weaker than they are.
    - A. An elected official is elected to use his judgment but today it is always “what do the people want” and the fact is that the people don’t know at all what they want.
      1. If the people knew what they wanted they would not need to elect a representatives.
      2. Our constitution was written as a republic and in our elections we elect saying we vote for a person because he has good judgment and I don’t know what we should be doing but this guy has good judgment and he will study the situation and will come up with a correct policy and answer.
      3. We are to elect a person with good judgment not to do what I want done but who knows what is going on and is best for the nation.
      4. You elect a person because they have wisdom to do a good job in their office.
    - B. We must pray for our elected representatives, judges, Law Enforcement Officers, court rooms, legislators, the whole system of government, local regional and national up to the president.
    - C. It is interesting to see that this statement in v8 indicates that women are not supposed to VOTE and are not supposed to Pray for Government or the Laws of Divine Establishment functions.
      1. No Boys, No Girls, No Women Only True MEN who should lead the way in prayer instead of women.
      2. You demonstrate manliness in PRAYER not in sex or muscle development and manliness is an attitude of soul and is demonstrated clearly in your power of prayer.
      3. To the extent you are weak in prayer you are a wimp.
      4. The problem here for timothy is that the men are not running anything especially NOT Timothy but the women are running the whole show and Paul tells him to take a strong drink and go straighten out the women.
    - D. In every congregation of the Royal Family of God real men are commanded to lead the way in prayer.
      1. We are deficient in prayer because real men do not lead the prayer when they should.
      2. Men must lead in prayer and the woman is not supposed to know what to pray for until she gets instruction from her husband with regard to Laws of Divine Establishment concepts.
      3. Everyone should be praying for the military, police and someone must be telling them how to do it.
    - E. “Lifting Up Hands” == Intercession as Moses did to pray for establishment for the military and while his hands were up the Jews were winning and when they got tired and came down the Jews were losing and he had to have people hold up his hands.

1. You don't have to life hands up like Moses but this means INTERCESSORY PRAYER as a figure of speech and for LEADERSHIP in Intercessory prayer.
  2. This is a growing manly believer who is consistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine applying the Bible Doctrine in prayer.
  3. This is an advancing male believer or one in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in contrast to a male believer who is retrogressing into reversionism in blind arrogance.
  4. The reversionistic believer or one under the influence of evil is not effective in prayer in any case but only the believer advancing in the Spiritual Life close to or in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with a balance of residence in the soul who follows the colors to the high ground of Super Grace and has seized and holds a command post in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- F. Mental Attitude Sins of Anger as a Hindrance to prayer:
1. This is seen in the carnal, reversionistic or under the influence of evil believer.
    - i. It is antagonism of soul.
    - ii. It is irritation, exasperation, resentment and irrationality of SOUL.
    - iii. There is a difference between mental and emotional anger seen with (gr) Orge for mental anger and (gr) Thumos for emotional anger.
    - iv. As long as there is mental anger there is some rationality in it but by the time you reach emotional anger you have entered the psychopathic field.
  2. Anger results in Self Induced Misery Prov 22:8, and the person with Mental Attitude Sins anger always has Self Induced Misery.
  3. Anger produces chain sinning Heb 12:15, anger becomes the basis for many sins.
  4. Anger causes misery to others in the periphery Prov 21:19, 22:24, 25:24, 29;22 Amos 1;11
  5. Anger is related to another more permanent mental sin of Cruelty which becomes its manifestation Prov 27:4
  6. Anger is related to stupidity Eccl 7:9
  7. Anger is related to reversionism Eph 4:31, Col 3:8
  8. Anger frustrates prayer and hinders the ministry of intercession of the Royal Family of God 1Tim 2:8
  9. Mental Attitude Sins are antagonistic to prayer especially those which content with or oppose Bible Doctrine.

**1Tim 2:7**

v7: **Into which time or dispensation of the Church Age, I, Paul, have been in the past appointed by Grace, a royal herald, a representative of the king and closest to the king, an apostle with absolute dictatorial authority, (I am speaking true doctrine: I never lie), I am a teacher to the Gentiles in doctrine which is believed even truth.**

**1Tim 2:8**

v8: **Therefore I have at this moment made a command decision after proper deliberation, for the individual men with manly attitudes of the Royal Family of God as Royal Priests to pray in every place, lifting devout, pleasing to God hands of the believer in fellowship advancing in the Spiritual Life daily and applying Bible Doctrine to his prayer or mature male believers leading intercessory prayer as did Moses, without the Mental Attitude Sin of anger or reasoning's, opinions and thoughts in dispute with Bible Doctrine, a skeptical critical attitude toward Bible Doctrine therefore dissension from antagonism toward Bible Doctrine.**

**Lesson #27                      Series # 467                      1Tim 2:9**

- I. Book: "TV and National Defense, by Earnest Laffavor, Institute for American Strategy
  - A. This book details how the media applauds the efforts of our enemies in their strategic defense systems and how it puts down the efforts of the United States of America in war efforts in Vietnam and other places.
  - B. They show that the REAL news is never reported by our media and ONLY FAKE NEWS and I quote Mr. Trump here is what we hear from our media SINCE the Vietnam war in the late 1960's and here in this book detailed in the 1970's.



II. Orders from Headquarters:

**A. KEEP ON PRAYING FOR ESTABLISHMENT IN THIS NATION.**

1. Both men and women are to pray for the Laws of Divine Establishment in the nation but the MEN must take the leadership position
2. A Sign of manliness is a man who is a great prayer warrior.
3. Manliness is NOT muscle or macho functions or sex athletics but it is a man of soul and spiritual dynamics and who leads the way in prayer.
4. Manliness is gauged in terms of successful prayer and it is a function of the soul.

III. Ladies Introduction:

A. In the next paragraph v9-15 we have a dissertation on the greatest thing about the woman her inner beauty.

1. Every member of the Royal Family of God female should be beautiful
2. JUST as manliness for the male is found in the soul a WOMAN is beautiful because of what she is in her soul.

B. Women are responders and whatever a woman becomes as a result of RESPONDING is GOOD.

1. Response is a positive factor.
2. Loving, Aggressive, Animated, stimulated because she is responding and this is good.
3. The woman are NOT to stand around and wait for someone to speak to her or wait for something to come along for her to respond to.
4. Some of the best characteristics of a woman are her aggressive character points.
5. When a woman responds to a man with aggressiveness she is at her best.

C. Whatever a woman becomes as a result of REACTION is bad.

1. Reaction is a negative factor.
2. The woman is thus led into woman's lib, frustration and reactive ambition and all negative functions.
3. Response and reaction are in the soul and everything else about the woman is a result of that.

D. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was very tender and compassionate toward women and as a result they responded to him and learned maximum Bible Doctrine

1. This resulted in many of the greatest mature believers during his ministry being ladies.
2. You will rarely find a woman in scripture reacting to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ all for the most part responded to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
3. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was the most manly person ever to live and his manliness of soul was the area the women he contacted responded to.
4. Most men think it requires that they be horsey, and talk out of the corner of their mouth and give clipped orders etc but this is not manliness.
5. Manliness is an attitude of soul.
6. A perfect illustration of a Manly man is Robert E. Lee.

E. The response of women to Bible Doctrine is the basis for their being influenced by Bible Doctrine.

F. The illustration of this response is marriage or Category II Love.

1. The woman is most beautiful or animated when she is responding to the man she loves.
2. She is so occupied with the man she loves that other things in life become insignificant to and do not disturb her.
3. Her animation toward him and her warmth of love seems to bless all in her periphery.

G. A woman's occupation with her right man illustrates the believers Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ **Ps 37:4-5**

IV. Comments concentrated on Women:

A. Everyone at one time thinks he is an expert on women even in Latin:

1. A woman when thinking by herself is always thinking Mischief.
2. I know the nature of women when you request they refuse when you forbid they are sure to do it.

3. There are few disputes in life which may not when traced be found to originate with the woman.
4. Women never stop making an issue of self.
5. Arguing with some people are like arguing with a woman, if you lose you lose if you win you lose.
6. A woman worries about the future until she gets a husband but the man never worries about the future until he gets a wife.
7. A man is never so weak than when some woman is telling him how strong he is.
8. When she talks it is not a conversation it is a filibuster.
9. A man is young if a woman can make him happy or unhappy, a man is middle aged if a woman can make him happy but no longer unhappy, a man is old if a woman can make him neither happy nor unhappy.
10. She was one of those women who had gender but not sex.

B. These comments although humorous but not ever valid for the female member of the Royal Family of God who is totally involved with Bible Doctrine.

#### V. Principles in The Study of Women:

- A. Feminine Pulchritude v9
- B. Feminine Royalty v10
- C. Parenthesis v11-15A
  1. Woman in Church v11-12
  2. Woman in Creation v13
  3. Woman in the Fall v14
  4. Woman in metamorphism v15a
- D. Feminine Godliness v15b

#### VI. Feminine Pulchritude:

- A. No woman can have inner beauty while involved with Mental Attitude Sins of any kind especially dissension thinking
- B. This paragraph starts from the outside of the Ladies:
  1. They should always be well dressed (Not necessarily expensively dressed) and clean and hygienically clean as it is much more difficult for the woman to be clean than the man.
  2. This should be a normal function of the Royal Family of God female and she should be dressed as tastefully as possible in her clothing and this is a command.
  3. The women who were bullying timothy were poorly dressed and were bullying in attitude but UGLY in their outward appearance being somewhat ascetic.
  4. The christian women in Ephesus were to do the action and this infers that all female members of the Royal Family of God.
  5. This command follows up on the previous verse command to pray without Mental Attitude Sins.
- C. Summary:
  1. The first attack on the woman in the garden dramatized the importance of the soul of the woman.
  2. It is not the appearance of the woman which counts but the condition of her soul.
    - i. The first woman however did not have any clothing or it was a translucent light system covering her.
  3. Man is never commanded to be beautiful, (gr) Kosmeo is referring only to women and exterior beauty where the woman is to make the most of what she has.
    - i. Unattractive features should be covered while attractive features should be emphasized.
  4. All christian women can be beautiful.
    - i. This does not mean christian women are totally a product of beauty without imperfections but it does mean that all christian women can be beautiful.

5. Because of reversionism and the influence of evil the modern emphasis for the woman is placed on overt beauty gimmicks and “sex appeal”.
6. Clothing does not make the woman but the woman with inner beauty makes the clothing.
7. Inner beauty refers to the condition of the woman’s soul
8. This verse anticipates the true emphasis of feminine pulchritude as being the beauty of the woman’s soul.
  - i. When a woman has a beautiful soul with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul she knows how to clothe herself and all mature believer females know how to cover her body in an attractive way.
  - ii. There is a relationship between a sloppy Spiritual Life and a sloppy appearance for the woman.
  - iii. There is a relationship between psychosis and how a woman neglects herself.

D. Application and Anticipation:

1. If a woman is commanded to make herself beautiful it immediately discounts the fact that some are born beautiful.
  - i. No newborn babies are ever beautiful.
  - ii. A person must be MATURE to be beautiful and there is no such thing as a woman born beautiful.
  - iii. A woman with a mature body and soul can always be beautiful and the only ugly women are those who think they are ugly and have Mental Attitude Sins and hangups in the soul and have legalism in the soul with influence of evil in the soul and who are reversionistic in the soul.
  - iv. There never was any such thing as a woman who is grace oriented which only comes from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - v. Between 21 and 30 years the woman will emerge from the cocoon of childhood where they went through ugly stages and turn out alright provided their soul is alright.
  - vi. There will not be overeating, common sense and knowledge of how to make a proper appearance.
2. While some women have better or more attractive features or symmetry than others these HUMAN standards of beauty are relative to the society and rejected by the word of God as not the true standards of beauty and merely accoutrements of beauty.
  - i. Beware women that what you try to do to improve your appearance does not result from a SOUL KINK.
  - ii. Make sure all your beauty improvements outside on the body are not a result of a soul kink.
3. The male viewpoint is based on the fact that men LOVE women and love to have them around and life would be terrible without women.
  - i. Having only men around anywhere is terrible and it is great to have women around and this beats flowers every day.
  - ii. Certain men like certain features and specialize in these areas when they think of a woman and comment on them they concentrate on these specific areas.
  - iii. The fact that you are not universally regarded as a raving beauty should be a source of great thanksgiving in the soul.
  - iv. Every woman must know that when the right man comes along he will like you the way you are and like the house because of what is in the house, the soul.
  - v. There is no unanimous opinion among men about what makes a woman beautiful.
  - vi. The ladies should never be influenced by ideas that mean like breasts or legs or butts etc.
4. The woman’s face and body are not her beauty or lack of beauty.

- i. The issue in feminine beauty is the soul and the body will manifest what is in the soul.
  - ii. With Grace Orientation in the soul there will be poise and whatever is lacking in symmetry of body poise of soul and some ingenuity of dress will take care of the whole thing.
  - iii. There is no such thing as the perfect female body since every one has different standards both men and women and therefore whose standards are you going to accept.
  - iv. The ladies must accept no one's standards for their own beauty but must get a maximum of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which will give an inner beauty which will give the common sense and ingenuity to properly decorate your body.
  - v. The ladies must think of their body as a house and the same concepts of decoration related to a home must be considered when decorating the body.
  - vi. The Ladies Home is her body and her soul lives in her body.
  - vii. The Scale of Values will change about decoration in the home from time to time and it also will change about decoration in cosmetics and dress.
  - viii. As a woman matures her Scale of Values changes and therefore by the time she is 30 she should pretty well know how to dress.
5. This verse emphasizes the fact that what women wear on the body does not constitute her real beauty but it is what the woman possesses in her soul which is her real beauty.
- i. The overt things of clothing, jewelry, cosmetics are accoutrements of beauty ONLY.
  - ii. This is the reason for this command decision for the women in Ephesus to stop neglecting how they dress.
  - iii. This crowd of women neglected their dress and were simply enjoying bullying timothy.
6. What women wear on the outside is not nearly as important as what is on the inside but when what they have on the inside is good what they wear outside is to match it.
7. Parallel passage: 1Pet 3:1-6 compared with 1Tim 2:9-15 tells us that the woman must be a well dressed as possible compatible with her income and many other things.
- i. The bible is not opposed to a woman making herself look her very best and being elegant and beautiful to observe.
  - ii. There is no excuse for any woman being sloppy even a pregnant woman and sloppiness is not spirituality
  - iii. As a matter of privacy we want to appreciate the woman decorated not unpainted.
  - iv. These 2 passages are not in any way opposed to wearing nice clothing, good styling in clothing or elegance and good taste in clothing for christian women,
  - v. They are not opposed to good grooming, style, neatness or poise and good posture.
  - vi. These are not against OVERT charm but they both say that overt charm is meaningless without inner beauty.
  - vii. Overt charm becomes false and empty without inner beauty.
  - viii. It is the inner beauty of the royal priesthood with a soul clothed with Metabolized Bible Doctrine which makes the woman's elegance and good taste, neatness poise and posture so attractive.
8. Without the inner beauty of Super Grace the best of exteriors becomes useless.
- i. The passages do not oppose good exteriors but merely says they are useless without the inner beauty from Metabolized Bible Doctrine.
9. Therefore the female member of the Royal Family of God cannot afford to be dressed in the filthy rags of reversionism nor to have her soul influenced by EVIL.

### 1Pet 3:1-6

- v1: Likewise you wives, be submissive to your husbands, so that some, though they do not obey the word, may be won without a word by the behavior of their wives,  
v2: when they see your reverent and chaste behavior.  
v3: Let not yours be the outward adorning with braiding of hair, decoration of gold, and wearing of fine clothing,  
v4: but let it be the hidden person of the heart with the imperishable jewel of a gentle and quiet spirit, which in God's sight is very precious.  
v5: For in this way (Protocol) in former times, holy women also who had confidence in God (MV) used to adorn or dress themselves with virtue, being submissive to their own husbands,  
v6: Just as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord.

#### E. Respectable Clothing:

1. Sometimes ladies often emphasize in their clothing what they think a man likes.
  - i. This may be an over display of an opulent bosom or display some portion of the anatomy which they think appeals.
2. This means that you don't have to uncover any anatomy for a male or anyone else to know what your best physical symmetry attributes are
  - i. The implication is that whatever your weakness of symmetry is cover it
  - ii. Whatever your strengths of symmetry are show by what you wear it but DON'T UNCOVER IT to show it by what you don't wear.
  - iii. Clothing should be designed to allow you to look absolutely elegant and strikingly beautiful and also be respectably dressed.
  - iv. You don't have to look like Rebecca of Sunny brook farm and you can look like a Fem Fatale and still be respectably dressed.
  - v. There is an answer to every and any distortion that the house of the woman may have and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul makes the biggest difference.

#### F. Principles:

1. Since the woman is a responder her capacity for love is related to her respect for the object of her love.
  - i. A woman should dress to please her man.
2. No woman can truly love a man whom she does not respect.
  - i. There may be animal attraction but this is NOT love.
3. A woman must not confuse feeling sorry for or having sympathy for a man with LOVE.
  - i. All women are sympathetic persons and this is a part of being a mother.
  - ii. Compassion and sympathy for a child is not LOVE.
  - iii. Many men fight with their LOVE and want them back and in order to do so hurt themselves in some way to gain their sympathy.
  - iv. This is emotion not love and love must be based on respect.
4. Somewhere in the garden the original woman began her ego trip when she lost respect for Adam and his authority over her.
  - i. Before she fell she was already bored with Adam and was on an ego trip and lost respect for her authority, ADAM.
5. This started her with social intercourse and unfaithfulness with SATAN.
  - i. She began by talking with Satan who approached her in the body of the serpent.
6. Ishah's social unfaithfulness disregarding the authority of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ her bible teacher and her husband had incredible repercussions in her fall.
  - i. Her social unfaithfulness disregarding the authority of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ resulted in her disregarding Bible Doctrine and she began to sleep in bible study class.
  - ii. Then she did not understand certain things in her conversation with Satan.
7. Ishah's social unfaithfulness disregarded the authority of Adam her right man and thus rejected 2 authorities over her.

8. Now she must recover from consequences of the fall and the influence of evil in Satan's policy.
  - i. Her recovery must be by means of the way she left and she must develop again respect for Bible Doctrine in the spiritual realm and for her Right Man in the social realm.
  - ii. In her recovery she must be away from the influence of evil and reversionism and must have respect for Bible Doctrine leading to respect for the Lord and thus giving her capacity for the other categories of love in this life.
9. The woman failed when she lost respect and recovers when she regains respect from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in her Stream of Consciousness of the Soul giving her inner beauty.
  - i. She recovers her respect and perspective from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

**Lesson #28      Series # 467      1Tim 2:9**

- I. Women:
  - A. Review all of #27
  - B. Principles:
    1. Since the woman is designed to be a responder therefore she must be under well defined authority before her inner beauty of soul can be properly developed.
      - i. All women must recover from any ridicule which they undergo when growing up and going through their awkward stages of development
      - ii. If you don't go through any of these THIS is abnormal.
      - iii. The ridicule should never leaven any lasting scars in the life of the woman.
      - iv. The woman can have the most magnificent beauty imaginable when it comes from the soul.
    2. This authority begins at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God where there must be a realization that Bible Doctrine is more important than any other thing in life.
      - i. Then you find your first human authority that being your right Pastor Teacher who will be a male authority.
        - a. There NEVER are authorized by the bible any woman as pastor.
    3. All women are stubborn and never want to give up any cherished concepts of their past life.
      - i. The right Pastor Teacher is the final authority in spiritual things and accepting this first authority is the beginning of inner beauty.
    4. Inner beauty begins with response to Authority.
      - i. The woman fell through rejection of authority the road back into the Spiritual Life is through accepting authority.
      - ii. Once a woman accepts her right Pastor Teacher her life should be relatively simple.
      - iii. All relationships will thus be related to concepts of Bible Doctrine and her inner beauty will be developed from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in her Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
      - iv. All inner beauty manifests itself in over beauty.
      - v. Because she starts with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul she will not make the mistakes that many other women make in life since all her thoughts, decisions, and actions are based on Bible Doctrine.
      - vi. The secret to the inner beauty in the woman is her consistent respect for her right Pastor Teacher, consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, establishing the balance of residency

in the soul creating the command post of the soul and building the Edification Complex of the Soul.

5. When the woman starts with what is overt to determine her beauty and neglects the inner beauty of the soul she will be stupid and attractive only to those who are more stupid than she is.
  - i. This destroys female beauty faster than anything.
  - ii. The woman who thinks she is smarter than any other person she is around including her man she has canceled out any possibility of inner beauty.
  - iii. No woman is ever beautiful when she has a relationship with a man and thinks she is smarter than that man.**
  - iv. Any time a woman can fool or deceive a man she has lost the most important thing in her soul the inner beauty.**
  - v. Women who think they are smart and want liberation and think there is no man smarter than they are have an ugliness of soul which will transfer to the face which will transfer to the body and she will be UGLY and STUPID.
  - vi. There is no such thing as a woman smarter than all men and when a woman finds her right man she will find a man smarter than she is and when she gets over the shock of this she will bask in the love for him and from him.
  - vii. She must realize this and learn to relax.
- C. The negative here does not prohibit the use of fancy hair arrangements, high fashioned clothing or expensive jewelry etc.
  1. The passage does emphasize that overt dress MUST NOT be expressed to the exclusion of inner beauty.
  2. The fashion used by any lady must never de-emphasize the condition of the soul and its inner beauty.
  3. There is nothing wrong with high fashion or fancy hair styling or simply arranging the hair styling which emphasizes the face but the point is it is the inner beauty of the soul from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which is important.
  4. There is good and bad taste in the use of cosmetics or hair styling or clothing or jewelry etc.
  5. The key is to use JUDGMENT in adorning oneself as a lady.
  6. When a woman gets around to wearing jewelry she must wear feminine things complimentary to the woman and the best are Gold and Pearls and some other precious stones.
  7. EMPHASIS of the woman must be on the soul which is the area of true beauty of the woman.
- D. Summary:
  1. This verse begins with an emphasis on the woman's inner beauty in contrast to her overt grooming and appearance.
    - i. They are first in contrast and then the verse demonstrates how these can complement each other.
    - ii. Dress and Overt appearance should always compliment the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  2. Overt grooming and appearance are very important in the dress of a woman but not nearly as important as the inner beauty of her soul.
    - i. Don't mix up tradition and what is said in the bible.
    - ii. Don't be victimized by untrue preaching and how a woman dresses must be compatible with the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
    - iii. The Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the issue NOT the overt style.

- iv. If Metabolized Bible Doctrine is emphasized there will be NO problems with overt dress and grooming.
- 3. The negative 'me' here does not prohibit elegance nor expensive clothing or jewelry but it demands that emphasis be on the Metabolized Bible Doctrine resulting in inner beauty.
- 4. Therefore the importance of the woman in being controlled by Bible Doctrine rather than EVIL.

#### Heb 5:13-14

- 5. Clothes do not make the woman but the woman in Super Grace makes the clothes.
  - i. Personal concepts must be divorced from principles of the bible.
- 6. The finest appearance and apparel are ruined by a soul in reversionism or under the influence of evil.
- 7. The soul possessed of evil, Mental Attitude Sins, guilt complex or any pettiness is an UGLY Soul whether in male or female and there is no fashion or manner or dress or jewelry, or styling or makeup no matter how attractive which can offset this and cover a woman's ugly soul.
  - i. Satan has not ever found to yet a disguise for an ugly soul.
  - ii. A woman with the best features in womanhood with an ugly soul is UGLY.
- 8. The soul under the principle of the balance of residency of Filling of God the Holy Spirit and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine is the source of real beauty and the inner beauty of the woman.
- 9. Spiritual Pulchritude is far superior to physical pulchritude.
  - i. Grace beauty is far more important and impressive than inherent or cultivated physical beauty.
- 10. The reflected glory of God is far greater than the narcissistic glamour of cosmetic consimety ie being skillfully put together.

#### II. The pulchritude of royalty v10:

- A. It is very important for a woman to realize the importance of her soul and when she comes to understand what God created in her then she comes to realize that her soul is most important.
  - 1. The total emphasis must be on her soul and must focus on consistency in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and this will result in inner beauty which will manifest itself overtly.
- B. It is very important for every woman to know that at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God she is instantly promised blessing.
  - 1. This is without regard to her physical appearance and it is for her gender ONLY.
  - 2. When a women is born into this world they are inherently promised blessing.
  - 3. This blessing potential can become cursing depending on what occurs in the female's soul.
  - 4. The woman is designed for blessing from God.
  - 5. Once a woman achieves Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the blessing for which she was born physically is intensified.
  - 6. Being regenerated intensifies the blessing for the woman.
  - 7. The inner beauty of the female believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is part of the divine decree and is related to Metabolized Bible Doctrine in her Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - 8. God guarantees that every female child born into this world who reaches Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God will have maximum blessing and the secret to getting it is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
  - 9. This is the importance of the woman finding and recognizing her right Bible Doctrine and sticking with his teaching.
  - 10. This is often why women are better than men when it comes to consistency in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
  - 11. Women instinctively realize that Bible Doctrine is related to their blessing in life.



12. The woman cannot be beautiful nor can she be happy apart from Bible Doctrine.
- C. Godliness (gr) theosebeia == to worship, stand in awe of, to reverence, to be in Super Grace and under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and is s synonym for balance of residence in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- D. Intrinsic Good accomplishments refer to the daily function of the believer under Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the Grace Apparatus for Perception as a means of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
  1. This means being influenced by Bible Doctrine rather than by evil.
  2. It refers here to the multiplicity of times that a woman must expose herself to bible teaching to saturate her soul with Bible Doctrine.
  3. This is following the colors to the high ground of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- E. The Unbeliever woman can also have some degree of inner beauty if:
  1. She follows the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment.
  2. She is free from Mental Attitude Sins.
  3. This inner beauty is limited to these things.
  4. Therefore the unbeliever woman cannot ever attain the magnificent beauty which belongs to the Royal Family of God.

**1Tim 2:9**

**v9:** Likewise, in the same manner as v8 where women should also pray especially for Establishment in the nation and be free from Mental Attitude Sins, I have made another command decision, that Women should adorn, decorate, **MAKE themselves beautiful or attractive by means of respectable well arranged clothing, well coordinated dress, proper cosmetics for overt beauty, attractiveness, etc, associated with sanity of mind and respect for authority, modesty, inner poise of soul and inner beauty including reasonableness, mental soundness, good judgment from common sense, clear thinking, self control, objectivity, not with emphasis on high fashion, hair styling, golden jewelry or pearls, or expensive clothes to the exclusion of inner beauty development.**

**1Tim 2:10**

**v10:** But what becomes fitting, a protocol, an advantage, for a woman who is being promised blessing and a God respecting Super Grace maturity status, through good of intrinsic value good accomplishments from consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, (execution of the Protocol Plan of God as per the Equation of Hope).

**Lesson #29**

**Series # 467**

**1Tim 2:11**

- I. Principles:
  - A. Since the secret to the woman's inner beauty is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul it becomes necessary for every female of the Royal Family of God to expose self to consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and bible teaching.
  - B. The female believer must find her right Pastor Teacher and learn Bible Doctrine under his ministry.
- II. The great Parenthesis v11-15a:
  - A. The woman in church v11-12
    1. One of the greatest weaknesses in the female is the tendency toward chatting constantly
    2. The women who do the most talking or passing notes are inclined to no inner beauty.
    3. Bible Class is not a place to talk or right notes but to listen to and learn Bible Doctrine so the female might grow in grace and have inner beauty.
    4. This is the design of the woman in the Human Race.
  - B. At this point beginning the parenthesis in which the woman is the EXCLUSIVE subject.
    1. The extent of the parenthesis is an interruption of the sentence begun in v10 which will be completed in v15b.
    2. The closing part of v10 is found in v15b which defines the intrinsic good accomplishment in terms of continued intake of Bible Doctrine.
    3. Therefore the intrinsic good accomplishments in v10 will be defined further in v15.
  - C. The woman can be the most wonderful thing to be around or the most painful thing depending on what is in her Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

1. She can have an active response in life or a passive one.
  - i. Active response explains the beauty of her aggressiveness in LOVE.
  - ii. This is distorted into something non feminine when she reacts in her aggressiveness rather than responding.
  - iii. This is HORSEY women.
  - iv. Reactions can be in the form of mental, verbal or overt sins.
2. V11 is the means of putting the woman in her right place.
3. It is not impossible for the woman to learn but it is more difficult because the woman was the first arrogant person in the Human Race and arrogant people are not teachable.
  - i. The most arrogant person in the human race was Ishah in the fall.
  - ii. Today the woman want sweetness and light and special vocabulary avoiding vulgarity.
  - iii. Women are just not good learners and 90% of the talking in a church service is from women.
  - iv. You cannot learn while you are talking and this can occur without moving the lips but just by functions in the soul.
  - v. If you have Mental Attitude resentment you cannot learn.
  - vi. Ladies will never grow up until they engage in Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and will never have inner beauty without it as well.
  - vii. There must be beauty of soul to accompany the external beauty of body and face in the woman and this takes Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
4. Everyone learns in silence but the ladies are commanded to learn in silence.
  - i. Ladies don't like to be talked down to and in their arrogance always think what they are thinking is extremely important.
5. Women will learn in several ways:
  - i. From experts when she finally decides he really is an expert.
  - ii. From a man whom she respects to the utmost
  - iii. From a great teacher
  - iv. When it comes to teaching the woman is more discerning than the man except where personality enters into it.
  - v. Women often mistake sweet talking men for spiritual giants.
  - vi. Attitude of the woman to Bible Doctrine as taught from the pulpit determines whether she is a reactor or responder.
  - vii. When a woman becomes subjectively involved in any area she has a very difficult time accepting contradictory teaching on the subject.
  - viii. Being emotionally involved they see implications to these things but may not like the facts.
  - ix. Arrogance about being smart wipes out the beauty of the woman and being smart as a woman is secondary and being beautiful inside is far more important.
  - x. When a woman has something in the soul which conflicts with what is taught by the bible and rejects what the bible says she is in for a terrible time in life.
6. In an area where you are inclined to have hangups you do not learn in silence.
  - i. Silence means NOT vocalizing but not whispering or passing notes and also not having Mental Attitude resistance to what is being taught.
  - ii. Loss of having an open mind, objectivity of the soul.
  - iii. NO believer can grow in the Spiritual Life apart from finding their right Pastor Teacher.
  - iv. Once identifying their right pastor many women switch pastors which have to do with their failure in some area of Bible Doctrine where they resist the authority of the Pastor Teacher in teaching.

- v. Once you identify your right Pastor Teacher you must then wade through your preconceived notions about things being taught and personality difficulties and get down to focus only on the subject matter.
- D. These ladies were not attending the bible classes of timothy and if they were they were not QUIETLY learning and were distractions and subjective.
- 1. All ladies must find their right Pastor Teacher and then settle down and get with his teaching.
  - 2. The learning of the ladies must be in a state of concentration without Mental Attitude Sins.
- E. Silence for the ladies LEARNING:
- 1. It is the response of interest good manners, concentration and respect for authority in the one teaching.
  - 2. No one can learn anything especially Bible Doctrine while talking and talking in church during bible teaching is MORE than poor manners, and also is reaction, thoughtlessness, arrogance to think what you are saying is more important than what is taught from the pulpit.
    - i. Talking in church is saying what you are doing is far more important than what is being taught.
  - 3. This means there must be inner tranquility and quietness of the mentality of the soul and undisturbed inner life without anger, guilt, bitterness, implacability with a soul totally objective.
  - 4. Therefore the first issue with a disturbed woman is not the content of the Bible Doctrine but the matter of authority.
    - i. When a woman respects the authority of the one teaching her concentration is so total under Filling of God the Holy Spirit she is totally free from Mental Attitude Sins, antagonisms, subjectivity, being thoughtful of others and poised and waits to talk later.
  - 5. Women when they react in their souls they always want to talk to you and tell you what they think and how they feel.
    - i. Often they react in the middle of a bible message and disturb the teaching.
  - 6. In reaction the most reticent of women have a great deal to say and their anger spews from their mouths regardless of her circumstances of the moment.
  - 7. Being in a local church congregation means nothing to a reacting woman
  - 8. When she verbalizes her reaction she ceases to concentrate on the subject and makes an issue of self.
    - i. To make an issue of doctrine taught is to be objective
    - ii. To make an issue of self is subjective.
  - 9. The only real issue is teaching the word of god in the local church is Bible Doctrine and what is the context of the content and what is it actually teaching.
  - 10. Therefore when the woman interposes with a reaction of Mental Attitude Sins she interrupts with verbal or written vituperations and when this occurs in this pattern the woman fails in the same way as Ishah did in the garden
    - i. Ishah failed to respond to Bible Doctrine from Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ because she rejected the authority of Adam her right man and also Bible Doctrine and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as teacher and had conversations with Satan and had come to the point of not listening in bible class when Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ came to teach.
- F. You can only lean Bible Doctrine by total concentration
- 1. You can only have inner beauty by learning Bible Doctrine
  - 2. No inner beauty apart from Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
  - 3. No Bible Doctrine in the soul apart from finding your right Pastor Teacher

4. NO recognition of the authority of your right Pastor Teacher if you are inconsistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine from his teaching
- G. Subordination to the authority of the Pastor Teacher is both the means of spiritual growth and the manner of the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
1. The noun (gr) Hupotage is a strong military word for subordination to authority.
    - i. One thing which bring out strongly the femininity of the woman is subordination to authority.
  2. No woman can advance spiritually until she accepts the authority of her right Pastor Teacher.
  3. The woman does this by regular assembly in the local church classroom to be taught Bible Doctrine.
  4. The woman must make constant decisions from her own volition to assemble in the local church and subordinate herself to her right Pastor Teacher and his teaching by verbal silence and tranquility of soul to concentrate during the teaching of Bible Doctrine.
  5. The right Pastor Teacher has both acquired and developed categories of authority.
    - i. Acquired == This is the Spiritual gift received in grace at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God for male believers ONLY and this is by appointment
      - a. Women are naturally teachers but NOT by spiritual gift for teaching from a pulpit.
    - ii. Developed == The Pastor Teacher must be a diligent student of Bible Doctrine and by this he acquires the content of Bible Doctrine to communicate.
      - a. He must study and teach consistently and constantly.
    - iii. The woman must respond to the message from her Pastor Teacher for her spiritual growth and inner beauty the objectives of the Plan of God for her life.
- H. Principles:
1. The original woman in the garden came to where she failed to fulfill this principle:
  2. In arrogance she resented the teaching of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and reacted to MONOLOGUE teaching
  3. Mr. Evil Satan began to share dialogue with her and dialogue always appeals to the woman who can enter into the conversation.
  4. With her right man the woman uses dialogue to undress her soul to the one whom she loves and this is the legitimate function of dialogue in the woman and what makes her so inclined to talk instead of listening.
    - i. There is nothing more beautiful than the inner beauty of a woman who reveals her soul through dialogue conversations.
  5. There is no place for nakedness of the woman's soul in the local church assembly.
    - i. The nakedness of soul is for intimacy of conversation with her right man.
  6. Just as a woman uncovers her body for her right man so she also reveals her soul to him.
  7. Assembly worship is not category II love.
    - i. You don't talk nor undress in the local church.
  8. The issue in assembly worship is always category I love toward Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  9. Therefore this verse says that a woman must never confuse the bedroom with the local church.
  10. It is the local church and its doctrinal teaching which gives the woman capacity for love in all categories and keeps her priorities straight.
  11. In church the woman must be silent and concentrate on the Bible Doctrine so that she might become under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as a result of her inculcation of the Bible Doctrine.

12. The woman in the bedroom can be as noisy as she pleases in both physical and soulful response to her right man BUT in the local church she must concentrate with total interest in the content of Bible Doctrine.
    - i. The woman therefore has great responsibility in keeping her responses sorted out.
  13. The original woman failed and resented Monologue teaching and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ taught with authority and she resented that and did not hear the content and confused the content when talking with Satan.
    - i. She confused spiritual death with physical death totally.
    - ii. Instead of uncovering her soul to Bible Doctrine she uncovered it to evil and policy of Satan.
    - iii. When she came under the influence of Satan she FELL and there was a great deal of arrogance.
  14. In her dialogue with Satan she expressed false interpretations with regard to the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
    - i. Satan did not correct her false impressions but EXPLOITED THEM fanning her arrogance to a greater and greater level.
    - ii. When she was bored with Bible Doctrine she found stimulation in her arrogance.
    - iii. The dialogue with Satan fed her vanity, boosted her ego and made her arrogant enough to reject the authority of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, Bible Doctrine and Adam all together.
  15. No woman can expose her naked body to any but her right man but more so no woman can reveal her naked soul to evil.
    - i. Subordination to the right Pastor Teacher protects the soul from evil just a LOVE for her right man protects her body from sinfulness and infidelity.
    - ii. Discipline and authority are necessary for learning and clothing the soul with garments for Super Grace blessings.
- I. Principles of Super Grace blessings:
1. The woman's capacity for life, love and happiness are related to her subordination to the authority of her right Pastor Teacher in Bible Doctrine teaching.
    - i. This begins before she gets to the local church as she makes decisions to go to class despite other distractions.
    - ii. Once arrived she must then decide to concentrate during the message.
  2. The woman often becomes infatuated with her doctor, milk man, lawyer, or husbands friends and this can be innocent or result in social and sexual unfaithfulness.
    - i. This effects the body and scars temporarily the soul.
  3. For the woman to fall in love with her Pastor Teacher is more devastating as it involves the soul being damaged by evil instead of spiritual growth and saturation of Bible Doctrine.
  4. Women must not and do not have a right to anything except for the respect for the authority of the right Pastor Teacher and concentration on what he is saying and this all occurs in total silence with concentration.
    - i. The woman does not have to even LIKE her Pastor Teacher but simply respect his authority while he is teaching.
    - ii. Personality never should ever be an issue.

1Tim 2:11

v11: {Parenthesis Open} Let the High Class or High Quality Woman repeatedly learn quietly, in silence, receive instruction without contention, with concentration, thoughtfulness, entire, total, complete subordination or submissiveness, tranquility, lacking Mental Attitude Sins, at successive regular intervals from a teacher with authority.

**Lesson #30      Series # 467      1Tim 2:12**

I. Freedom through military victory

- A. 1<sup>st</sup> Lt. Charles Q Williams, 5<sup>th</sup> Special Forces Group, US Army Infantry, Dung Kai, Vietnam, 9-10 June 1965
- II. Parenthesis beginning with the woman in the church, learning Bible Doctrine and her occupational hazard in this area.
- A. Never marry a woman who has been under psychiatric treatment.
1. Otherwise life would be boring without women.
- B. Women when they react can only be saved by Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
1. Her initial reaction is MENTAL and can become physical.
  2. She has Mental Attitude Sins and tantrums, becoming vicious and legalistic and a critic of her man.
  3. She becomes centered on antagonism to her man and the Mental Attitude reaction leads to verbal reactions.
  4. She must be isolated from all normal males in order to recover with maximum Bible Doctrine studies.
  5. The right place for the woman is IN CHURCH with her MOUTH SHUT.
  6. In the local church it is always the women in the church with the poorest manners.
  7. These facts about reaction and distraction from Bible Doctrine are directed toward women in this passage but in fact apply to all of us together.
- C. The pastor must first be in a position to LISTEN to bible teaching for a very long time and then can spend much time talking after listening for so long.
- D. In many ancient world situations women were often considered LESS valuable than animals and a good horse was worth more than 10 beautiful women.
1. This is still islam today.
  2. Ladies are in fact HUMAN as per the bible and the observation is that Men without ladies would not be HUMAN either.
- E. It takes a GREAT deal of concentration in any learning situation whether you are interested or not in the subject.
1. This is academic discipline.
  2. In the Christian Way of Life it is when you get bored or mad and close your ears and open your mouth the information presented then will be what you need for passing your next test or overcoming your next adversity or problem.
- F. The Spiritual Life of the woman depends on her response to Bible Doctrine not reaction to the bible teaching.
1. NO WOMAN ever grows up spiritually from the teaching of another woman.
  2. ONLY men have the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher
  3. There is nothing more fantastic than a woman responding to a man especially her right Pastor Teacher and this is where her spiritual growth occurs.
  4. There is no greater test than female objectivity than her response or reaction to her right Pastor Teacher.
- G. No woman nor anyone else can learn anything when reacting to the Pastor Teacher or what is taught in bible class.
1. Arrogance is thinking that the subject of a bible class and what is taught is directed toward you personally.
  2. The purpose of bible class is for us to learn Bible Doctrine and NOTHING ELSE and the Pastor Teacher has no interest in what you or I are doing in our life outside of church.
  3. When a woman fails to take in Bible Doctrine and to respond to the communication of Bible Doctrine she is failing in the Spiritual Life.
- H. The woman in the local church must submit to the authority of her right Pastor Teacher.
1. She is warned about overstepping the bounds set up by God.
  2. When she oversteps in the local church she does so to set herself up as a teacher.

3. Once a woman thinks her opinions are important and other women cater to her making her think more that her opinions are important and these opinions are in opposition to the Pastor Teacher and what he is teaching then she will be severely disciplined by God.
  4. When a woman takes an ego trip and fills up with blind arrogance and thinks she is a grace girl she is in fact a total IDIOT and the lord knows the exact right thing to do to correct her misconceptions.
- I. Paul here in v12 is stating a strong prohibition for women teaching Bible Doctrine in the local church to the congregation.
1. Women have a natural ability to teach children but NEVER adults especially in the local church.
  2. Timothy was a wimp in that he did not know how to cope with horsey bullying arrogant women having been brought up by 2 extremely gracious women and taught to be kind and gentle with women always.
  3. Timothy apparently was divorced from reality and possibly did not think women had Old Sin Natures and he had no idea how to deal with horsey women.
  4. The prohibition by Paul does not mean ladies cannot teach children in Prep School.
  5. Soon after a woman takes over a bible study class in the local church she will be trying to run everything from her mousy husband to the Pastor Teacher.
- J. **It is in the interest and to the advantage of the ladies to NEVER have authority over nor to teach a man ever.**
1. Whether a man, husband is right or wrong is of no consequence to his wife and as soon as a man being wrong has his wife try to overthrow his authority SHE is totally wrong.
    - i. 2 wrongs NEVER make a right.
    - ii. When a man is wrong the wife must put him in the hands of the lord or a CRUEL life which the woman has to partake of as well and maybe he will wake up and maybe NOT.
    - iii. The woman must never try to teach men nor usurp authority over men.
  2. The best weapon a woman has is her femininity not her pushy horseyness and charm and inner beauty must never be discarded for being horsey.
  3. The passage is emphasizing THE WOMAN, as having a HIGH QUALITY as a LADY.
    - i. There is no more noble calling for a man than to express HONOR and INTEGRITY toward the ladies.
  4. The high quality of the woman is destroyed when she is permitted to exercise authority over the man in any way especially teaching in the local church.
    - i. To the extent that a man lets a woman get away with anything where his authority is concerned he has lost his manhood.
    - ii. Manhood has nothing to do with physical attributes in a man but it is only involved in the soul.
  5. To rob a woman of her femininity is to rob her of her greatest blessing to others.
  6. To take away the responsiveness of a woman is to destroy her charm and beauty and dynamic influence in the Human Race.
    - i. The influence of the woman in the Human Race is seen in men dying for women, making noble sacrifices for women, being motivated to their most noble deeds for a woman.
  7. Without responsive women there cannot ever be civilization in any form.
    - i. There is no blessing for man and for many in the Human Race there is nothing worth dying for or fighting for without responsive women.
  8. The responsive woman becomes the man's love life while the domineering woman becomes the man's downfall and misery in life.
    - i. The man must rob himself of some of his nobility of attitude toward a woman when he must correct a woman.
    - ii. He would rather keep his tender compassion toward all ladies.

9. When a woman puts a man in the position where he has to become hard and tough and strong and mean they both lose.
    - i. Submissiveness to the man or revolution and insubordination toward the man.
  10. When a woman responds with subordination toward her man she enters into the Super Grace glamour of the Royal Family of God.
    - i. Her response must be in the field of Bible Doctrine and this brings capacity for love and somewhere there is a man to whom she can respond more than anyone else.
  11. When a woman reacts by exercising authority over a man she becomes a reversionistic evil harridan, a hag or strumpet.
  12. The woman's attitude toward authority determines whether she is a blessing or cursing in life.
    - i. This is true in business, education, the home,
    - ii. The woman has a choice and her attitude determines whether she is a blessing or cursing.
- K. God has never called a woman to the pastorate.
1. God the Holy Spirit has never given the spiritual gift of pastor teacher to any woman.
  2. All women have a natural gift of teaching but NONE ever had nor ever will have the gift of pastor teacher.
- L. Summary:
1. This prohibition applies to teaching with authority in the public assembly of the local church
  2. The primary purpose of the local church is a classroom for teaching Bible Doctrine to the Royal Family of God.
  3. All women are natural teachers where children are concerned.
  4. Women should teach their children and in the academic realm teaching children in elementary, junior high school and in some high school subjects..
    - i. It has been my considered observation as a lifelong teacher that boys respond extremely well to female teachers and girls to male teachers.
  5. Women are great teachers of children in Sunday schools and prep schools.
  6. Women should NEVER have authoritative teaching responsibility over adult MEN.
  7. Such a teaching assignment requires authority which has never ever been given to a woman.
  8. In Tit 2:4 there is another aspect of a woman as a teacher where OLDER widowed women are encouraged to teach younger women how to love their husbands and their children.
    - i. This implies that women do not know how to love their husbands.
    - ii. In addition women love the children until they become obnoxious and then cannot wait for them to go to school.
    - iii. There are some things which ONLY a woman can teach a woman and no man can ever teach them.
  9. To give a woman authority over a man or permit her to teach from the pulpit of the local church is to destroy her inner beauty and convert her blind arrogance into reversionism and to put her directly under the influence of EVIL.
    - i. This also manufactures out of her revolt against authority a revolutionist, trouble maker and EVIL person.
- M. When a woman reacts to any part of a message in the local church her first instinct is to express her reaction to someone near her verbally.
1. With the loss of objectivity when she verbalizes her reaction to the message this breaks her concentration and that of those near her.
  2. With loss of objectivity there cannot be any spiritual growth.



3. Talking in the local church is rejection of the authority of the Pastor Teacher as well as bad manners.
- N. There have been many organizations and cults which have developed over REJECTION of the principles of this passage with women becoming pastors of their local churches.

**1Tim 2:12**

**v12: But I, Paul, absolutely do not ever permit or allow a woman to teach a congregation from the pulpit in the Local Church, Bible Doctrine especially to the adult male, nor to EVER usurp or have or exercise authority over a true Man, but to constantly remain quiet or learn in silence with good manners, self control, respect for authority in the local church, not distracted mentally, concentrating on Bible Doctrine.**

**Lesson #31      Series # 467      1Tim 2:13**

- I. The importing of orphans from other countries into the United States of America is a violation of every concept in Bible Doctrine and is another illustration of the principle of EVIL.
  - A. Any contact with communist south east Asia has resulted in our turning around and doing something incredibly stupid and then we fouled it up with WORSE things.
  - B. It is 100% wrong to bring orphaned kids into this nation from those areas and we further demonstrate ignorance of Bible Doctrine by doing so.
  - C. There were over 1,000,000 people in 1979 who had no right to be in the United States of America and today in 2017 there are over 12, 000,000 unauthorized illegal immigrants.
  - D. Senator McClure, Idaho, "Gun controls will not end crime, the 2<sup>nd</sup> amendment is absolute and inviolable".
- II. Freedom through Military Victory:
  - A. Charles Calvin Rodgers, Lt Col. US Army, 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion, 5<sup>th</sup> Artillery, 1<sup>st</sup> Infantry Division, 1 Nov 1968, Vietnam.
- III. V13 the first woman in creation, Ishah:
  - A. The creation of the body of Adam was first and he was first in rank having first authority on the earth.
    1. The soul of man and of woman were simultaneously created.
    2. Man was created first in time and to have authority over the woman.
    3. Paul here used the title or name of the woman after her Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and not her original name of Gune or Ishah.
  - B. Summary:
    1. In creation God appointed the man in authority over the woman.
    2. In the garden there was still authority the man over the woman.
      - i. Even in perfect environment there must be authority.
      - ii. There is no such thing as any 2 people being equal when it comes to authority.
    3. From the start of the Human Race the man had authority over the woman.
    4. Even after the fall God did not change the order of authority and the principle of Bible Doctrine still stands with man having authority over the woman.
- IV. V14 The woman in the Fall:
  - A. Adam in the whole episode of the fall was not ever deceived or fooled.
    1. The woman was deceived totally from her temptation to her total failure in the fall.
    2. Adam was not in this category.
    3. The woman in her dialogue with Satan in the serpent, she was socially unfaithful to her authority, Adam, and also to her divine authority Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    4. She suffered from Blind Arrogance and she was the first case of arrogance in Human history.
    5. She rejected Adam and her right Pastor Teacher, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as her authority.
    6. This is the great contrast between the woman and Adam.
    7. Adam understood Bible Doctrine and did not enter into conversations with Satan and at no point did Satan try to talk to the man knowing it would be futile.
    8. The direct attack on man as the authority would not ever work ever.

9. If this type of attack had worked for Satan then he would have the problem of the woman in innocence only acting under the authority of the one God set over her.
  10. The man was too strong in Bible Doctrine received in the garden from Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  11. Satan attacked at the weak point that being the woman knowing she was not concentrating in bible class.
- B. The contrast now is between the fall of the woman and that of the man.
1. The woman was deceived by Satan the man was led astray and enticed by the woman.
  2. The woman was tempted by Satan the man was tempted by the woman.
  3. The woman was tempted through deception to what she did but Adam knew exactly what he was doing and chose the fallen woman outside the Plan of God rather than the Plan of God and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- C. The woman totally and completely deceived:
1. Being under authority of the man Ishah had no right to any conversation or dialogue with anyone or any thing outside his authority.
  2. She was totally confused totally ignorant, helpless and totally arrogant.
  3. Everything which happens to any woman who removes herself from divinely authorized authority is found in the case of the first woman to fall.
  4. Her stupidity and arrogance and rejection of authority caused her to assume she was smarter than anyone and she wanted to be a smart as GOD.
  5. BLIND arrogance is always easy to deceive and it represents the quintessence of stupidity.
  6. Like Satan she was filled with blind arrogance and she threw over her temporal and spiritual authority and ARROGANCE blinded her into total self deception **Gen 3:1-6**
- D. The woman though totally deceived the woman's volition caused her to enter into Sin or Transgression and her ignorance was NO EXCUSE.
1. She was stupid and deceived and did not understand what she was doing she still did it from free will.
  2. The woman sinned though deceived from the use of her volition and because she wanted the fruit and because she thought she would have an advantage OVER God.
  3. Sin lies in the act of volition whether the person is cognizant or ignorant of the act.
  4. This is lacking in the interpretation of our laws by bleeding heart judges who fail to hold those who commit crime accountable for their use of their volition in doing so.
  5. The use of mental disease in courts as a defense should never be an excuse and for capital offenses execution of this type should be immediate.
  6. IGNORANCE is no excuse says Bible Doctrine and all basic law also says this.
  7. Once the true laws of evidence demonstrates culpability then execution is the only answer.
- E. Principle:
1. Ignorant woman was a guilty as cognizant man in the fall.
  2. 2 violations were involved 2 people were in a state of transgression and spiritual death.
  3. The fall took place on the act of Negative Volition carried into action.
  4. When each ate of the forbidden fruit they did not DIE physically but did die Spiritually.
    - i. The wages of sin is spiritual death, separation from God, under condemnation from God.
    - ii. Spiritual death means to be in a state of no fellowship with God.
    - iii. Separation from God while physically alive.
    - iv. This also happens to us at the point of physical birth.
  5. Satan tempted the woman and his whole Modus Operandi was deceit, it is easy to out think an arrogant person
    - i. The arrogant person is too stuck on self and cannot think in terms of anything except self and thus cannot use whatever perspicacity he may have.

6. The woman tempted the man with the obvious and he followed the woman rejecting the authority God had given him and followed her when he should have been leading her.
7. The point is that both fell, sinned and died spiritually immediately.
8. There is however a distinction in their sin and fall emphasized in the change of Ishah to Eve and everything in history is related to this.

V. Doctrine of the Virgin Birth:

A. Overview:

1. While the woman was involved in the violation she was not cognizant of what she was doing but was still a sinner but unaware of where her volition was taking her.
2. Therefore in procreation the Old Sin Nature was transmitted by the MAN.

B. Definition:

1. The virgin birth refers to 1 birth in Human History the incarnation of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the 2<sup>nd</sup> person of the trinity, eternal God who entered into the Hypostatic Union.
  - i. It means that NO MAN was involved in copulation and procreation of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
2. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was conceived from God the Holy Spirit therefore born apart from human copulation and fertilization.
3. In this way Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ came into the world without the Old Sin Nature and the imputation of Adam's Original Sin
4. He also lived 33 years without personal sin and was thus qualified to be our substitution in judgment for all sin.

C. Necessity for the virgin birth:

1. Based on the fact that the Old Sin Nature is passed down to each member of the Human Race through the human father because man sinned in cognizance while the woman sinned in ignorance.
  - i. The woman received the genetic distortion which resulted in the Old Sin Nature first and was spiritually dead.
  - ii. Adam followed the woman and he received the genetic distortion resulting in the Old Sin Nature as well.
  - iii. Both are physically alive and in possession of a genetic distortion of the original human body resulting in the Old Sin Nature and both are spiritually dead as a result.
  - iv. Adam will live almost 1000 years before physical death therefore the wages of sin is spiritual death.
  - v. They had sex before the fall and also after the fall and after the fall sex resulted in their having hundreds of children.
  - vi. Every time they had a child like Cain or Able, or Seth the Old Sin Nature was transmitted by the gametes of the male to the ovum of the female.
  - vii. Cain was born first from mother and father both with Old Sin Natures but Cain gets the Old Sin Nature from Adam ONLY.
  - viii. The female children also got their Old Sin Nature from their father
  - ix. When children are born to female children they also get their Old Sin Nature from their fathers NEVER from their mothers.
  - x. If you want a detailed technical explanation let me know I can provide it (ff).
  - xi. Every child is born with an Old Sin Nature
  - xii. If a virgin gives birth to a child SHE has an Old Sin Nature and there is no such thing as an IMMACULATE MARY.
  - xiii. When Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was born since there was not father and no copulation and no fertilization he was born minus the genetic transmitted Old Sin Nature and therefore could not receive the imputation of Adam's Original Sin.

- xiv. After Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was born Joseph and Mary had many other children and after the birth of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ she was no longer a virgin.
  - xv. No embryo formed after fertilization of the female ovum is a human being and not until physical birth when God provides Neshemah the Breath of Life does the embryo become a human being.
2. This is because man sinned in cognizance while woman sinned in ignorance **1Tim 2:14**
  3. All members of the Human Race are born spiritually dead because of being born with the Old Sin Nature.
  4. The Old Sin Nature is passed down through the father in copulation and fertilization.
  5. Therefore the virgin birth is the only way to become a member of the Human Race apart from spiritual death and the imputation of Adam's Original Sin.
  6. When the mother of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, Mary, was born she also had an Old Sin Nature.
  7. Mary was descended from Nathan son of David, Joseph was descended from Solomon, both had an Old Sin Nature.
  8. When Mary became pregnant she was a virgin having never copulated with any male human and therefore when Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was born he had no Old Sin Nature his genetic material was provided by God the Holy Spirit to fertilize Mary's ovum.
  9. Though Mary and Joseph were Married under the law at that time they never engaged in copulation and therefore Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was born without genetic material from a human father therefore not contaminated by the Old Sin Nature.
  10. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ had to enter the Human Race without Adam's Original Sin and apart from personal sins throughout his whole life to qualify as savior and to be able to go to the cross for his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on our behalf for all sin.
  11. Therefore NO VIRGIN BIRTH no salvation.
    - i. Salvation hinges on the virgin birth of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    - ii. At physical birth Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was minus the Old Sin Nature therefore could not receive Adam's Original Sin and was therefore not under spiritual death.
    - iii. He went to the cross for the whole Human Race for all who are in spiritual death and had to be born minus spiritual death and had to make it to the cross minus spiritual death therefore for 33 years he had to live without personal sin.
    - iv. He was tempted and did not fall and no one was tempted like Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ ever.
    - v. Therefore Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ arrived at the cross impeccable without the Old Sin Nature without Adam's Original Sin and without personal sin.
    - vi. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross was the only member of the Human Race to be born without sin and live without sin and without spiritual death.
    - vii. As goes the virgin birth so goes all salvation and there cannot be salvation unless Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was born from a virgin.
  12. No one can be qualified to provide a Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross for all human sin unless he is sinless in 3 ways:
    - i. No imputation of Adam's Original Sin
    - ii. No Old Sin Nature
    - iii. No personal sin.
  13. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ has many title with regard to salvation:
    - i. Savior == Joshua or (gr) Jesus
    - ii. The last Adam the first Adam coming directly from the hand of the creator in perfection and the last Adam, the God who in fact created Adam came from the womb of Mary perfect without the Old Sin Nature.

- iii. Son of David being directly descended from David and fulfillment of the Davidic covenant.
- 14. Therefore the virgin birth is the only way a person could come into the Human Race without spiritual death.
  - i. In order to qualify for being savior of the Human Race Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ had to come into the world without spiritual death, the Old Sin Nature and Adam's Original Sin imputed and then live his life without personal sin.
  - ii. Therefore NO VIRGIN BIRTH == NO SALVATION
  - iii. No other principle, thought, idea, sacrifice, or system of words or deeds could satisfy the Justice of God.

D. The first prophecy of the virgin birth:

**Gen 3:15-16**

1. There will constantly be antagonism and hostility between the seed of Satan, the unbelievers of the world and the seed of the woman the believers of the world.
2. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ will crush the head of the serpent, Satan at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent where there will be a coup De tat and Satan will lose the crown of ruler of the world to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
3. Satan will be removed in this way by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the legitimate ruler of the world as son of God and son of David.
4. At the cross the serpent will bruise the heel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
5. For the first time the woman will have pregnancy because of sex.
6. After the garden and fall there is some added incentive for the woman to subordinate self to the right man beginning in the soul and moving into the body to subordinate to her husband in sex.
7. Man regained his ascendancy over the woman in sex she having a strong desire for him and a willingness to submit to him therefore rebuilding his authority over her.
  - i. The curse on the woman actually means she will always have a strong desire to constantly usurp the authority of the man over his woman.
8. Because the woman failed to subordinate to Adam women will always be trapped by their own gender and there is no way a woman can ever avoid this and this destroys all concepts of women's Liberation and women are NOT in any way EQUAL with men but in fact are to be subordinate to them.
9. The Husband is to RULE over the woman and this is obviously NOT EQUALITY.
10. This passage says that the Human Race is divided into 2 conflicting camps.
11. The historic phase of the Angelic Conflict include the seed of Satan, Unbelievers influenced by evil vs the seed of the woman believers influenced by Bible Doctrine.
  - i. Those influenced by Bible Doctrine can see the idiotic things which are occurring in the nation constantly.
    - a. Bringing children over from conquered nations to dilute our society.
    - b. All gun legislation
    - c. All idiotic legislation with regard to making capital crimes misdemeanors
    - d. Soft attitude toward illicit drugs especially narcotics.
      - i ) We must execute drug pushers immediately after conviction.
    - e. Conversion of this country to socialism
  - ii. This is a total saturation of our nation with EVIL.
  - iii. The unbeliever will be blinded by policies of Satan which we know as EVIL
  - iv. The believer influenced by Bible Doctrine and realize the importance of Laws of Divine Establishment concepts such as
    - a. Universal military training
    - b. Free enterprise
    - c. Keeping government and labor from control of business.
    - d. ETC.

12. Just as the forces of angels are divided into fallen and elect so the Human Race is divided into 2 categories, believers **John 3:36** vs unbelievers.
13. The entire doctrinal structure of the 2 advents of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ depends on the virgin birth.
14. The virgin birth is the mechanic of the incarnation and 1<sup>st</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ by which he accomplishes the 2 victories of the Angelic Conflict.
  - i. The first is a strategic victory at the first advent and is the cross, resurrection, ascension and Session.
  - ii. The second is the tactical victory at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent operation footstool, where Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ takes over rulership of the world abolishes evil replaces Satan as ruler of the world and in addition 1000 years of perfect environment before the last test of the Angelic Conflict.
  - iii. This is when war will end.
  - iv. In between there is the intercalated dispensation whereby tactical victory comes to us through Metabolized Bible Doctrine the written word in our souls.
  - v. The final tactical victory will be the Living Word and we will accompany him when he returns.
  - vi. We will have been resurrected prior to his 2<sup>nd</sup> advent and return with him.
15. The woman lost out in the garden because of rejection of authority both of Adam her husband and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ her right pastor and God .
16. The woman regains through receiving Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as savior and the authority of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Bible Doctrine.
17. The woman listened to the voice of evil in the garden now she can recover by listening to Bible Doctrine in the local church.
18. All this is prophesied through the mechanics of childbearing ie the virgin birth of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

E. The Jewish Prophecy of the virgin birth.

**Is 7:14**

**v14: Therefore in conclusion, the Lord himself, God the Father, shall give you (Ahaz v10) a sign, a supernatural manifestation or a miracle, behold the virgin shall conceive and become pregnant, consequently bearing a Son, (Is 9:6) therefore you will call his name Emmanuel, or God With Us.**

**1Tim 2:13**

**v13: For you see, first, in order of time and with first authority Adam was sculpted or molded or formed around the soul or created first afterward Eve,**

**1Tim 2:14**

**v14: And Adam was absolutely NOT EVER deceived or fooled, he deliberately sinned, but although that Woman having been completely enticed or deceived from an outside source, due to her arrogance similar to that of Satan, she had come to be in the transgression or violation, with the result that she absolutely remained in the state of transgression or violation.**

**Lesson #32**

**Series # 467**

**1Tim 2:15**

I. Doctrine of the Virgin Birth continued:

A. The Jewish Prophecy of the virgin birth.

1. Ahaz is the king of Judah at the time and the coalition formed against him for the war of the northern kingdom with Syrian against Judah is the background.
2. At this time Isaiah came to Ahaz to give him comfort but he was under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine.

**Is 7:11-14**

**v11: "Ask a sign from the LORD your God; ask for a miraculous sign in the depth of the pool of water for Jerusalem to let it be deep as Sheol or high in the sky above that pool."**

**v12: But Ahaz said, "I will not ask, and I will not put the LORD to the test."**

**v13: And he said, "Hear then, O house of David! Is it too little for you to weary men, that you weary my God also?"**

**v14: Therefore in conclusion you, Ahaz, will not ask for a miraculous sign from the lord, the Lord himself, God the Father, shall give you (Ahaz v11) a sign, a supernatural manifestation or a miracle, behold the virgin shall absolutely**

definitely conceive and become pregnant, consequently bearing a Son, (Is 9:6) therefore you will call his name Emmanuel, or God With Us.

Matt 1:22-23

3. The sign of God to Ahaz and all of Israel will be a virgin becoming pregnant without copulation with any male and a son being born.
  - i. The son is deity of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
- B. Historical Fulfillment of the prophecy of the virgin birth

**Matt 1:18**

v18: Now the birth of Christ was as follows, when his mother Mary had been betrothed to Joseph before they had sex, she was discovered to be pregnant by means of God the Holy Spirit

**Matt 1:19**

v19: Now Joseph her husband being an honorable or righteous man, not wanting to disgrace her, decided or desired to break off their marriage with a secret divorce and have her sent away secretly.

**Matt 1:20**

v20: While he was pondering or considered the facts and his plan, behold an angel of the lord appeared to him in a dream (having knocked him out) saying, "Joseph, Son of David, do not be afraid to retain Mary as your wife, for that which is conceived in her is from the source of God the Holy Spirit.

**Matt 1:21**

v21: And she shall bear a son and you shall call his name Jesus, savior, for it is he who shall save his people from their Sins

**Matt 1:22**

v22: Now all of this took place or had come to pass, that what was spoken by the Lord through the Prophet (Isaiah) might be fulfilled saying:

**Matt 1:23**

v23: Behold, THE virgin (Unique Woman pregnant as a virgin) shall be in pregnancy or with child and consequently shall bear a son and they shall call his name Emmanuel which is translated God with Us.

**Matt 1:24**

v24: Then Joseph woke up and arose from his sleep and did as the angel of the Lord commanded him and he acknowledge her, Mary, as his wife.

**Matt 1:25**

v25: but he did not have sexual intercourse with her, he kept her a virgin, until she had given birth to a son and when he had given birth he called his name Jesus.

- C. David and Bathsheba had 4 sons:
  1. Solomon the ruling line of King
    - i. This goes down to Koniah and he was told his line would be cut off from the fulfillment of the davidic covenant and the Messiah.
    - ii. This is the cut of of the messiah line because Joseph is not the natural father of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who is virgin born.
  2. Nathan the line of Duke
    - i. This line goes right down to Mary
    - ii. Both are direct descendants from David and Bathsheba.
    - iii. Mary is pregnant and they are at the initiation of their marriage but have not had sex at this time.
- D. The result of the virgin Birth:

**John 1:14**

1. The anticipation of these results are given in v15a of 1Tim 2.

II. Doctrine of metamorphisms:

A. The virgin birth is related here and there are a series of metamorphisms which are crucial in understanding Bible Doctrine.

B. Definition:

1. The word metamorphism is biblical derived from the (gr) Metamorphoo
2. This word means to transform and a change in form.
3. The verb can be used for outward visible transformation like that which occurred to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in **Matt 17:2** on the mount of transfiguration.

4. This can also be used for inner invisible transformation as in **Rom 12:2**.
5. However the theological connotation has to do with a striking change of form, thought or action.
6. There are 6 metamorphisms of great doctrinal significant connotations:

C. The first metamorphism:

1. Innocent man in the garden becomes a sinner by his own act of Negative Volition and spiritually dead by an act of divine judgment from the Justice of God.

**Gen 3:6**

D. The second metamorphism:

1. After the fall both having become sinners were then spiritually dead.
2. Both were created by God with souls having:
  - i. Self consciousness
  - ii. 2 frontal lobes of the mentality
  - iii. Emotion
  - iv. Volition both + and -
3. This was all they were given at creation but were taught Norms and Standards by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ each day in the evening bible class and these when transferred to the Right Lobe of the soul became their conscience.
4. The lord set up 1 prohibition with the 1 Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil being forbidden
  - i. The woman went first in the transgression of this prohibition.
  - ii. When the man saw the first sinful woman he followed her.
  - iii. Satan was the agent of the deception of the woman causing her to think she would be smarter than God.
  - iv. The fallen woman was Satan's agent in dealing with the man.
  - v. This resulted in both Ish and Ishah being sinful and spiritually dead and immediately receiving the genetic corruption of the Old Sin Nature.
  - vi. As spiritually dead individuals they were under the rule of Satan whose knowledge they did partake of.
  - vii. The first thing these 2 did is what is constantly glorified today in the world, HUMAN GOOD.
  - viii. Being naked they had to make adjustment under Satan's rules and they immediately under influence of the area of strength of the Old Sin Nature entered into operation fig leaves.
  - ix. This is so saturating this nation today it is destroying us completely much more so today in 2017 than in 1979 and it is a part of EVIL.
5. The first thing Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ did when he arrived after the fall for evening bible class was to perform an investigation.
  - i. As a result of the investigation he made a series of judgments
  - ii. Among these judgments the 2<sup>nd</sup> metamorphism occurred.
6. The woman after the fall became the child bearer **Gen 3:16, 1Tim 2:15**
7. Childbearing is the means of bringing the savior into the world and salvation for all of us.

E. The third metamorphism:

1. Eternal God the Son comes into the world through child bearing
2. As the means of perpetuating the Human Race it is the means of bringing Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ into the world as true humanity.
3. As God Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ cannot go to the cross and provide the Substitutionary Spiritual Death for all human sin and save the world.
4. As sovereign God he cannot become obedient to spiritual death on the cross because:
  - i. As deity he is sovereign and has Eternal Life
  - ii. He is Omnipresent and cannot reduce self as deity to 1 point being imminent and transcendent.



- iii. He is Immutable and cannot change the essence of deity and go to the cross for all sins.
- iv. He therefore had to become the God / Man and he therefore became flesh dwelling among us.
- v. He had body and soul with human spirit but without the Old Sin Nature and no spiritual death.
- vi. The animal sacrifices were not propitiatory for God the Father being only illustrative.

**Heb 10:5, 8, 10, Ps 40:6-8**

- 5. It is the body of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ which was offered for our sin to satisfy God the Father.

F. The Fourth Metamorphism:

- 1. Sinful man through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ becomes regenerate being born again causing the spiritually dead to be alive to God forever

**Tit 3:5**

- 2. Man who is born once is born a 2<sup>nd</sup> time when he believes in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- 3. In the Church Age we are not only born again but born into the Royal Family of God forever.

G. The Fifth Metamorphism:

- 1. This is a temporal metamorphism of the Royal Family of God in their royal priesthood in time under the daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception resulting in “godliness” a balance of residence of Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace to follow the colors to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

H. The sixth Metamorphism:

- 1. This is the eternal metamorphism of the Royal Family of God
- 2. In eternity we receive the resurrection body minus the Old Sin Nature, minus Human Good and Evil and minus our residing in the Lake of Fire.

III. The parenthesis of v11 is now closed and the sentence of v9+10 is now concluded at the end of v15.

A. Review conditional clauses their Prodisis (the condition) and Apotasis (the supposition) parts

- 1. The third class condition is a more probable future condition “Maybe Yes, Maybe NO with the possibility Maybe YES”.
- 2. The Prodisis is always introduced by Ean and the verb is always in the subjunctive mood the potential mood and the assumption is stated as potential.

B. Bible Doctrine is the highest quality of this life.

- 1. It results in our reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and for the woman developing inner beauty.
- 2. The balance of residence is accomplished by function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit for Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

**Lesson #33      Series # 467      1Tim 2:15b**

I. Doctrine of Sanctification:

A. Definition:

- 1. It means to be set apart as sacred or consecrated to God
- 2. It means belonging to GOD
- 3. It is a technical theological word for the Status Quo of church age believers in the 3 phases of the Plan of God.
  - i. Phase I == Positional or Salvation Sanctification == Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God
  - ii. Phase II == Experiential Sanctification == Believer in the Church Age in time

- iii. Phase III == Ultimate Sanctification == Believer in eternity.
- iv. It is only used for Church Age Royal Family of God believers.
- v. It means to be under a grace contract with God forever.
- vi. Since the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, his resurrection ascension and session the OLD contract of the Mosaic Law Code to the Old Testament Scripture believers is abrogated and the New Contract and the Royal Family of God are authorized for this dispensation.
- vii. The new covenant authorizes a royal priesthood for this all Church Age believers and consecrates the Royal Family of God under the categories of sanctification.
- viii. Faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the Church Age is like signing an inviolable contract with God.
- ix. The new covenant to the church recognizes 3 states of consecration or sanctification.

B. Etymology of the Greek vocabulary of the New Testament Scripture

- 1. This is a New Testament Scripture and Royal Family of God subject.
- 2. (gr) Hagios == Holy, Saint; Describes the Royal Family of God in terms of a permanent grace contract.
  - i. All believers in this sense are HOLY and all are SAINTS.
  - ii. All believers are “saints” because we are Royal Family of God and it means SET APART for a special purpose that being ROYALTY forever.
  - iii. Only the Church Age believer has this distinction and why the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is only for this dispensation.
  - iv. We are set apart by God as Royal Family, consecrated by God as Royalty forever.
  - v. A Saint is not a person who is miserable all their life and keeps self above the cut of the majority of people.
  - vi. Saint == Royal Family of God; IE: Saint Frank is typing this.
  - vii. The roman church distorts this and uses a system of canonization for creating saints from people who live a ridiculous life style.
  - viii. Being a Saint is not being good.
  - ix. A Saint is a believer who is consecrated to GOD forever and is a biblical title for Royalty.
- 3. (gr) Hagiotēs == Holiness, meaning the Status Quo of being royalty forever
  - i. This describes the doctrinal principles under the new contract to the church where by all Church Age believers are appointed to the Royal Family of God forever.
- 4. (gr) Hagiosunē == Sanctification or Doctrine of Sainthood or the Doctrine of Royal Family of God.
  - i. It means being under the new contract to God and is for Church Age believers only the Royal Family of God.
- 5. (gr) Hagiasmos == Consecration or Sanctification or Status Quo of being Royal Family of God forever.
- 6. (gr) Hagiazō == To be holy, a saint, sanctified.
- 7. (gr) Ho Hagios Tou Theou == The holy one or Saint from God
  - i. The head of the Royal Family of God the prince Ruler forever. **John 6:69**
  - ii. This recognizes that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was royalty as God, Humanity and an Eternal system of Royalty with only He being in it.

C. Positional Sanctification, Positional Truth, Salvation Sanctification:

- 1. This is NOT experiential.
- 2. This is the ministry of God the Holy Spirit called the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.
  - i. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God 39 irrevocable assets are given to the Royal Family of God.
  - ii. One of these is to enter the believer into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who is now seated at the right hand of God the Father

3. This is the means of our becoming part of the Royal Family of God.
4. God the Holy Spirit does 5 things for us at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - i. Regeneration which makes us along with all Old Testament Scripture saints FAMILY of GOD.
  - ii. Baptism of God the Holy Spirit which makes us part of the Royal Family of God.
  - iii. Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit the Escutcheon of the Royal Family of God.
  - iv. Sealing of God the Holy Spirit which is the spiritual security of the Royal Family of God.
  - v. Bestowing of the Spiritual Gift to each believer in the Church Age and this is the TEMPORARY talent of the Royal Family of God.
5. Positional Sanctification **1Cor 1:2**
  - i. These believers were the best hell raisers better than all others.

**1Cor 1:2**

**v2: To the church of God which is at Corinth, to those who have been sanctified in Christ Jesus, saints or privileged ones by calling or election with all who in every place call upon the name of our Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ their Lord and ours, to advantage both theirs and ours.**

**1Cor 1:30**

**v30: But YOU Believers, from the source of Him, God the Father, or by his doing, you keep on being in Christ Jesus ie union with Christ; Who became what He was not before to our advantage, to us the wisdom from God: righteousness, and sanctification or aristocracy, and redemption.**

- ii. Even though their lives were not a pattern to be followed and not explainable to the holier than thou believer who would never understand these believers, THEY WERE STILL CALLED SAINTS AND SAID TO BE SANCTIFIED by Paul.
- iii. These believers committed all the sins that David did but vastly more frequently and to a greater degree.
- iv. In spite of this they are sanctified in Christ Jesus.
- v. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Redemption all Church Age believers are SANCTIFIED.

**Heb 10:10 + 14**

**v10: By means of which will or purpose or design {of God the Father} we have been sanctified in the past with the result that we remain sanctified or separated unto or aristocracy to God or ear-marked as Royalty, forever, through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ at one time once and for all as opposed to the Levitical priests numerous offerings over 1500+ years.**

**v14: For by means of one or a single offering he has perfected for all time those who are sanctified or being consecrated as aristocracy.**

6. All these passages refer to positional sanctification or Salvation Sanctification of the believer in the Church Age ONLY.
  - i. This is what gives us Eternal Security and puts us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ making us Royal Family of God forever.
  - ii. This is what requires us to understand Bible Doctrine to make any advance in the Spiritual Life.
  - iii. This doctrine is what brings us to the understanding that no matter how good or bad, successful or failing we are we are STILL Royal Family of God sanctified in Christ Jesus.
  - iv. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we are born again as Royal Family of God and this is forever and NOTHING can or will ever change it and it WILL last forever.
- D. Experiential Sanctification:
  1. This is the believer in time between Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Physical Death.
  2. It is called “godliness”, Experiential Sanctification, Balance of Residence and is the tactical objective for the members of the Royal Family of God for the Church Age.

- i. Our objective after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or “godliness”.
    - ii. Our objective is NOT to get out and DO things or WORK etc.
  3. On the earth the Royal Family of God is the BODY of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ but in heaven the Royal Family of God is the BRIDE of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    - i. This distinction must be learned.
  4. Balance of residence in the soul is achieved by 2 factors:
    - i. We are indwelt by God the Holy Spirit in our body.
    - ii. The control of God the Holy Spirit of the soul depends on the understanding and use we make of rebound and our understanding of carnality vs Spirituality.
    - iii. Filling of God the Holy Spirit means that God the Holy Spirit controls the soul.
    - iv. Grieving and Quenching God the Holy Spirit means we are out of fellowship and God the Holy Spirit does NOT control the soul.
    - v. In either of these cases we still have the Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit.
  5. The problem is that we are out of balance in our Spiritual Life having the Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and NOT enough Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - i. In order to gain balance in the Spiritual Life we must be consistent and persistent in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
    - ii. Once we have a maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul we gain Balance of Residence in our soul.
  6. The normal function of the royal priesthood and normal Spiritual Life is Balance of Residence.
  7. This is experiential sanctification, godliness, Super Grace or Spiritual Maturity
- E. Ultimate Sanctification:
  1. This is the believer in eternity and the final Status Quo of the Royal Family of God.
    - i. This occurs for the Church Age believer in the Royal Family of God at the rapture of the church when each member of the Royal Family of God receives the Resurrection Body
    - ii. All who have died and gone before the rapture first go and get their Resurrection Body
    - iii. All Resurrection Bodies are MINUS the Old Sin Nature, Human Good, Evil, and reversionism and minus the Lake of Fire
  2. This is the Status Quo of the Royal Family of God in Resurrection Body presentable before Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    - i. This is the believer looking their best most presentable at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    - ii. The Royal Family of God cannot appear in the filthy rags of Sin or Self Righteous Arrogance.
    - iii. When Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ returns to the earth he will bring his own administrators and removes Satan and his administrators and all POLITICIANS.
      - a. Obviously the Millennium will be great because there will be NO POLITICIANS.
    - iv. The Royal Family of God will be administrators for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the millennium and we will be in dress uniform in our Resurrection Body.
    - v. This is to be our Status Quo forever.
    - vi. The Royal Family of God is that resurrected aristocracy which shares in the coronation and triumph of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent **Rom 8:29, 1Cor 1:8, Phil 3:21, 1Thes 5:23, 1John 3:1-2**
- F. Agents of sanctification:

1. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is the first for Positional Sanctification **Heb 10:10, 14**
  2. God the Holy Spirit is part of the agent for Experiential Sanctification **Rom 15;16, 2Thes 2;13**
  3. Bible Doctrine the word of God is the other part of the agent for Experiential Sanctification, John 17:17, Eph 5:26
- G. All phases of sanctification are related to the Angelic Conflict:
1. Phase I == regenerate mankind are Royal Family of God in the Church Age are positionally higher than angels.
    - i. When we are entered into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ from the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit we are NOW POSITIONALLY higher than angels.
    - ii. This is a promise of great things to come.
  2. Phase II == the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, is Sharing the Happiness of God, establishes the command post of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, receives Super Grace blessing which glorifies God resulting all in a tactical victory in the Angelic Conflict.
    - i. This believer in Phase II who has reached Super Grace God then blesses us and the Super Grace believer is MINUS EVIL therefore has tactical victory in the Angelic Conflict.
  3. Phase III == the Royal Family of God in Resurrection Body becomes physically superior to all angels.
- H. The present emphasis on Phase II Sanctification:
1. Between Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Eternity the believer spends a certain amount of time on EARTH.
    - i. This time is determined by the sovereign Plan of God.
  2. The purpose of this time on earth is to allow this believer to achieve the tactical victory of the Super Grace life.
    - i. This tactical victory results in spiritual, temporal and dying blessing.
  3. When God can bless the believer in the devils world based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul tactical victory is achieved.
    - i. This victory is achieved apart from anything Satan can do.
    - ii. God gives wealth, success, happiness, prosperity, capacity for life totally apart from Satan's policy or ability to enrich or promote his own servants in his world.
    - iii. This glorifies GOD.
  4. Therefore the reason for keeping the Royal Family of God on earth in Phase II is to bless them in every imaginable category totally apart from the Cosmic Dynaspheres.
  5. It is the objective of God to keep you on earth for a little while to provide Super Grace blessings compatible with his eternal decree and God as provider is glorified and we are blessed as beneficiaries.
    - i. He starts with spiritual blessings such as Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, Sharing the Happiness of God, inner residence of Bible Doctrine for exigencies and capacities for life all together.
    - ii. These spiritual blessings fit together and result in temporal blessings of every category imaginable.
  6. God's objectives for us in time can only be accomplished from maximum Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  7. Therefore the issue of phase II is INFLUENCE:
    - i. Either Bible Doctrine will influence us or EVIL will influence us.
    - ii. Bible Doctrine was here before we came and will be here when we are gone
    - iii. Doctrine is an absolute in the scripture and is a manifestation of the genius of the Grace of God

- iv. Evil was here before we came and will be here when we are gone.
  - v. Evil is the manifestation of the genius of Satan and his policy as ruler of this world after the fall of Adam.
  - vi. We cannot change doctrine or evil and both doctrine and evil can change us.
  - vii. The true issue is which one will change us.
  - viii. After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we cannot remain the same we either become worse or better depending on whether Evil or Doctrine influences us respectively.
  - ix. Believers who become worse after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God they are under the influence of evil.
  - x. Believers who become better after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit daily and reach the Status Quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and the blessings there in promised.
8. The believer's soul is the battleground on which Bible Doctrine engages Evil in this conflict.
  9. Bible Doctrine represents the GRACE genius of God while evil depicts the genius of Satan as ruler of the world.
  10. Every believer is in the Plan of God and the Plan of God will either bless or crush you depending on what influences your life.
  11. To be influenced by Bible Doctrine means blessing
  12. To be influenced by evil means cursing Divine Discipline and the Sin Unto Death.
  13. The Plan of God is like being on a DOZER and either you ride on top or are crushed under it and there is no middle ground.
    - i. If you get off you are crushed and if you stay on with the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception you will ultimately have great blessing.
  14. Experiential sanctification depends of your consistent attitude toward Bible Doctrine.
  15. Phase II is either blessing of Experiential Sanctification or cursing from Divine Discipline.
    - i. Being in the Plan of God you have one or the other.
  16. Super Grace believers have a balance of residence, experiential sanctification called the state of godliness and it is the objective of sanctification in time, 1Tim 6:3-6, 2Pet 1:3.
- II. The last words for Chapter 2:
- A. "With Sobriety" == Meta + Sophrosune == with stability of mind, reasonableness, mental soundness
- III. The doctrine of Mental Attitude.
- A. Definition:
    1. Mental Attitude is the function of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
      - i. This is called the heart and has:
        - a. Frame of Reference
          - i) Doctrines such as Christology, Sotierology, ETC
        - b. Memory
          - i) Memory establishes a technical vocabulary to use these doctrines
        - c. Categorical Storage
          - i) Systems of Bible Doctrine from the study of the bible.
        - d. Norms and Standards – Conscience
          - i) Dealing with God.
        - e. Launch Pad for Application to experience.
    2. It is a sum total of all thought impulses which emanate from the Right Lobe of the believer which comprise the subject of Mental Attitude.
    3. There are 2 viewpoints in Mental Attitude

- i. Human Viewpoint == expression of the Norms and Standards of the Cosmic Dynaspheres
  - ii. Divine Viewpoint == the expression of Bible Doctrine resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer.
  - iii. Every thought impulse which we will have as a believer can be categorized into Human Viewpoint or Divine Viewpoint.
  - iv. Influence by Bible Doctrine or by Evil.
  - v. A thought can therefore make or break you.
  - vi. Being under the influence of Bible Doctrine is the Divine Viewpoint
  - vii. Being under the influence of Evil is the Human Viewpoint.
4. Your real personality is the sum total of your thought and therefore there is nothing we can do to improve our personality by overt changes because the real personality is WHAT we think.
- B. Thinking is the real personality of the person.
1. What a person thinks in the soul determines what that person really is.
  2. Mental Attitude determines both the character and life of a person **Prov 23:6-7**
    - i. Don't take things from a selfish man because they have strings attached.
    - ii. Don't desire what he has because what he thinks in his soul that is what he is and he is NOT with you but against you.
    - iii. This is hypocrisy as part of personality and when in your soul you think, hatred, lust, vindictiveness, etc and this ties a string on to another person to haul them in and the real person is NOT the Hospitable overt person but what they actually think.
  3. The conflict of Mental Attitude in the believer is in **Is 55:6-9**

**Is 55:6-9**

**v6: "Seek the LORD while he may be found during your short lifetime, call upon him while he is near;**

**v7: let the reversionist forsake his way of Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine, and the unrighteous reversionistic or carnal believer under the influence of evil, his thoughts of Human Viewpoint and Mental Attitude Sins of Human Good or evil and let him return to the LORD in reversion recovery, and he will have compassion on him giving time for advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon in reversion recovery.**

**v8: For my thoughts of Divine Viewpoint are not your thoughts of Human Viewpoint of reversionism, neither are your ways my ways, says the LORD.**

**v9: For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my Modus Operandi higher than yours and my thoughts than your thoughts.**

4. The command to Divine Viewpoint is in **1Cor 2:16, Phil 2:5, 2Cor 10:4-6**
  - i. This command is obeyed by consistent and daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - ii. Our weapons in the Angelic Conflict are those of power from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul against the forces of Satan.

**2Cor 10:4-6**

**v4: for the equipment and weapons of our conflict are not human attributes but the attributes of unseen divine power from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul given by God to destroy Satan's fortifications or strongholds of EVIL.**

**v5: attack, assaulting and demolishing Cosmic Dynasphere thoughts of thinking Human Viewpoint and Human Good and every subjective arrogant or proud thought obstacle which attacks the objective that is the knowledge of God in Divine Viewpoint, and make a prisoner every Cosmic Dynasphere or Human Viewpoint thought to the authority of Christ,**

**v6: holding in readiness as an instant reaction force, garrisoning the soul with Bible Doctrine to punish every deviation or disobedience of reversionism from obedience of reversionistic Human Viewpoint, when your obedience of daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception has been fulfilled by attaining Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.**

5. Rapport in the Royal Family of God is based on Divine Viewpoint: **Phil 2;2**

6. The function of the royal priesthood demands a new Mental Attitude **2Tim 1:7, Rom 12:2**
7. Divine Viewpoint from Bible Doctrine produces confidence **2Cor 5:1 comp v6-8**
8. Areas of life involving Mental Attitude:
  - i. Stability is a Mental Attitude **James 1:8**
  - ii. Prosperity is a Mental Attitude **Phil 4:7**
  - iii. Giving is a Mental Attitude **2Cor 9:7**
  - iv. Worldliness is a Mental Attitude **Rom 12:2, Col 3:2**
  - v. Evil is a Mental Attitude **Matt 9:4**
  - vi. Arrogance is a Mental Attitude **Gal 6:3** (especially blind arrogance)
  - vii. Inner Beauty is a Mental Attitude **1Tim 2:9, 10, 15:b**

C. Summary:

1. The woman's inner beauty is related to Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - i. Inner beauty is more important than outer beauty
  - ii. Outer beauty is nothing without inner beauty and is an empty shell without it.
  - iii. With inner beauty whatever outer beauty she has by nature and her skill in presentation of herself is appreciated more.
  - iv. Outer beauty without inner beauty is useless.
2. Bible Doctrine becomes resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
3. In commanding women to make self beautiful and since beauty comes from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the only way that a woman can have inner beauty is to be consistent in the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
4. This same inner beauty which comes from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul also becomes the source for capacity for life, love, happiness and blessing.
  - i. Thus the woman becomes irresistible.
5. Inner beauty becomes the Mental Attitude of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
6. The Super Grace woman always possesses that inner beauty no matter her age.
7. Overt grooming merely complements the inner beauty of the Super Grace woman.
8. The REAL beauty of the woman is her inner beauty.
9. The secret to inner beauty is the Balance of Residence in the soul between the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine and this comes from daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - i. It is important for ladies to make themselves presentable before going out of the house but **IT IS MUCH MORE IMPORTANT FOR THE WOMAN TO TAKE IN Bible Doctrine.**
10. Overt beauty and grooming must NEVER be neglected but the bible emphasizes the importance of inner beauty in the Royal Family of God
11. Inner beauty is part of the principle of Mental Attitude Dynamics for the woman.
12. Inner beauty belongs to the woman in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

**1Tim 2:15**

v15: **Notwithstanding or In Fact, she shall be Saved in the future, through childbearing at the Virgin Birth of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, {parenthesis closed}. If they, the Ladies, remain, stay, last, continue or persist in Bible Doctrine establishing a balance of residence of Bible Doctrine and Filling of God the Holy Spirit, and Impersonal Love of Relaxed Mental Attitude of Royal Family Honor Code even by means of experiential sanctification of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, maybe they and will maybe they won't, and reciprocity, with experiential sanctification, with reasonableness, stability of mind or mental soundness, self control, inner beauty.**



- I. This epistle meets the most underrated man in history Paul and the most overrated man in history Timothy.
  - A. This has given us a great deal of information regarding the proper function on Evil, Prayer, Women and in this chapter Leadership qualification.
  - B. In chapter 4 we will see the doctrine of demons and apostasy in the Church Age.
    1. In the latter times apostasy will occur refers to the Church Age the whole of it.
- II. Leadership Norms and standards must be in all areas of life and absolutely all organizations.
  - A. 11 basic qualifications for leadership from the military overflow into business, industry and every phase of industrial and personnel relationship and social and industrial life of this nation.
    1. These norms and standards go back at least 1500 years.
  - B. Self and Group discipline including respect for and proper use of authority.
    1. This is the basic concept of military life and why it is so important for men to get into the military in order to learn these concepts
    2. They always encounter those in military service whose views are totally opposite to their own and this teaches self discipline and brings on maturity.
    3. This is the means by which every great military leader has been successful in history.
      - i. Hannibal
      - ii. Julius Caesar
      - iii. Gustovus Adolphys
      - iv. Frederick the Great
      - v. Robert E. Lee
      - vi. Douglas MacArthur
      - vii. Napoleon
    4. These men of this caliber have taken all kinds of people and pulled them together to function together.
      - i. No great leader has ever succeeded apart from his own self discipline.
      - ii. Most great leaders in history were men of genius and it is very difficult for men of genius to settle themselves down and STUDY their profession.
      - iii. This is the greatest application of Self Discipline
  - C. Relaxed Mental Attitude and the concept of objectivity:
    1. Lack of objectivity has often totally destroyed many otherwise good soldiers.
    2. Subjectivity among military generals in the United States army in WWII was a detrimental factor and contributed greatly to our conduct of that war.
    3. Part of the loss of china to communism was due to subjectivity of general officers such as Stillwell and others.
    4. Subjectivity in Europe was far worse in many cases and it became difficult to differentiate between subjectivity there and STUPIDITY.
    5. Patton complained at the end of the war that they had taken the WORST corps commander of the entire eastern theater and made him president of the Army War College and this was typical.
    6. A person must be relaxed in leadership and have a sense of humor and have freedom from Mental Attitude Sins.
    7. Blind arrogance is always detrimental to all it touches as does jealousy, bitterness, vindictiveness, implacability, Self Pity and Guilt will all destroy any possibility of greatness in a leader in any realm of life including the Spiritual Life.
    8. The Royal Family of God has very strong permanent standards for leadership as we will see.
  - D. Strong character including Honor, Integrity, Sense of Responsibility and this is emphasized in any situation where leadership is needed.
  - E. Professional knowledge compatible with RANK in leadership.

1. In professional life most leadership is related to professional knowledge and variations in rank are related to certain required knowledge.
  - F. There must be loyalty in 2 directions:
    1. Loyalty must be directed toward subordinates and also to those superior in rank.
    2. This true in every area of life and will be seen clearly in the Pastor Teacher and his function.
  - G. Common Sense and Good Judgment
    1. This is very uncommon in our generation and most of our preceding generations.
    2. There is often failure to apply Bible Doctrine in this area.
  - H. Fairness and Objectivity to those under your command and avoidance of prejudice and bias.
  - I. Understanding of People
    1. No one is born with this understanding but you have to study people.
    2. You don't have to love people which often moves you into blind arrogance.
    3. You must be curious about people.
  - J. Executive Ability
    1. This is where many people fall short in leadership simply NOT having executive ability.
    2. One big problem is to find assistants with executive ability.
    3. When orders are given to subordinates they must be executed without the leader having to be constantly looking over their shoulder to see that they do it.
    4. There is only one top executive in the local church the Pastor Teacher himself and all other executives do not have to be Pastor Teachers but simply people who have the gift and capability in other fields.
  - K. Health and good physical condition including endurance and nervous stability are essential for leadership.
    1. This is especially true for all great leaders and many great leaders fail ultimately because of Loss of Health.
      - i. This is why Napoleon lost at Waterloo.
    2. Hannibal's father who was a genius made sure his son would not suffer from good health and made him walk in the snow and wear heavy clothing in summer to force his body to endure more than all the troops.
    3. Our greatest leaders are those who have great health IN THE FIELD.
  - L. Presence, Dress, Carriage, Poise, Courtesy, and Flair are all important in leadership.
    1. Our 2 greatest military leaders in WWII both had great flair as did other great leaders
      - i. MacArthur, Patton, and Jackson, Lee, Napoleon, Gustavos Adolphus, Alexander the Great, Gaius Julius Caesar.
- III. 1Tim chapter 3 is MEN'S Night with Qualifications for leadership in the Royal Family of God in the Church Age:
- A. Outline:
    1. v1-7 the qualification for highest leadership in the Church Age.
    2. v8-13 the qualifications for Deacons in administrative leadership.
    3. V14-16 Authority in the Royal Family of God
      - i. Authority of Bible Doctrine v14
      - ii. Authority of the Pastor Teacher v15
      - iii. Authority of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ v16
  - B. The concept which leads to leadership or the Principle of Aspiration.
    1. Paul's Favorite Hymn "Pistos Ho Logos" == Faithful is the Word
      - i. This hymn has disappeared from history and Paul liked to hum it to himself and he quotes it often.
      - ii. 1Tim 1:15, 1Tim 3:1, 1Tim 4:9, Tit 3:8, 2Tim 2:11
      - iii. Our greatest hymn is "A mighty fortress is our god" which was taken from a drinking song from the time of Luther in the Reformation
      - iv. For BRUCE, Martin Luther was a very HEAVY Beer Drinker.

- v. Luther gave this song some honorable words and made it the greatest hymn of our time.
- 2. Faithfulness of the Word is SAVING GRACE
  - i. This fragment deals with the Pastor Teacher
- 3. Timothy was a little weak in aspiration to Pastor Teacher and therefore was weak in his function of Pastor Teacher.
  - i. At the point of which any male believer becomes aware of their gift of Pastor Teacher.
  - ii. At this point aspiration becomes a factor in his attaining his calling.
  - iii. You must reach the point of sufficient spiritual growth to recognize your spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher and ASPIRE to attain it.
  - iv. If you have aspiration to be a Pastor Teacher without spiritual growth bringing you to understanding your gift this is BLIND ARROGANCE.
  - v. At the point of the believer who has the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher reaching awareness of his gift.
    - a. This person may or may not have a dynamic personality, nor be a sweet person, nor may his be eloquent or attractive nor a good public speaker.
    - b. He could be any male.
  - vi. The person must find out he has this spiritual on his own and function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception for a sufficient time in order to determine this.
  - vii. A pastor MUST BE A MAN AND HAVE THE STRENGTH OF MANHOOD IN HIS SOUL AND NEVER TAKE ANY CRAP FROM ANYONE ON EARTH.
  - viii. He gets his orders and discipline or correction from the lord himself and when it is necessary he puts his manhood on the line to protect his congregation and keep them in line or whatever is needed.
  - ix. This all takes TIME and you don't simply become a Pastor Teacher because you have the gift of pastor teacher.
  - x. The pastorate is for those who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and through the intake of Bible Doctrine they become aware in their own souls that they have the gift.
  - xi. The proper point of awareness is the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God from sufficient intake of Bible Doctrine.
  - xii. No one reaches this point without being UNDER sufficient discipline himself and the people who use discipline and authority properly are those who have been under it for a long time in their own training.
  - xiii. This discipline can be STRICT military or academic or business or any kind of discipline and you must be under it before you can use it properly.
    - a. This is why the centurion told Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ he did not have to walk to his home to heal is Sargent just say the word.
- C. The office of Pastor Teacher in the Church Age is the most honorable office in life.
  - 1. It is the only leadership system in the world since AD 30 which it totally free from any strings attached to the ruler of this world, SATAN.
  - 2. It is the MOST honorable leadership in existence today.
- D. Summary:
  - 1. This passage does not cover the office of guardian of the local church from the viewpoint of the spiritual gift but from the point of Aspiration which comes AFTER receipt of the gift itself.
    - i. There is time elapsed between receiving the gift and aspiration to the office of Pastor Teacher as an adolescent in the Spiritual Life.
    - ii. The male believer must become aware of the fact he has the spiritual gift of pastor from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

2. The spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher the communicating part of the guardian of the local church is sovereignly bestowed to CERTAIN male believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - i. The only other issue is how many Pastor Teachers are needed for this generation and what will the attrition rate be, and when will some be replaced by others etc.
3. The prerequisite to aspiration is that you have the gift and an amount of Bible Doctrine
  - i. Aspiration comes from spiritual growth from consistent use of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and a certain accumulation of Bible Doctrine and consistent function in the local church under the Pastor Teacher.
  - ii. This is followed by the individual recognition of possession of the spiritual gift.
4. Possession of this spiritual gift is not enough to reach the pulpit or the office of Pastor Teacher.
  - i. There must be some involvement in a system of strict discipline such as Military Service, Law Enforcement, Academic Progression, ETC.
5. One must possess the gift and through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul aspire to the office and this aspiration becomes the basis for preparation of the ministry.
  - i. Preparation for the ministry is must more difficult than anything else in life.
  - ii. Aspiration is essential for this office especially when the person finds self in a combat situation where the pulpit as about as far from him as imaginable.
  - iii. Or when he is in the academic halls of insanity in the theological seminaries which do everything today EXCEPT prepare the man for the ministry and he must spend years learning after seminary to function properly.
6. Aspiration become motivation for training, preparation and provides self discipline needed to attain the office of Pastor Teacher.
  - i. Preparation is the period of great testing in the academic halls and after when he gets into 1 or 2 small pastorates.
  - ii. God keeps some local churches small and made up of mean cruel people to be a pressure chamber training for new pastors.
7. This verse recognizes that those who aspire to the office of Pastor Teacher in the local church have previously received the gift of Pastor Teacher and taken in a good deal of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and been motivated to continue to reach the point of Pastor Teacher.
8. Not all who receive the gift of Pastor Teacher at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God get to the point of aspiration and not all those who aspire to attain the office of Pastor Teacher get to the office.
  - i. There are problems between receiving the Spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher and Aspiration to the office and there are many problems between Aspiration and getting to the office of Pastor Teacher with his own pastorate.
  - ii. Lack of aspiration is lack of Bible Doctrine in the soul.
  - iii. Inspiration is NOT aspiration and runs out.
  - iv. Aspiration is biblical and doctrinal dependent and INSPIRATION is EMOTIONAL.
  - v. Inspiration means nothing Aspiration is the gutty motivation which keeps a person going during his intensive training period.
9. Not all who aspire to reach the office of Pastor Teacher of the local church make it and some fail along the way.
10. Each step of preparation must be accomplished with large doses of Bible Doctrine inculcated which identifies the gift, aspires to the honorable office, motivates the preparation, provides the self discipline to complete the preparation for this ministry.

#### IV. Doctrine of Pastor Teacher:

##### A. Definition and concept:

1. Since every believer in the Church Age is a royal priest it is important to understand the system of authority which God has ordained for this dispensation.
  - i. This system is where God must have the Royal Family of God under human authority.
  - ii. If there is anyone who does not care for authority it is ROYALTY.
  - iii. These people spend more time being a critic than a student slave.
  - iv. It is important to recognize the consideration of authority and to understand this system of authority is not something which the Pastor Teacher has dreamed up or in his imagination visualized.
  - v. The only thing recognized by God is the local church with its Pastor Teacher and STRICT academic discipline when assembled for bible teaching.
  - vi. By 96 AD the last apostle died off having lived a very long life and there was nothing left but Pastor Teacher and there were no gift of Tongues, Healing, Prophecy, Miracles, all having been closed when the canon of scripture was completed.
  - vii. When all the spectacular gifts were God at this time left holding the bag and responsibility for the local churches in the Church Age was the Pastor Teacher with the JOB of study and teach, study and teach until the rapture.
  - viii. There were no longer frills in the local church of tongues, healings, miracles etc.
  - ix. It became listen and learn until the rapture.
  - x. There is nothing left but the authority of the Pastor Teacher who is responsible directly to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ for his local church.
- B. There are 2 basic categories of authority in this dispensation
  1. Overt authority and Inner Authority
    - i. Overt is God delegating the authority for communication of Bible Doctrine to the Pastor Teacher but the actual authority is Bible Doctrine itself.
      - a. The Pastor Teacher is authorized to simply communicate what is in the text book.
    - ii. Inner is in the soul of every believer who each are Royal Family of God and their volition of soul along with the sovereign Will of God as expressed in scripture is your individual authority.
      - a. Personal authority of volition MUST BE SUBORDINATED to the higher authority of the Pastor Teacher in communication of Bible Doctrine.
    - iii. Our mutual standard is the Bible Doctrine of the word of God.
    - iv. Bible Doctrine is transferred from the bible to the soul of the believer by the Pastor Teacher.
    - v. The soul of the believer is his own authority and is his inner authority
    - vi. Bible Doctrine is the overt authority directly from God.
    - vii. The Pastor Teacher is the only thing which brings these 2 things together today.
    - viii. The Pastor Teacher is the only one who is responsible for the spiritual growth of the believer in any generation of this dispensation of the Church Age and it must be Pastor Teacher to congregation and NO OTHER pseudo system of christian function.
    - ix. The spiritual gift provides the ability and authority to communicate Bible Doctrine via monologue AFTER proper preparation.
    - x. The Pastor Teacher is bestowed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and reflects the fact that the Pastor Teacher prior to and immediately after salvation is no better than anyone else.
    - xi. This spiritual gift is bestowed ONLY on males and GOD has no system whereby a woman has authority over a man.
    - xii. Women have authority over children under another system.
  2. Nomenclature for this subject:

- i. Authority of the pastor is seen in (gr) presbuteros == commanding officer
    - a. There is ONLY ONE COMMANDING OFFICER.
    - b. The “Old Man” in a military unit is the commanding officer and may be young or old.
    - c. This is the only authority in life totally FREE from entanglement, influence or control of EVIL from the Cosmic Dynaspheres.
    - d. Since Satan is the ruler of this world then any authority in this life is involved with his policy of EVIL.
    - e. This is the ONLY Place where there is authority which is totally directly related to the lord and not even related to Laws of Divine Establishment and thus totally free from evil.
  - ii. Function of the Pastor (gr) poimenos kaididoskolos Eph 4:11 == Pastor Teacher
  - iii. Administrative Function of the Pastor as a policy and decision maker (gr) Episkopos == Guardian of the church
  - iv. (gr) diakonos == minister or servant or waiter who gives spiritual food to the congregation.
3. Purpose of the Pastor Teacher
- i. It is for the purpose of training and equipping the Royal Family of God for combat in the Angelic Conflict which is in the soul. Eph 4:12-13
    - a. This is to provide Bible Doctrine to insulate the believer against EVIL and REVERSIONISM.
    - b. This is Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine as insulation against EVIL and protection from apostasy etc.
  - ii. For the vocation of the ministry, pastors train other pastors
    - a. Seminaries did not exist in the ancient world except where the apostles existed.
    - b. There really is no authorization for seminaries in the bible and this is probably why they fall apart and rarely last more than 3 generations.
    - c. The roman church set up the concept of theological seminaries and the protestants just followed their lead.
    - d. Must good pastors have to UNLEARN what is learned in seminary unless they go prepared.
    - e. While teaching the congregation there will be certain men who have the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher and they will be trained right there as well.
  - iii. Actual spiritual growth and edification of the body of Christ the Royal Family of God.
  - iv. All these are fulfilled by teaching Bible Doctrine consistently.

**1Tim 3:1**

**v1: Faithful is the Word, If, and it is true, any male believer having reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, reaches out for, aspires to, seeks to attain leadership of the office of overseer or guardian of the local church, the pulpit and congregation, the Pastor Teacher, he has desired or longs for a most honorable office.**

**Lesson #35      Series # 467      1Tim 3:2**

- I. Doctrine of the Pastor Teacher continued:
  - A. Function of the pastor: **Eph 3:20-21**
    - 1. The principle of teaching Bible Doctrine is something which Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ ordained himself for the local church.
    - 2. He is the head of all local churches and head of the body of Christ the Royal Family of God and the local church is the classroom for teaching the congregation of the Royal Family of God.

3. The Pastor Teacher is the professor or communicator and the congregation is the group of students without portfolio.
  4. The Pastor Teacher establishes authority by faithful teaching of Bible Doctrine under ICE principles.
  5. The pastors without any authority result from their not having anything to teach and are light on doctrine, exegesis, and verse by verse analysis.
  6. Authority is established by demonstration of your proficiency and professionalism in the field you are involved in.
    - i. This is the same in marriage.
  7. It is NO fun to have to exercise strict authority and throw your authority around but it may be needed occasionally to prevent others from trying to run over you.
  8. The local church can be assembled anywhere where there are 2 or more people gathered for hearing Bible Doctrine.
  9. The Pastor Teacher is NOT a counselor nor promoter nor a money raiser nor sweetness and light love everyone person.
- B. The appointment of the Pastor Teacher:
1. No one ever earned or deserved the appointment to the HONOR of being a Pastor Teacher.
    - i. It is an honor and privilege to be a Pastor Teacher.
    - ii. It has its own problems and pressures specific to this function.
  2. The man who exercises the gift of Pastor Teacher was actually appointed by God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and did not work for it nor deserve it.
  3. This appointment of the gift at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is totally apart from human merit compatible with grace totally.
  4. A male becomes a Pastor Teacher because God the Holy Spirit decided it and ONLY for that reason.
  5. The Pastor Teacher is nothing special but a normal male member of the Royal Family of God who because of the decision of God the Holy Spirit whose sense of humor and wisdom is way beyond comprehension to give this gift at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- C. The Principle of Right Pastor / Right Congregation **1Pet 5;2**
1. The pastor is guardian of the local church NOT under compulsion but VOLUNTARILY.
  2. If a male suspects or knows that they have the gift of Pastor Teacher he should stay out of the ministry unless he KNOWS he can do it voluntarily.
  3. If there is any compulsion whether, emotional, guilt, failure ETC whatever pressure, and it is not done voluntarily forget it totally and get a job.
  4. The Pastor Teacher must be enthusiastic about his position.
- D. The concept of the Pastor Teacher as the total product of GRACE **1Cor 15:10, Eph 3:7**
1. Sometimes the Grace of God with regard to the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher is EMPTY when the person never gets to aspiration for the office or when aspired never makes it to having his own congregation.
  2. It takes the omnipotence of God to keep a pastor in the ministry of Pastor Teacher.
  3. Every Pastor Teacher is the beneficiary of or victim of the omnipotence of God the Father. **1Tim 1:12-15**
- E. Biblical Documentation for the Pastor Teacher **Eph 3:7-13, Col 1:23-29, 1Tim 2:24-26, 1Tim 3:1-9, Tit 1:6-9**
- F. Authority of the Pastor Teacher **Heb 13:7-17**
1. This authority is unique being totally unrelated to the Cosmic Dynasphere.
- G. The reward of the Pastor Teacher **Heb 6:10, 1Pet 5:4, 1Thes 2:19-20, Phil 4:1, ETC.**

- A. The Pastor Teacher must be above reproach, isolated from the congregation because of the nature of his duties with maximum time in Bible Doctrine and Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, being top in his understanding of the bible and compliance with the Laws of Divine Establishment, NOT a criminal, political conservative, pro-military, pro-free enterprise, anti communist, anti socialistic, anti big government
1. He must not be motivated to simply try to get ahead of things in life.
  2. He need not JOIN anything
  3. The Pastor Teacher does not have to identify with any organization.
  4. The Pastor Teacher is what he is because of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and nothing else.
  5. The Pastor Teacher should be anti organized labor, anti communist, anti islamic, ETC.
  6. The Pastor Teacher MUST get his information and attitudes from Bible Doctrine and not from association with any organization or political party.
  7. If the Pastor Teacher does not get his inculcation about life directly from Bible Doctrine then NO ONE in the congregation will either.
  8. He is NOT to be a JOINER to get people to come to him.
  9. The pastor must get his concepts and way of life directly from Bible Doctrine and NOT from any organization.
  10. Therefore the Pastor Teacher is FREE from being influenced by any organization.
  11. He must not subscribe to any political party and have no political affiliations and no affiliations with any organizations.
  12. Therefore, the Pastor Teacher is kept in the ministry ONLY by the omnipotence of God and nothing else.
  13. He must not join any patriotic organization and not any organization at all and stays out of all organizations.
  14. The Pastor Teacher must only be sure to be getting his information straight from the Lord and the Bible Doctrine of scripture.
- B. The Pastor Teacher is to be the MAN for one woman but this has nothing to do with DIVORCE.
1. The information is taken from the time when polygamy was common and it is saying that the Pastor Teacher cannot have more than ONE wife.
  2. No man can have a multiplicity of wives and rule the local church as too many women break his concentration.
  3. This sets aside the false standard of celibacy in the minister.
    - i. The roman church demands this of their priests because they owned more land than KINGS or dukes or princes owned and were in fear that the roman priests if they married would simply give the land to their sons and the church would lose the property.
    - ii. This has led to problems which are absolutely unbelievable Pope Alexander vii or viii who was the worst rapist and sex maniac of all time.
  4. This does not require a pastor to marry but if he does he can only have 1 wife.
  5. The nature of his life and the demands on his time cannot sustain a marriage to more than one woman.
- C. The pastor must also have a sound mind meaning he must have good common sense so that application of Bible Doctrine never destroys the perspective of Bible Doctrine.
1. In whatever teaching or advising he does it does not distort biblical principles and lead people into false concepts or LEGALISM.
- D. The pastor must have great self discipline and thus is considered HONORABLE because of it.
1. The pastor must have great self discipline to STUDY and TEACH day in and day out and the consistency in teaching Bible Doctrine is how he establishes his authority and is recognized as honorable.
- E. The Pastor Teacher must be very strong in the area of protecting the congregation from legalism and must be kind and generous in attitude toward people.



- F. Drinking is not forbidden but you cannot be drunk with a long standing hangover and study and teach doctrine correctly.
  - 1. This is also true of anyone who has any kind of LEADERSHIP responsibility, whether in the ministry, business, military or government.

**1Tim 3:2**

v2: Therefore the guardian of the local church must, with compulsion of absolute duty, be above reproach, isolated from the congregation because of the nature of his duties with maximum time in Bible Doctrine and Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, being top in his understanding of the bible and compliance with the Laws of Divine Establishment, NOT a criminal, but a political conservative, pro-military, pro-free enterprise, anti communist, anti socialistic, anti big government, the husband of one wife, the MAN over one woman or wife, temperate never being DRUNK, of sound mind with spiritual common sense, being well disciplined thus honorable in his soul, hospitable, kind, generous, concerned in dealing with people, protecting them from legalism, bullying false doctrine, reversionism and evil, respecting the privacy of the life of the individual believers, skillful in teaching,

**Lesson #36                      Series # 467                      1Tim 3:3**

- I. Freedom through military victory:
  - A. Lawrence David Peters, Sgt USMC, 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalion 5<sup>th</sup> Marine regiment, 1<sup>st</sup> Marine Division, M Company, Vietnam Sept 1967,
  - B. Steven W. Pless, Maj USMC, Helicopter Gunship Pilot, Marine Observation Squadron 6 Quang Ni Vietnam 19 Aug 1967
- II. The Pastor Teacher continued:
  - A. The use of wine or drinking is NOT forbidden but it is restricted and qualified in its use.
    - 1. This is prohibiting the drinking of wine here until the person becomes quarrelsome and abusive from drinking too much.
    - 2. Wine was never forbidden to believers or anyone else.
    - 3. Drunkenness is however a sin and the bible does not command abstinence from wine but TEMPERANCE and Judgment in its use.
    - 4. All things in life which are enjoyable require judgment, common sense and some self discipline.

**1Tom 5:23**

- 5. In fact timothy was instructed to drink some wine and then go out and straighten out the women.
- 6. This prohibition here is not directed toward drinking but abusiveness connected with drinking.
- B. Doctrine of Drinking:
  - 1. Never in history has drinking been prohibited especially in areas where the water was not pure and available for drinking.
    - i. Only in the United States of America has there ever been such a thing as "Prohibition".
    - ii. This is the only place in the world where we have adjectives to describe places such as WET and DRY with regard to alcohol.
  - 2. The bible is very clear that Drunkenness is a sin and drinking alcohol is NOT a sin.
    - i. It is also very clear that good judgment must go with drinking alcohol.
    - ii. People without good common sense or good judgment should not ever drink.
  - 3. Drunkenness is always condemned as a sin, **Is 5:11+22, 28:7-8, Prov 20:1, 23:20, Rom 13:13, 1Cor 5:11, Eph 5:18**
    - i. Stonewall Jackson loved to drink and loved to dance and later in his career and he stopped drinking and when asked said he did so because he liked wine too much and had a job to do and nothing was going to disturb his concentration on that job.
    - ii. Everyone has to rule self in this manner and we are free to drink alcohol but also are free to SAY NO.

4. Whether saying NO or YES we are not saying this for something forbidden by the bible and are neither better or worse for either decision except for the potential for being worse are always on the side of drinking.
  - i. The bible does not condone drinking but does not forbid it and if a believer becomes an alcoholic it is HIS decision to do so and this is a sin.
5. Heavy drinking and drunkenness is to be avoided in certain categories of people where leadership judgment is required.
  - i. All men in leadership must make decisions and must make these decisions when NOT under the influence of alcohol.
  - ii. When a person drinks too much they are a different person and when under the influence of alcohol the wrong person in the position of leadership makes wrong decisions when under the influence of alcohol.

**Prov 31:4-5,**

- iii. You cannot be in command of people in any way and be a heavy drinker and IF IN DOUBT DON'T DRINK AT ALL.
  - iv. Pastors, deacons, etc.
  - v. Drunkenness is a double sin when anyone in leadership becomes drunk and makes policy decisions for an organization.
6. Drunkenness is condemned in certain bible characters:
    - i. 3 of these 4 are believers and face to face with the Lord NOW.
    - ii. Noah, **Gen 9:21**
    - iii. Nabal, **1Sam 25:36-37** (unbeliever who was very abusive)
      - a. Many males when overloaded with alcohol become very very abusive and they should never drink.
    - iv. Ephraim **Is 28:1** refers to many believers in the Northern Kingdom becoming alcoholics and contributing to the downfall of this part of the nation.
    - v. Lot **Gen 19:32-36** spent a great deal of time in Incest from overloading with alcohol.

7. Drinking of alcohol is condoned under certain circumstances:

**Prov 31:6-7, 1Tim 5:23**

- i. This is sort of a nerve tonic for these people.
  - ii. Medically speaking a limited conservative amount of alcohol can be beneficial in:
    - a. Brain and nervous system as a sedative
    - b. Stomach where it stimulates the appetite.
    - c. **Circulation in older people. ME!!!**
8. Adverse effects of alcohol:
    - i. Alcohol is a judgment call in every way and if you are 18 or under DON'T.
      - a. Many people turn to Bible Doctrine because they have poor judgment.
    - ii. Excessive use of alcohol leads to impulsive and abusive behavior.
      - a. As a depressant it lowers inhibitions and dulls reflexes and it amplifies the mental attitudes good or bad.
      - b. Drunken drivers kill and drunken lovers abuse and members of the Human Race must use judgment and avoid it or society must put them away.
    - iii. Vernikese Disease with paralysis of the eyes and uncoordinated walk, clouding of the consciousness and finally coma.
      - a. This can be contracted by drinking of bad wine.
    - iv. Machifababignanies Disease where excess alcohol destroys brain tissue and thus limits the ability to THINK.
    - v. Cirrhosis of the Liver where excess alcohol destroys liver tissue and then the person.
    - vi. DTs, Delirium Tremens where people have delusions and hallucinations.

vii. Korsakov's Psychosis where alcohol effects the brain and causes the person to become a pathological liar.

9. The lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ did turn water into alcoholic beverage.

### John 2:1+6

i. By so doing this the miracle does not condone nor condemn drinking.

ii. This miracle was to focus attention on who and what Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was, the God man unique person of the universe and messiah.

iii. Wine produces joy in the heart **Judg 9:13, Ps 104:15** and the daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception converting Bible Doctrine into Super Grace God then shares his HAPPINESS with the believer.

iv. The miracle focus's attention on the Hypostatic Union and uniqueness of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and at the same time illustrates the means of converting Metabolized Bible Doctrine into capacity for life and blessing.

10. Alcoholism is a part of national disaster.

i. When people in too large a number become alcoholic or addicted this is a definite part of national disaster.

### Joel 1:4-6

ii. It relates to economic depression where drinking reduces business judgment.

iii. It relates to frustration of people multiplying psychosis

iv. It relates to military invasion where by alcoholics are easy to conquer.

11. The conditions under which drinking should be restrained:

i. Law of liberty says you have a right and freedom to drink

ii. Law of Love directed toward believers says if this makes someone stumble in the Spiritual Life you cannot drink.

iii. Law of Expediency toward Unbelievers is used when the presentation of the gospel is being engaged in and therefore DRINKING is a false issue in this case.

iv. Law of supreme sacrifice directed toward God so that when drinking hinders a specific ministry it is prohibited.

v. While Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ turned water into wine at Cana of Galilee he refused a drink before his crucifixion to negate any possibility that alcohol would have an adverse effect on him.

12. Drinking is related to reversionism **Jer 13:12-17**

i. Wine is used in scripture to illustrate sublimation involved in the rejection of Bible Doctrine.

ii. When Bible Doctrine is rejected it is rejection of cat I love.

iii. Drunkenness at the communion table is related to extreme Divine Discipline. **1Cor 11**, you cannot be filled with God the Holy Spirit and Spirits and get anything from the Eucharist.

13. Common Sense and Drinking:

i. Importance of abstinence on the job

a. Abstinence is good on the job, in young people to avoid frustrations when situations get out of control.

ii. While moderate drinking is not prohibited by the bible is belongs to those with maturity to handle it and young people should not drink.

iii. Drinking is NOT for young ladies on dates with strange men or when with an unfamiliar crowd.

iv. NO ONE should ever drink when alone or upset.

v. Never drink with strangers or in strange places.

vi. NEVER drink while working or on the job.

vii. NEVER Drink while operating any machinery or driving or flying.

C. The pastor is to not get drunk or abusive

1. The Pastor Teacher cannot do their job and drink and being technically on the job for 18 hours they have not time for it.
- D. The pastor is NOT to be a striker of persons:
1. The use of the Negative 'me' does not totally shut the door on punching or slugging.
  2. Most pastors cannot punch out of a paper bag anyway
  3. The principle behind it is that the exercise of pastoral authority demands objectivity and fairness and FIGHTING or PUNCHING is usually making a hasty decision or reflex decision without all the facts.
  4. The pastor must fulfill his ministry without intrusion on the Royal Family of God in his charge and subjecting them to bullying or coercion including legalistic coercion not just physical coercion.
  5. It is not fair to teach the word dramatically and over stress points of doctrine and bullying a believer.
  6. The bible itself from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the individual believer must be the director or inner dictator NOT a bullying pastor.
  7. This is how systems of legalism are set up.
  8. Some of the greatest believers in History DRANK such as Paul, David, and others and only in the United States of America with prohibition and fundamental legalism did drinking become an issue.
  9. Just because some people abuse privileges granted them it does not negate the principle that JUDGMENT is important.
  10. The pastor is not to assert his authority by fighting people and this is the wrong way and the Pastor Teacher must assert his authority by TEACHING Bible Doctrine.
- E. The pastor is not to be avaricious a lover of money, not being greedy or covetous.
1. Love of money is bad for anyone.
  2. We all use money but LOVE for money is the root of all kinds of EVIL.
  3. It is perfectly OK to have money and God even provides great wealth to many Super Grace believers but it is not provided so that they can give it all to some charity.
  4. They are to keep it and multiply it and use it to make the economy stronger.
  5. LOVE of MONEY brings the Pastor Teacher under the influence of evil.
  6. Many pastors don't love money but would like to simply have a little money for their work.
  7. Some of the lowest paid people in the United States of America are fundamentalist Pastor Teachers and the highest paid people are Jewish Rabbis.
  8. The worst think money in a church can be used for is PROGRAMS.
  9. When giving is distorted and the love for money by the Pastor Teacher turns him into an extortionist, con artist or embezzler or plunderer of believers.
  10. Money must not be an issue with the Pastor Teacher and if the salary is enough it never will be.
- F. The Pastor Teacher must be fair and reasonable with his congregation and his leadership authority must totally exclude prejudice.
1. He must rule on all cases based on facts and doctrinal principles.
- G. The Pastor Teacher has a great and heavy responsibility in his relationship with others.
- III. V4-5 is the minister in relationship to his family.
- A. If the Pastor Teacher cannot rule his family he cannot rule the local church.
1. The pastor must run 2 things co-conterminously his family and the local church.
  2. The pastor must control his minor children in his home.
  3. Children must be allowed to be NORMAL children but must remain under control of the pastor.
  4. The congregation has no right to try to run the pastor NOR his family.

5. When the children of a pastor do not turn out well it is because the pastor does not run his wife his household and children and his congregation.
6. The Pastor Teacher must be a MAN and he has authority direct from God and the only authority which has NO infiltration of the Cosmic Dynasphere.
7. The pastor must use his discipline to instill respect and a pastor who cannot rule his family nor his congregation correctly should not be a pastor.

B. Principles:

1. The proper use of authority and discipline produces respect from those being disciplined.
2. Respect leads to subordination to the authority of the leader in the organization, family, local church or business.
  - i. This is where business owners lose control of the business.
3. A leader does not have to possess the love of his subordinates but it is essential to possess their respect.
4. Those who lack respect must be eliminated or disciplined or both.
5. Generally how a minister handles his family is an index as to how he will handle the congregation of his local church.
6. The Pastor Teacher who cannot control his family cannot control the congregation.

IV. V5:

- A. The pastor who cannot handle his own household and family will not be able to take care of the local church.

**1Tim 3:3**

**v3: Not abusive quarrelsome drunkenness, not violent or a fighter or a bully, but fair and reasonable, not contentious not allowing prejudice to rule his decisions, not avaricious or a lover of money,**

**1Tim 3:4**

**v4: He must rule or manage his own household in the correct way, holding his children in subordination associated with all respectfulness in every way;**

**1Tim 3:5**

**v5: In fact if, and it is true, any pastor does not know how to rule or govern his own household and family, how shall he take care of the church of God? He cannot.**

**Lesson #37      Series # 467      1Tim 3:6**

I. Freedom through Military Victory:

- A. Capt. Harel Peas, Bomber Pilot Army Air corps 6-7 Aug 1942

II. Qualifications of Leadership for the Pastor Teacher continued:

- A. Minister in relationship to spiritual growth or Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  1. The Pastor Teacher must not be a novice believer but must have a great deal of spiritual growth to become and aspire to be a Pastor Teacher.
- B. To fulfill his function the Pastor Teacher must STUDY and if he does not study he cannot teach.
  1. So if he fulfills his function of Pastor Teacher properly and is persistent in studying he will get to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  2. He will therefore be able to lead his congregation to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God as well.
  3. Any man who aspires to the Pastor Teacher must have spiritual growth to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God from consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception in order to recognize the spiritual gift and must not be involved in blind arrogance.
  4. The fact is that all immature believers have some level of Blind Arrogance and if time elapses without spiritual growth then blind arrogance is inevitable.
  5. The only means of offsetting blind arrogance is the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception to move up in the Spiritual Life.
    - i. These are the spurt type of bible study people who only engage in the study of Bible Doctrine if it interests them.

6. Apart from consistency in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine BLIND ARROGANCE is Inevitable.
- C. Blind arrogance is a trap for the immature believer who can fall into it easily unless they engage in the function of Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
1. Because of entering into blind arrogance the believer or Pastor Teacher here is subject to Judgment, condemnation and resultant Divine Discipline judgment.
- D. Principles:
1. The greatest occupational hazard of the NEW or immature believer is blind arrogance.
    - i. This passage deals with the characteristics of the Pastor Teacher at the point of aspiration but it also applies to all.
  2. Blind arrogance hinders and frustrates spiritual growth by systems of legalism and pseudo spirituality but also takes a negative or limited view of Bible Doctrine communicated in the local church.
    - i. This person always has some kind of limitation in his soul as to how much or what Bible Doctrine he will take in from his Pastor Teacher in his local church.
    - ii. He takes a limited view and qualifies what the Pastor Teacher teaches either agreeing or disagreeing with it.
    - iii. Most disagreement is based on preconceived notions which are in error and out of line and apostate and blind arrogance always prefers one zone of preconceived notions over what a part of the TEXT of Scripture actually teaches.
    - iv. This limits the assimilation of Bible Doctrine even if listening when the person takes exception to one thing or another.
    - v. This occurs when many believers who come from various “religious” backgrounds convert and cannot grow up in the Spiritual Life because of constant reaction to bible doctrine.
    - vi. Somewhere you have to decide on your own right Pastor Teacher and simply stay under him and listen and LEARN.
    - vii. People must learn to become objective as this is the way you actually learn and must not spend time in negative and emotional reactions based on what is being taught.
    - viii. It takes a great deal of objectivity when your own brand of “holiness” is trampled into the mud by accurate Bible Doctrine teaching.
    - ix. Attendance in bible class requires CONCENTRATION and Filling of God the Holy Spirit and just being there is not enough.
    - x. Believers are in bible class or doing bible study NOT to react but to Respond and why the Filling of God the Holy Spirit is essential for bible study.
    - xi. We must lose our preconceived ideas from prior religious study.
  3. Blind arrogance guarantees that the effected individuals will be influenced by evil rather than by Bible Doctrine.
    - i. This may come in the form of Ascetic Reversionism
      - a. If you want to be saved and want to be spiritual you must never have SEX and live in celibacy.
  4. Blind arrogance follows the patter of the fall of Lucifer resulting in the Royal Family of God with reversionism and the accompanying 3 stages of Divine Discipline
  5. The best summary of blind arrogance is **Matt 19:27-20:34**
  6. Blind Arrogance neutralizes the purest and highest authority given by God in Human History.
  7. The authority of the Pastor Teacher or guardian of the local church is the only authority in all of Human History not related to the Cosmic Dynasphere in some way.
    - i. All other authority in life is related in one way or another to the ruler of this world.

- ii. The only pure authority in history is spiritual authority which is today vested in the Pastor Teacher in the local church.

III. V7:

- A. blind arrogance usually means that those who are lacking blind arrogance being normal have not interest in those who are involved with blind arrogance.
- B. The Pastor Teacher must have an honorable reputation
  - 1. This relates the Pastor Teacher to the community in which the local church is; located.
    - i. He does not have to be involved in community activities.
  - 2. This means the pastor must be PRO establishment, support the local policy and military establishments, be a patriot, have good financial status, free from both liberal and criminal activities, be honest in his activities including payment of income taxes.
- C. Many pastors get under the influence of evil by becoming involved in areas of rejection of military liberalism in any area, welfare, abortion reform, government interference with business.
- D. A pastor is a human being given authority from God in the form of the gift of Pastor Teacher.
  - 1. This does not mean he is qualified at this point but it means the authority is there.
  - 2. If he grows and when he reaches the adolescent or pre mature level of growth he will reach the point of aspiring to the office of Pastor Teacher.
  - 3. If he is under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine he will do whatever in life his talents can take him to but he has lost out on the office of guardian of the local church.
  - 4. Aspiration to the office of Pastor Teacher is the point of awareness from spiritual growth.
  - 5. Moving from aspiration to the office takes preparation which is a very difficult time.
  - 6. When he arrives as guardian of the local church he had to go through all of these things and develop them.
  - 7. Self discipline and STUDENTSHIP are essentials for reaching Pastor Teacher.
  - 8. The basic training for the man with the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher occurs in the local church.
  - 9. Seminaries never existed in the long past times and only serve to provide technical subject information in theology and languages.

IV. Doctrine of the Grace Apparatus for Perception:

- A. This is how every person who becomes a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ becomes aware of what his spiritual gift is and begins to function in it.
  - 1. Service is NOT the big thing in spiritual growth but is a secondary thing and the primary thing in the Spiritual Life is spiritual growth from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
  - 2. Service is simply follow through from spiritual growth to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - 3. The follow through from reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Super Grace is SERVICE.
  - 4. Serving God is NOT honoring or glorifying or pleasing God and this only occurs when a believer has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.
  - 5. This is where God also starts HONORING YOU and recognizing you and gives you incredible blessings.
  - 6. **OUR PRIMARY INTEREST MUST BE THE INTAKE OF BIBLE DOCTRINE.**
  - 7. Service will then fall into our lap as a mature believer.
  - 8. With spiritual growth will come great wealth, success and prosperity of all kinds and great spiritual blessings.
  - 9. We should not and must not be concerned about seeking service in the Spiritual Life but must get more and more Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so that when God can pour out blessing to us then he is glorified.

10. In this world God is glorified totally apart from any satanic function and this is the tactical victory which sets Satan back because he has nothing to do with our success or wealth but it is strictly a matter of GRACE.
  11. Many believers get service in front of maturity.
- B. Definition:
1. It is the acrostic representation for the Grace Apparatus for Perception and the doctrine which is the means of assimilation of Bible Doctrine and of spiritual growth.
    - i. It is the system which God provided in Eternity Past where by every believer is able to understand divine revelation and content of the written word and in the past prophets and priests were able to understand and communicate Bible Doctrine.
    - ii. It is god's provision for spiritual growth and advance in the Spiritual Life without regard to education or intellect and assimilate Bible Doctrine.
  2. There are 2 basic systems of meritorious perception:
    - i. Rationalism which uses reason as the source of knowledge making it superior to any sensory perception.
      - a. This is the adherence to the supremacy of reason in matters of belief conduct and perception.
      - b. Subjection of Bible Doctrine and scriptural interpretation to human reason is rejection of dogmatic authority and this explains the trends of modern christian believers today.
    - ii. Empiricism is learning by observation and experimentation ie the scientific method.
      - a. Reality lies in the information from the senses of the Human Body sent to the brain for the establishment of reality.
        - i ) Experience, Observation, Experimentation.
  3. There is a system of nonmeritorious perception as well.
    - i. Faith is the learning by acceptance of the authority of the criterion.
    - ii. Reality of the UNSEEN is a system of perception but it is NONMERITORIOUS.
    - iii. We all have learned everything in our early life by this system.
    - iv. This is building knowledge on an absolute authority (GOD) or an axiom (1+1=2)
    - v. As a system of perception it has been attempted to gradually eliminate it from life in our education system in many areas (new history, New Math).
    - vi. Validity of Faith depends on the criterion which is the object of faith.
    - vii. In Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the object is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and this is where validity is found.
- C. In the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception faith is the system of perception of the subject of Bible Doctrine taught from pulpits NEVER taught outside the local church.
1. There must be a bonafide Pastor Teacher teaching from the pulpit of the local church under strict academic discipline.
    - i. There is no such thing as a self taught believer nor a self taught Pastor Teacher.
    - ii. All believers MUST learn Bible Doctrine from someone else and no one ever learns without subjection to the authority of another.
- D. Human IQ vs Spiritual IQ
1. Human IQ is questionable and the cut off dates for this testing is 14 to 16 years old.
    - i. This is overrated and whether your IQ is HI or LO it is meaningless in learning Bible Doctrine.
  2. Grace eliminates the whole IQ system and substitutes a nonmeritorious system. **Col 1:9-10.**
- E. The exclusion of Human IQ from the Grace Apparatus for Perception is important.
1. This has often been considered essential in learning Bible Doctrine but in fact it is not.
  2. Some of the greatest believers in Human History have had low IQs.



3. Persistence, motivation, Filling of God the Holy Spirit, faithfulness in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is what counts. **1Cor 1:19-2:16**

F. Grace Provision for learning Bible Doctrine includes:

1. Formation and preservation of the canon of scripture the absolute TEXT of Bible Doctrine.
  - i. Inspiration of the doctrinal information in the canon of scripture.
  - ii. Preservation of the doctrine in the original languages of Hebrew, Chaldean and Greek so that the accurate meaning of any passage can be determined and provided by those qualified to do so.
2. The grace provision for learning Bible Doctrine in the divine authorization of the local church as the classroom for learning Bible Doctrine.
  - i. Only in this classroom can the Royal Family of God learn Bible Doctrine and grow in the Spiritual Life.
  - ii. NO OUTSIDE service organization in Christianity can ever accomplish the function of the local church and none ever last more than 3 generations.
  - iii. The Royal Family of God assemble in this classroom and their only right is concentration and those things required for it to occur, good manners, poise, motivation etc.
  - iv. The assembly must be under strict academic discipline and these things are enhanced by the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
  - v. The Pastor Teacher has absolute authority to teach in a monologue compatible with his style and he is the ruler of the local church and deacons are administrators under him.
  - vi. The Pastor Teacher is the rule policy maker and has absolute authority in the congregation.
  - vii. The Bible Doctrine learned in the local church under the Pastor Teacher when it builds in the soul becomes a dictator in the soul and this command post of the soul **MUST BE DEVELOPED.**
  - viii. This enables a believer to move into any situation in the world and take orders from their own soul.
3. The right Pastor Teacher
  - i. The spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher provides authority and ability to communicate Bible Doctrine in the local church by **MONOLOGUE.**
  - ii. The spiritual gift is distributed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and with enough spiritual growth there comes aspiration to the office and function of Pastor Teacher.
  - iii. Preparation begins after aspiration and goes to the point of taking the first local church and it must be preceded by spiritual growth and include any form of strict discipline which will produce self discipline and good study habits.
4. The royal priesthood of the believer in the Church Age.
  - i. This dispensation is the only dispensation with the authorized local church for the official classroom because every believer in this dispensation is part of the Royal Family of God and are royal priests.
  - ii. Royalty is much more difficult to teach than anyone else.
  - iii. The royal priesthood is given the classroom to learn since the priesthood means privacy and freedom and gathering in the local church allows the priest to use these 2 things to function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - iv. There must be Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for spiritual growth to avoid bullying and ensure privacy and give every other believer a chance to learn Bible Doctrine and this occurs best in the local

church where his identity, talent, ability, success are never an issue and are obscured.

- v. The believer therefore can concentrate as a novice and move to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - vi. The criterion is Bible Doctrine and concentration under Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - vii. Human gimmicks and public relations, legalistic antics and experience and other things are NOT ever a substitute for the spiritual dynamics of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - viii. Every royal priest through the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception must construct is own altar in the soul.
    - a. This is when service begins when the command post altar is completed.
5. The ministry of God the Holy Spirit
- i. The aristocracy of the priesthood is always related to who and what God the Holy Spirit is.
  - ii. The ministries of God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God reminds us that he has a definitive part in phase II of our spiritual life.
  - iii. His primary objective of controlling our soul is the intake of Bible Doctrine and then proper use of that doctrine.
6. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we receive the Human Spirit in order that we might have a repository for Bible Doctrine as it is processed into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Rom 8:16-17
7. Provision of the Laws of Divine Establishment
- i. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment national government is responsible to protect privacy and freedom of the local church.
    - a. This is religious liberty in our government documents.
    - b. This is our mandate for separation of church and state.
  - ii. Freedom is maintained through military victory which guarantees the perpetuation of freedom for the local church.
  - iii. Internal function of the Judicial system with the Judge on the Bench and Law Enforcement personnel providing and protecting freedom, privacy, property and LIFE.
  - iv. Human Authority where the Pastor Teacher has authority in the local church
    - a. Any person who rejects any authority of life will also obviously resist the authority of the Pastor Teacher hindering their spiritual growth.
8. Grace in Human Anatomy
- i. This is our provision of all things which allow us as human beings to live and learn Bible Doctrine and retain it in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- G. The activities whereby Bible Doctrine starts from the pages of scripture then goes to the soul of the Pastor Teacher and then to the soul of the congregation.
- 1. This is receptive comprehension.
- H. Mechanics of the Grace Apparatus for Perception:
- 1. Operation ICE in the studying and teaching of Bible Doctrine.
  - 2. Moving through Operation Z to Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
    - i. Reception
    - ii. Gnosis
    - iii. Faith
    - iv. Epignosis
  - 3. Review the vocabulary of the operation of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and operation Z in the soul.
- I. Primary Result of the Grace Apparatus for Perception:

1. Spiritual Maturity resulting in Maximum Glorification of God and the tactical victory of the Angelic Conflict.
2. These are expressed in terms of synonyms:
  - i. Language Synonym == Chakmah, Epignosis
  - ii. Theological Synonym == James 4;6, More Grace, GREATER GRACE or Super Grace, Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - iii. Priestly synonym == Altar of the soul Heb 13:10 related to service
  - iv. Building Synonym == construction of the Edification Complex of the Soul Eph 4;12 + 16
  - v. Time Synonym == God provides 1 day at a time for believers and the capital for redeeming time is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - a. Toward God Eph 5:16-18
    - b. Toward Unbeliever Col 4;5
  - vi. Central Control Synonym == Dictator or command post of the soul, where inner residence of Metabolized Bible Doctrine sets up a system of norms and standards which creates a central control center. Eph 6:10
  - vii. Military Synonyms == Results of the Grace Apparatus for Perception in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God
    - a. Putting on the full armor from God Eph 6:11-13
    - b. Following the colors to the high ground Heb 12:1-2
    - c. Establishing the command post in the soul Col 2:5-8
  - viii. Crucifixion synonym == to take up the cross and follow Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ this is attendance at the local church despite any distractions and following is the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception resulting in reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - ix. Chemical Synonym == being the SALT of the land preserving the national entity.
  - x. Sanctification Synonym == Godliness 1Tim 6:3-6, 2Pet 1:3
- J. Other results of function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception:
  1. Reversion recovery including removal of Scar Tissue of the Soul, freedom from the influence of evil, canceling of Divine Discipline.
  2. Glorification of God in the Angelic Conflict through attaining Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Super Grace resulting in receiving Super Grace blessings in 4 categories with a 5<sup>th</sup> reserved for death and receiving blessings in eternity as well.
    - i. These are totally apart from the satanic system of rewards for the Human Race which are very attractive to many believers.
  3. Equates the royal status of the believer with his royal priesthood.
    - i. The function of the royal priest begins at spiritual maturity when the altar of the soul is established.
  4. Leads to Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and other capacities for life, love, prosperity, adversity, ETC.
    - i. You cannot love God until you know God and you cannot know God without knowledge of Bible Doctrine from God.
  5. Provides maximum influence in history as part of the super grace blessings.
    - i. These believers have maximum impact on the thinking of those in their generation.
    - ii. Causal thinking when it begins sets the stage for destruction of the national entity.
  6. Provides the basis for bonifide production in the Spiritual Life
    - i. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is qualified for christian service and produces Divine Good in stead of Human Good and is insulated from evil in his activities.

7. Becomes the basis for eternal rewards for the believer who holds on to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Super Grace by continued function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.

1Tim 3:6

v6: NOT a neophyte, new believer or an immature Believer lest, blind from conceit, having received Blind Arrogance he might fall into or become involved in the judgment and condemnation with Divine Discipline of the devil,

1Tim 3:7

v7: moreover, he must also, under duty, be having a noble or honorable reputation from those outside of the local church where he is pastor, both believers and unbelievers, in order that he might not fall into disgrace under the influence of evil the policy of Satan, and the snare of reversionism of the devil, ruler of this world.

**Lesson #38                      Series # 467                      1Tim 3:8**

I. Deacons

- A. The Pastor Teacher is the best qualified person to determine what men can serve in the capacity of deacon.
  1. The administration in the local church is dependent on the quality of deacons.
  2. You cannot run the local church when deacons are elected by the congregation.
  3. There never is a plurality of others in the local church either the Pastor Teacher is in charge and he must choose the best qualified deacons to administer the local church.
  4. Nice people are not always good administrators and it is rare to find a NICE person who is a good administrator.
  5. Ladies think that the person who speaks sweetly is the best for the board of deacons and therefore personality has nothing to do with whether a person will be a good deacon.
  6. It is important to select (the Pastor Teacher) deacons who have the spiritual gift and are qualified to administer some segment of the function in the local church.
  7. There is no such thing as a pattern for a good deacon but they must have the spiritual gift and be in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God combining to form a **unique** administrator for the unique system of the local church.
  8. There cannot be maudlin sentimentality in any organization in the administration and being cruel and firing people is essential.
  9. Any man who is run by his wife is eliminated and there is no place for petty coat government or administration in the local church.
  10. Ladies are not qualified to BE or to select deacons in any way.
- B. Parallel situation between Deacons and Pastors with regard to qualifications.
  1. Deacons and Pastor Teachers must be chosen for the same reason and conduct themselves in the same way.
  2. The using of the word Deacon.
  3. In Jerusalem the early church was so strongly persecuted by the Pharisees and San hedron that the people became broke in almost no time and they had to set up a bread line for food.
  4. The complaint was among widows of Greek Jews and they were put at the end of the line and did not get much food.
  - 5.

Acts 6:1-5

v1: And in those days (40 yrs prior to 5<sup>th</sup> cycle), when the number of the disciples (Nazarines, Christians, students of Doctrine) was multiplied there arose a quarrel of the Hellenistic Jews against the Hebrews {Mosaic Law Jews}, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministrations or serving of food.

v2: Then the twelve {11+ 1 'elected'} called the multitude of the disciples unto them in a congregational meeting, and said, "It is not pleasing to God that we neglect the word of God, in order to serve tables and distribute food at the Table."

v3: But, Believers in the Congregation, observe carefully with discernment from among you seven Noble or Honest Men having stability of character, a good reputation, habitually filled with God the Holy Spirit and having maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for a balance of residence and

**Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God who function in wisdom, whom we {the apostles} may appoint over this administration of charity distribution.**

**v4: But, we {Apostles and Pastors} will *endure or Persist in or face to face* with prayer, and the teaching of the Word.**

**v5: And the message pleased the whole congregation. And they chose Stephen, a manly man full of Bible Doctrine {maximum faith rest technique} and God the Holy Spirit; and Philip; and Prochorus; and Nicanor {means victorious}; and Timon {means Worthy}; and Parmenas {lived a long life then was a Martyr}; and Nicolas, a proselyte of Antioch.**

- i. These were the original seven deacons.
  6. It is very interesting that these men must have Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and strength in the area of administration.
    - i. There is a clear delineation between the function of the Pastor Teachers and Deacons and the Pastor Teachers will go right on studying and teaching and the deacons will go on administering.
    - ii. Men who carry the administrative load in the local church must be the men who are in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and qualified to administer.
- C. The local church has a multiplicity of administrators but ONLY 1 Pastor Teacher.
  1. Deacons must be in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God
  2. The Pastor Teacher is the policy maker of the local church and must make all sorts of decisions but the administration of his policy is not the responsibility of the Pastor Teacher.
  3. The policy is based on his study and understanding of Bible Doctrine but the Deacons must be administrators who will carry out this policy.
  4. The grace policy of the Pastor Teacher must be recognized and understood from the Divine Viewpoint of the deacons in order for them to properly carry it out vigorously in compatibility with their spiritual gift.
  5. Therefore there cannot be any lapse between the policy set by the Pastor Teacher and their understanding of the doctrinal basis for it.
  6. This means the deacons must be constantly under the influence of Bible Doctrine taught by the Pastor Teacher.
  7. They must be under the influence of Bible Doctrine and never under the influence of evil.
  8. The deacon must never be in a state of reversionism and must have a continuous positive volition to Bible Doctrine and he must lead the way in exposure to Bible Doctrine and his own spiritual growth.
  9. His administrative function must align with grace as taught from the pulpit.
  10. The deacon must be spiritually self sustaining.
- D. In addition the deacon must not be constantly under the influence of alcohol.
  1. You cannot function in any form of leadership when you are filled with spirits.
  2. This does not prohibit drinking just drunkenness.
  3. The Pastor Teacher must not be abusive or quarrelsome and lose their judgment when he is drinking in compatibility with his responsibility as leader of the local church.
  4. The deacons are warned to not become a persistent drinker or alcoholic as this would ruin his ability to administer in the local church.
  5. Both are told to be moderate in drinking the pastor to not be abusive and the deacons so that their minds would not be clouded in their administration functions.
  6. NO ONE ever in leadership in any area of life should ever be a slave to alcoholic beverage.
    - i. Leadership cannot afford to be a slave to **ANYTHING** except his responsibilities.
    - ii. Not to his wife, alcohol, etc and must be free to function under his spiritual gift in compatibility with his ability under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
  7. No great leader in history has perpetuated his leadership when he had become addicted to alcoholic beverage.

- i. Alexander the Great who drank himself to death.
  - ii. Some great leaders in history were so self disciplined that they avoided anything which would distract them.
    - a. Exceptions: Sam Houston, Ulysses S Grant
    - b. Sam Houston was of such a character that when the issue of the war with Mexico came he said it would not be serving Texas if he continued drinking.
8. It is important to remember that there are many detrimental things which come from using alcohol in excess.
- i. The bible does not forbid drinking but does curtail the use of alcohol in leadership.
  - ii. It does prohibit drunkenness and this is a sin and rebound must be used.
9. Self discipline and concentration needed to succeed and assume leadership responsibility in any field of life is hindered by alcohol.
- i. Many who don't drink don't for the wrong reasons.
  - ii. Most believers who grew up in christian or religious homes have the WRONG idea about drinking.
  - iii. Many of the greatest preachers in the past 150 years have been drinkers in moderation or smokers especially of cigars.
  - iv. Whether a person drinks or does not never determines their greatness in their field in history.
10. The higher you go in leadership the more you must be free from ANY form of slavery whether women or alcohol.
- i. All great leaders in history have been moderate and NOT enslaved to anyone or any thing.
- E. The local church leadership demands both spiritual and temporal leadership qualities it is even more important for them to NOT be addicted to anything.
1. Drugs addiction disqualifies one from anything.
    - i. The bible forbids narcotics in any form and there is no place for any of it.
    - ii. Alcohol is allowed only in moderation.
  2. Any stimulant which clouds the judgment of a person must be eliminated since it removes his sense of fairness and common sense if he is to remain a leader.
    - i. You cannot remain a leader without incredible self discipline.
    - ii. The pastor must be a super student of Bible Doctrine and his requires incredible self discipline and concentration dedication and clear thinking.
      - a. NO ONE can study all days with a hangover.
  3. It is impossible in any leadership function especially business to function properly and do a good job when drunk.
    - i. The most difficult thing is to keep executives in business from drinking too much and it takes 5 or 6 years for executives to figure out how to function and by that time they have had to go to rehab a few times.
  4. Alcohol in too large amounts adversely effects the brain, concentration, health and vigor needed to fulfill the concepts of studying and teaching for the Pastor Teacher and deacons have necessity for the same good judgment and clarity of thoughts.
- F. They must in addition NOT be a slave to MONEY.
1. Any form of true leadership finds the leader MARRIED to his leadership.
  2. The higher you do the tougher it is.
  3. The deacons must not be slaves to DISHONEST Gains of money
  4. Every believer has a right to make money and have wealth.
  5. The idea that you have to give all your money and possessions to the church or friends is idiotic.
  6. Every man in business has a right to make a profit but it CANNOT be dishonestly gained.

7. If a believer is a slave to making money dishonestly he is disqualified to function properly as a deacon.
  8. Dishonest business practices or cheating in business from abnormal slavery to money, to make a dishonest profit disqualifies a properly gifted believer from serving in deacon leadership positions in the local church even when better qualified than any others.
  9. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment and free enterprise any man in business has a right to legitimate profit.
- G. Leaders cannot be slaves to Alcohol, drugs, women nor money.
- II. Spiritual Qualifications:
- A. Principles:
1. The deacon must be under the consistent persistent daily influence of Bible Doctrine to avoid influence of evil and perpetuate his spiritual growth.

**1Tim 3:8**

**v8: Likewise in the same manner as Pastor Teachers, High Quality Men as Deacons or Leaders or Administrators or Deputies rendering service in the function of the business in the local church under the Pastor Teacher, must be worthy of respect, honorable, having advanced spiritual growth from consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, not given to double talk, saying one thing and meaning another, deceitful, hypocritical in speech, having integrity of character not influenced by evil, be guarding against much wine, not addicted to wine constantly under the influence of alcohol, do not be having a fondness, eagerness or slavery for dishonorable, indecent, dishonest gain or profit;**

**Lesson #39                      Series # 467                      1Tim 3:9**

- I. Freedom through military victory:
- A. This is a law of God which will operate until the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - B. Francis S. Curry, Sgt. US Army, K Company, 130<sup>th</sup> Infantry, 30<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, Automatic Rifleman, Ardenes Offensive, Malmady, Belgium, 21 Dec 1944
    1. In this battle the US allies had a great shortage of armor against 2 panzer armies and soldiers of the US did a fantastic job against incredible odds.
  - C. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment it is the function of establishment to make it possible for evangelists to do their job and freedom whereby individuals can assemble in local churches and grow in grace.
- II. Leadership Qualifications for the Pastor Teachers and for deacons
- A. v1-7 for pastors
  - B. For both pastors and deacons and any one in leadership positions, you cannot be a slave of anything and fulfill leadership functions.
  - C. The deacons in the rest of the passage
    1. Once a man is in the position of deacon for administration of the local church he MUST remain consistent in the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and this is the greatest failure of deacons.
    2. All policies for the local church must come from the doctrinal teaching of the Pastor Teacher and must relate to the word of God the absolute authority in the Spiritual Life and without consistent intake of Bible Doctrine the deacon cannot keep abreast of policy.
    3. The Pastor Teacher is the policy maker and the deacon must continue in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to remain under the influence of Bible Doctrine and avoid the influence of evil and using his office to fight the pastor rather than working and administering to release the Pastor Teacher to study and teach.
  - D. Doctrine of the Mystery:
    1. Etymology of the Original Languages:
      - i. (gr) Musterion == secrets and doctrines of the ancient Greek fraternities.
        - a. Began with Dianisis or Bacchus the God of wine.
      - ii. (gr) Mustes == someone being initiated into a fraternity by learning doctrines and the ritual inducted them into the fraternity.

- iii. (gr) Mueo == To initiate or instruct or teach doctrine.
  - a. The fraternity doctrines were not known to any outsiders only to the pledges of the fraternities.
- iv. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ first used this word in his ministry on earth talking to the disciples giving it the meaning used throughout the New Testament Scripture.

**Matt 13:11, Mk 4:10-11**

- a. He referred to it here as the Mystery of the kingdom of heaven which were Church Age doctrines which were UNKNOWN to Old Testament Scripture writers and to the disciples at this time.
  - b. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ spoke in parables in order to not have those not christian knowing the doctrines of the Church Age.
  - c. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ used the parables to teach to the unbelievers some things of christian doctrine but at the same time open a new subject matter.
  - d. A whole system of Bible Doctrine was about to be unveiled on earth which had to do with the new dispensation and had never once been written before and unknown in the Old Testament Scripture times.
2. Definition:
- i. Mystery == Church Age Bible Doctrine which was not revealed in Old Testament Scripture times, but after the resurrection, ascension and Session of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ it was in the beginning of the Church Age made known to the Royal Family of God through the Epistles of the New Testament Scripture.
  - ii. There is very little Church Age truth in the gospels except for the upper room discourse in John 15, 16, 17 in part and occasionally in Acts.
  - iii. Most of the Mystery Doctrine of the Church Age is found in the epistles of the New Testament Scripture.
  - iv. This is a technical doctrinal word referring to the whole of Church Age doctrine which was totally unknown in the Old Testament Scripture time and completely revealed in the epistles of the New Testament Scripture especially those of Paul.
3. The relationship between the Mystery Doctrine of the Church Age to the Divine Decree.
- i. The divine decree encompass the foreknowledge and omniscience of God inserting the Plan of God into every aspect of life.
  - ii. This was a meeting between God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit whereby the pulled together ever factor needed for the creation of both angelic and human civilizations providing every NEED and every BLESSING imaginable.
  - iii. Our blessings existed from Eternity Past long before we were even thought of.
    - a. He provided wealth, success, prosperity, etc long before we existed and while we make our own troubles for the most part, the blessings of life were predesigned from Eternity Past.
  - iv. The Mystery Doctrine of the Church Age was part of the divine decree from Eternity Past
  - v. This means that when the Church Age was intercalated into the running age of Israel after the Substitutionary Spiritual Death, resurrection, ascension and session of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ it stopped the age of Israel and was the means of calling out the Royal Family of God.
  - vi. When this Royal Family of God is completed there will be a resurrection where all believers of all history will be resurrected and given bodies for eternity commonly called the Rapture of the church.
  - vii. This is the time when the body of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the Royal Family of God is converted into the bride of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ to return with him in the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent.



- viii. In Age of Israel the 4 divisions of the influential groups of Jews each had a different brand of apostasy.
  - a. When Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ interrupted the Age of Israel he simply was saying STAND BY and when the Age of Israel resumes you will still have this mess to deal with.
  - b. It is so bad that the last 7 years of the Age of Israel are so bad they are commonly called the “Tribulation”.
  - c. This time gets immediately better when the lord returns at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent with his own Royal Family of God which had to be formed with the interruption of the Age of Israel.
- ix. Inserting the Church Age after the session of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ means that there has to be doctrine to explain it all and there is NO doctrine in the Old Testament Scripture which even comes close to explaining the Church Age doctrines.
- x. The Church Age has doctrine of Mystery which was obscured in the past and no one knew it nor understood it.
- xi. Once the new age has begun there is nothing in the Old Testament Scripture to explain it therefore an entire new system of explaining it must be revealed and why we have the New Testament Scripture.
- xii. This is why the canon of scripture was not completed with completion of Malachi and why the epistles had to clarify it.
- xiii. God in essence is saying STAY OUT OF THE BUSINESS OF ISRAEL, do not persecute Jews, don’t try to live by the Mosaic Law or under Levitical sacrifices or a specialized priesthood etc..

**1Cor 2:7, Eph 1:8-9**

- xiv. This is Paul telling believers he is communicating the mysteries of the Church Age from God hidden from those in the past.
- xv. This is said to be to our glory, and the intake of Church Age Bible Doctrine is the means by which we can ultimately glorify God and become honorable members of the Royal Family of God.
- xvi. Today the mystery is no longer obscured but made known to us from the teaching of prepared Pastor Teachers.
- xvii. The whole system of the Mystery Doctrine of the Church Age is based around the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and believers being placed into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ to become Royal Family of God forever.
  - a. We are body of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on earth.
  - b. We are bride of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in heaven.
- 4. There is also a relationship between the Mystery Doctrine of the Church Age and the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the incarnation.
  - i. In the divine decree the whole Mystery Doctrine of the Church Age was portrayed.
  - ii. It relates the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in his 1<sup>st</sup> advent to the tactical victory of the Royal Family of God in this dispensation reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

**1Tim 3:16**

- iii. We are ambassadors for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the earth representing Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on earth all in full time christian service.
- iv. We complement the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross by tactical victory through daily function in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Super Grace.

- v. In Super Grace the lord provides 5 categories of blessings for time the 5<sup>th</sup> being dying grace and more blessings and rewards for eternity.
  - vi. The provision of these blessings complements the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross and glorifies God by his being able to bless us while we still live in Satan's world.
5. There is a relationship of the Mystery Doctrine to the Church Age
- i. The Church Age is the dispensation for formation of the Royal Family of God.
  - ii. The Mystery Doctrine of the Church Age is the explanation for the formation of the Royal Family of God in the Church Age.
  - iii. We must understand and orient to this dispensation as Royal Family of God.
  - iv. There is a new dispensation and the Jewish believer is not emphasized as a Jew but the gentile believers now have equal rights and all in the Church Age are part of the Royal Family of God.
  - v. Jews and Gentiles in the Church Age at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God are treated the same way.
  - vi. Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God comes through FAITH alone.
  - vii. Race is therefore no longer an issue nor can it ever be made an issue in this dispensation.
    - a. The writers of our constitution were for the most part believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and there cannot ever be a racial issue and CITIZENSHIP is what is essential and every race can benefit equally from this.
    - b. As soon as any race is recognized and given special treatment we are no longer America and as bad as communist China the most evil country ever to exist.
    - c. Sachs Romer Books "Fu Man Chu" 1920's after WWI
  - viii. In this country there is no race and all citizens must be treated the same.
    - a. Lost beginning with W. Wilson was the fact that ONLY CERTAIN PEOPLE SHOULD HAVE THE RIGHT TO VOTE.
    - b. They must be very responsible and understand the country and have personal interest as land or business owners or service men from the military and the voters MUST BE MEN ONLY.
    - c. In the United States of America constitutionally we recognize citizens regardless of their race.
  - ix. God the Holy Spirit at the beginning of the Church Age picked up all believer in the Church Age and entered them at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - x. This means that the Church Age distinguishing between Jew and Gentile as in the Age of Israel has been terminated by initiation of the Royal Family of God.
    - a. This was demonstrated significant when Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ died on the cross the veil of the temple was torn from top to bottom.
6. The divine black out of the mystery doctrine in the Old Testament Scripture is every important.
- i. The strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and dramatic interruption of the Age of Israel with the Church Age calls for briefing.
  - ii. In effect the Mystery Doctrine of the Church Age are a briefing for the new Church Age believers.
  - iii. We must understand why we are here, what is needed to glorify God, what is the true tactical victory and why in the intensified stage of this Angelic Conflict we must understand these things.

**Eph 3:2-6**

- iv. These were NOT previously revealed and in the Old Testament Scripture the Church Age is skipped over totally while the Old Testament Scripture prophets were aware of many prophecies of the time of the millennium etc.

**Rom 16:5, 25-26?, Col 1:25-26**

- v. Not only the fact of the coming of the Church Age nor any of the details of the New Testament Scripture doctrines in the Mystery Doctrine of the Church Age were ever revealed to nor known by any Old Testament Scripture believer.
7. 10 Church Age doctrines not found in the Old Testament Scripture:
- i. Existence of the Royal Family of God
    - a. Old Testament Scripture believers were regenerated and made family of God by God the Holy Spirit.
    - b. This regeneration has been an ongoing event for each new believer from the Old Testament Scripture times to the end of Human History.
    - c. In the Church Age the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit places us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ where we share all he is and especially his heir ship making us Royal Family not just family.
    - d. Interruption of the Age of Israel before the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ to call out a Royal Family of God was UNKNOWN.
    - e. Strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in resurrection, ascension and session were KNOWN in the Old Testament Scripture but the insertion of the Church Age to call out the new Royal Family of God was totally unknown in the Old Testament Scripture times.
    - f. The only Royal Family in the Old Testament Scripture was the families which were historical in nature such as David, Saul, Persians.
  - ii. The Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and positional sanctification:
    - a. This was illustrated by Noah in the Arc but without any doctrinal support.
    - b. Noah was a historical fact Gen 6:7-8 and is an illustration of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit but it is NOT the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit in any way.
    - c. Every believer in this dispensation lives in the holy of hollies in the Church Age but in the Age of Israel totally avoided the holy of hollies in the Age of Israel knowing they would die if they entered.
  - iii. God the Holy Spirit indwells the body of each believer in the Church Age
    - a. God the Holy Spirit never indwelt any body until the day of Pentecost.
    - b. God the Holy Spirit controlled the soul of certain people, Saul, David, Writers of Bible Doctrine etc.
    - c. In the Old Testament Scripture this was a very limited exposure of the ministry of God the Holy Spirit and believers were told to ask for it and most did not.

**1Cor 3:16, 6:19-20**

- d. Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit is with reference to the physical body and we are also commanded to
- iv. Indwelling of God the Son in every believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - a. Manifestations of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the Old Testament Scripture are theophanies
  - b. Manifestations of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ after his resurrection are christophanies.
- v. New contract or covenant:
  - a. The old covenant was the Mosaic Law and it is still good to learn from especially the Laws of Divine Establishment.
  - b. Worship systems for believers and doctrinal communication has changed.
  - c. Pastor Teacher communicates all Church Age doctrine.

- d. Jeremiahs new contract is for the Jews in the millennium not the one in the Church Age.
- vi. Universal Royal Priesthood of every believer in the Church Age.
- vii. New ministry of God the Holy Spirit, Filling of God the Holy Spirit
  - a. For the first time in all of Human History the Royal Family of God is commanded to continue to be under Filling of God the Holy Spirit controlling the soul of the believer.
  - b. This was never given before.
  - c. For special people in the Old Testament Scripture God the Holy Spirit functioned like the Filling of God the Holy Spirit but not universally.
  - d. This is God the Holy Spirit controlling the human soul and Human spirit.
- viii. Eventually there would be a completion of the canon of scripture which would drastically change the mechanic of revelation from God to man.
  - a. No more direct communication from God, angels and no dreams or visions or trances.
  - b. They did know that a time would come when God would no longer speak in visions and conversations.
  - c. The canon is now closed and the new communication mechanic is from the prepared Pastor Teacher who studies the canon and presents doctrine to his congregation in a new classroom of the local church.
- ix. New type of service: Ambassadorship and Full time christian service
  - a. In the Old Testament Scripture certain people were called into service and the general population were evangelized but very rarely was common man have any service to God unless given the gift and office of prophet or some other office.
  - b. For the first time in Human History every believer is in full time christian service as an ambassador for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and this service depends on regular function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and a maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- x. Completion of the Church Age before the Age of Israel is completed.
  - a. Once the Age of Israel began with Abraham and continued with Moses and was still in operation during the Hypostatic Union all the Jews presumed that what began with Abraham was to be concluded and go right on to its end.
  - b. They were not aware that another dispensation would be inserted and that it would be completed prior to the Age of Israel being completed.
  - c. The Jews never dreamed with a 2000 year head start they would not finish first but last.
  - d. Rhip is Royal Family of God has its privilege and we as Royal Family of God start LAST and finish FIRST.

**Lesson #40      Series # 467      1Tim 3:10**

- I. Doctrine of the Mystery continued:
    - A. Mystery Bible Doctrine is only understood through the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
- Col 2:2**  
**v2: That their own Right Lobe's may be encouraged having been knit together in reciprocal Love or taught by means of love, a relaxed Mental Attitude, Filling of God the Holy Spirit, and attaining to all the riches which come from Full Assurance of understanding from the source of technical knowledge resulting in the Basis of Epignosis knowledge of God's Mystery, That is from the source of Christ.**
- B. Communication of Mystery Doctrine:

1. The Pastor Teacher is the only communicator to the Royal Family of God and the local church is the classroom for communication and in the church we have strict academic discipline to fulfill this function.

#### **1Cor 4:1**

- C. The Rapture is part of the mystery doctrine of the Church Age:

#### **1Cor 15:51-52**

#### II. v9 continued:

- A. When a believer reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he has flushed his conscience from all forms of legalism, apostasy, evil, Human Viewpoint thinking and any other Cosmic Dynasphere concepts.
  1. Ascetic Legalism is one of these.
  2. As you reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God you flush from your conscience false norms and standards of legalism, reversionism, evil ETC from every area of LIFE.
  3. If our government today had a flushed conscience they would have to rescind 90% of all legislation on our books other than criminal law.
  4. To be continually influenced by Bible Doctrine means is to change your norms and standards to align with the Plan of God.
  5. A Pure conscience can and does in all cases reside in an impure person.
  6. We must however have pure norms and standards which refer to Divine Viewpoint norms and standards in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  7. With Divine Viewpoint norms and standards in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the believer is qualified to use the administrative Spiritual Gift of Deacon if he has this gift.

#### III. Doctrine of the Conscience:

##### A. Definition and Etymology:

1. (gr) suneidesis == to know with, it is a concentrated system of knowledge located in the Right Lobe, joint knowledge or cognizance.
2. (lat) Conscientia == Conscience is a Latin translation of this Greek word, to know with.
  - i. These are exact equivalent words
  - ii. Latin in the time of the New Testament Scripture writing is an identical language of Koine Greek of that time.
3. This is joint knowledge or cognizance therefore to be conscious of things in life as being right or wrong, good or bad, black or white on the basis of knowledge.
4. Conscience is KNOWLEDGE which provides your norms and standards of life.
5. Conscience is more than just right and wrong and is knowledge about any standard you have in your life.
6. These include colors, beauty standards, etc.
7. Your conscience is the sum total of all norms and standards in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
8. If your opinions are based on knowledge this is part of the norms and standards in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
9. Even people who border on being an imbecile have some norms and standards.
10. False norms and standards are what is in the impure conscience like long hair in males.
11. Conscience is what is found with regard to grooming, morality, establishment, Bible Doctrine, every facet of life and anything about which you have knowledge and have established a norms and standards is CONSCIENCE.
12. All normal persons have norms and standards and these are related to their cognizance of LIFE.

##### B. Location of the conscience:

1. Conscience is a repository of the norms and standards of our life and since the norms and standards are related to cognizance of life the repository is in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

- i. The SOUL:
  - a. Self Consciousness
  - b. Mentality – Right Lobe, Left Lobe
    - i ) In the Right Lobe where thinking is categorized the conscience resides
  - c. Volition
  - d. Emotion
- ii. The Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul:
  - a. Frame of Reference containing all the thinking and concepts and subjects to which you have been exposed throughout your life
    - i ) These things have become reality for us by being transferred over to the Right Lobe
  - b. Memory Center
    - i ) This feeds into Vocabulary
    - ii ) Vocabulary is the determining factor of how much thinking you can do and how far you can go with your perspicacity and thinking process.
    - iii ) Without vocabulary you cannot think very extensively and you might be clever but not very smart.
    - iv ) NO ONE can think in life and have capacity for life without a good extensive vocabulary.
    - v ) When you build a great technical vocabulary in any field you then can feed this back into your mind to build information about any aspect of life and this gives you greater and greater capacity for LIFE.
  - c. Categorical Storage
    - i ) This is a higher repository of for thought and when your vocabulary is good enough to put things together and make coherent thoughts with them.
    - ii ) After you have learned many many words you can then categorize things in life.
    - iii ) While you categorize things you send information down to your norms and standards storage and develop norms and standards about each category of things in life.
    - iv ) If you are every going to have norms and standards you must have a great vocabulary to have a conscience about things.
    - v ) As your vocabulary develops and your categorical storage fills with information so does your norms and standards build in the Right Lobe.
    - vi ) You eventually develop norms and standards about everything in life and this repository of norms and standards composed of words, categories, concepts, principles becomes your conscience.

**Rom 2:14**

v14: For every time that the good or moral Gentiles who do not have the law, do in the past and continue doing instinctively, those things from or what is required by The Law, those ones not having the law are or continue to be a law unto themselves.

**Rom 2:15**

v15: The very ones, the gentiles, who show or demonstrate instinctively or give outward proof in history periodically of the accomplishment or deeds of the Mosaic Law written in their Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul not having the law, their conscience confirming the testimony or bearing witness, in fact their thoughts themselves alternately accusing, from the past to the present, or defending themselves. (parenthesis)

2. Gentiles who had never heard of Moses nor the Old Testament Scripture and had never seen nor heard of a Jew and did not know Hebrew and had no contact with Israel at all how could he do by INSTINCT the things of the law.
  - i. In his own language he developed a vocabulary and categories and in the process he developed norms and standards totally apart from divine revelation and the Mosaic Law.
    - a. Many gentiles therefore developed the 10 commandments in their soul without ever having hear of them.
    - b. They have had dietary laws without the Mosaic Law restrictions.
    - c. They have the instinct of fighting for freedom without ever having read the Mosaic Law under universal military training.
    - d. They understand the importance of free enterprise without ever learning the Laws of Divine Establishment from the Mosaic Law.
    - e. INSTINCT here is a set of norms and standards developed from vocabulary and categories in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - ii. Many gentiles never having been around the Mosaic Law demonstrated the function of the Mosaic Law in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - a. Their conscience confirms this and their thinking alternately accuses and defends from their norms and standards.
3. This statement in the word of God defines for us INSTINCT.
  - i. Instinct is finding certain things to be true and establishing them in your Right Lobe apart from Bible Doctrine or divine revelation.
  - ii. This is to some degree limited but where Laws of Divine Establishment are concerned it is possible for this to occur and it does on a regular basis for the unbeliever.
  - iii. It is an extensive vocabulary and ability to think categorically and apart from Bible Doctrine and from reading the constitution and bill of rights these people are able to understand because in their soul they have personal norms and standards which are violated by our government and citizenry.

**Tit 1:15**

**v15: To the Pure, all things are pure (because of categorical storage and norms and standards set up from this) but to those whose soul is filled with or covered with excrement, unfaithful and defiled with EVIL (the unbelievers) nothing is pure but both their thinking and their conscience are filled with or covered with excrement.**

4. When a person learns the word Pure and Purity they then set up norms and standards where they set up something as "PURE" then for them it is PURE.
  - i. Eventually there becomes a category of purity and then this causes standards of purity to be set up and anything which agrees with that standard is for that person PURE.
  - ii. For the believer this is stronger because purity for the believer is Bible Doctrine dealing with what is right and wrong spiritually under Laws of Divine Establishment and morally
  - iii. There are norms and standards in the bible and once we have these norms and standards in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from the development of our vocabulary we then categorize them and this forms our norms and standards in all areas of life.
  - iv. Once a person has pure norms and standards from Bible Doctrine and Laws of Divine Establishment then all things become pure.
  - v. When you build norms and standards in your soul from TRUTH then you know for example that you can eat Pork or Shrimp or Oysters which are all prohibited to

Jews because with KNOWLEDGE of how to prepare these things you know they are NOT impure but can be PURE.

- vi. This is known that all types of living creatures are here to be eaten by human beings and knowing this you can sanctify them with prayer you can then have them at any time.
- vii. To the Jew Ham is not pure but with your additional standards and sanctifying them with prayer all things are PURE.
- viii. These things will not set you back spiritually NOR PHYSICALLY.

C. The conscience and the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception:

1. There is no way to align with the Plan of God for your life and be blessed by God until your norms and standards are aligned with Divine Viewpoint norms and standards.
2. The only way to have Divine Viewpoint norms and standards is to learn the words of God in Bible Doctrine and you have to transfer it from the bible to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
3. You have to have Bible Doctrine in memory center to develop your vocabulary and categorical storage area and in your Frame of Reference and you must do this consistently.
4. Going from vocabulary to Categorical doctrine you will inevitably set up norms and standards which are your conscience.
5. Conscience is therefore related to the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception which provides the information to develop and build norms and standards in the Right Lobe.
6. One of the characteristics of reaching Spiritual Maturity is to have developed and possess a conscience with a maximum number of Divine Viewpoint norms and standards based on maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
7. Conscience is related to the communication of Bible Doctrine **1Tim 1:5**
8. Conscience is related to the believer who is the recipient of the Bible Doctrine being taught. **1Tim 1:19, 3:9**
  - i. You cannot have a good conscience without having and holding Bible Doctrine.
  - ii. Believers are ship wrecked because they do not hold Bible Doctrine and store it in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as norms and standards.

D. The apostles of apostasy and teachers of evil possess a distorted conscience **1Tim 4:1-2**

1. This is referring to time between the 1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ including the Church Age and Tribulation.
2. In every generation there will be apostate believers who focus on false doctrine from demons and lying teachers.
3. Their conscience is destroyed, seared with evil and with regard to Divine Viewpoint norms and standards and no one can teach you Bible Doctrine if the conscience is seared or branded with evil, legalism, all forms of apostasy or reversionism.
4. These are blinded to Bible Doctrine to the extent his conscience is seared with a hot branding iron of reversionism and evil.

E. Legalism has a false conscience **1Cor 8:7**

1. This is any rejection of grace and any system do it yourself kit by which you seek to gain approbation of God.
  - i. Salvation by works or felling sorry or baptism or inviting Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ into your heart.
  - ii. All human works gimmicks or activities for salvation.
  - iii. The same thing goes for spirituality by gimmicks or doing something or nothing.
  - iv. Having some weird experience with making noises with your voice and calling it “charismatic”.
2. This passage refers to eating meat of animals sacrificed to Idols or in our time DRINKING is the same thing to some Christians.



- i. The Best Scotch “Benlivet” or The Best Wine Chateau Lafitte or Margo etc are all OK so get some and lets try it all out.
  - ii. The Christians have been propagandized to think that doing any of these things will cause them to lose salvation.
  - iii. These norms and standards in anyone results in a WEAK conscience.
  - iv. NEVER should we ever get ahead of our personal norms and standards.
  - v. If you get ahead of your false or erroneous standards you will be in trouble spiritually and you are doing what you conscience says is wrong and you WILL enter reversionism sooner or later.
  - vi. Doing these things will result in GUILT which is a big sin which blacks out Bible Doctrine and puts us on the edge of reversionism.
  - vii. We don’t have meat of animals offered to idols but in every period of history there are certain things which have been inculcated because of legalism as being WRONG and if you are brought up in this atmosphere you will accept these points of legalism as right and these bring us to the point of violating our norms and standards built on the basis of these false things and this puts us close to entering reversionism from guilt IF we get ahead of our norms and standards and don’t wait for our Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to catch us up and CHANGE OUR norms and standards.
    - a. This is makeup for women and thinking only prostitutes or evil women wear makeup.
    - b. This is drinking for the legalistic christian.
  - viii. Never ever allow your self to get ahead of any norms and standards no matter how false they are but allow your progress in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to change these norms and standards so you can then do what you have never done before.
  - ix. Until your norms and standards have changed and are corrected you must stay away from whatever it is.
  - x. Often these are things which are objectionable to society such as Nakedness in this country being Wrong.
  - xi. This is being careful and never getting ahead of our WEAK conscience and when you have you have a weak conscience your soul is defiled by the Mental Attitude Sins of GUILT reaction leading to guilt complex.
- F. The standards of conscience have directions. **Acts 24:16**
1. We must develop the ability to have a “blameless” conscience before both God and man as Paul did.
    - i. Our norms and standards are directed toward God, People and other materialistic and concept things and culture etc.

**1Tim 3:9**

**v9: They, deacons, must continue with consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception which maintains his spiritual growth, having and holding the Mystery of the Church Age even the doctrine with a pure, catharized, cleansed, flushed of evil, legalism and apostasy, conscience.**

**Lesson #41 Series # 467 1Tim 3:10**

- I. 1979 - Senate Resolution to restore rights as citizen to Robert E. Lee
- II. Principle of Leadership:
  - A. You cannot be slave of any and ruler of all.
  - B. You cannot be a pastor or deacon and be a slave to anyone or anything and rule in the local church.
    1. Alcohol, Women, Money, children, ETC.
- III. Doctrine of Conscience continued:

A. The Super Grace believer possesses a conscience which is compatible with the whole Plan of God of GRACE.

**2Cor 1:12**

**v12: For our esprit DE corps is this, the testimony of our conscience that in experiential sanctification and in Bible Doctrine discernment NOT in human wisdom or evil, but in the Grace of God we have had our manner of life in the world and especially toward YOU.**

1. The Super Grace believer has a conscience which is Divine Viewpoint and Grace and compatible with the attitude of God toward everything in history and this conscience therefore is effective and a conscience of testimony.
2. This means GREAT esprit DE Corps in the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
3. This is experiential sanctification doctrinal discernment, freedom from the influence of evil and by the Grace of God having a manner of life under GRACE in this world.

B. The communicator of Bible Doctrine must appeal to the conscience of his congregation.

1. The individual believers conscience is made up of norms and standards some good, some bad, some true some false and erroneous and it is teaching of Bible Doctrine which straightens out and shakes up and tears it apart and reforms it with proper norms and standards.
2. In order to develop good norms and standards a child must be properly reared under proper discipline and respect for authority especially that of the parents.
3. We must not expect a child to love us as a parent until later in their life they being devoid of norms and standards but the best we can hope for from a small child is RESPECT from them and that they will GROW to love you and you will have a great relationship with them.

**2Cor 4:2**

**v2: We have renounced disgraceful, underhanded things, the things hidden because of shame, the apostasy, false doctrine and evil, not walking in craftiness nor adulterating the word of God, but by the unveiling of Bible Doctrine commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God.**

4. In the sight of God means the Pastor Teacher is responsible directly to GOD for his ministry
5. Commending selves to every man's conscience means that the Pastor Teacher teaches in a way that good norms and standards are built up in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and false norms and standards are destroyed.
6. Renouncing the hidden things is the Pastor Teacher who must depart from all false things in life and therefore NO pastor who teaches Bible Doctrine can support the policies of our government today (although they are getting closer to aligning with Laws of Divine Establishment).
  - i. The policies of government generally are compatible with evil, apostasy, reversionism and are totally without any Laws of Divine Establishment or spiritual foundations.
7. A pastor must never teach people what they want to hear or cater to the people nor can he ever adulterate the word of God.
  - i. The word of God cannot be watered down with legalism, Human Viewpoint and apostasy.
8. It is the Pastor Teachers responsibility to unveil Bible Doctrine from the word of God and he must commend self to all men's conscience by teaching that which builds proper norms and standards.

C. Conscience is the basis for spiritual and Laws of Divine Establishment service.

1. The believers conscience demands he submit to Laws of Divine Establishment authority'
2. This means that the believer must be Pro establishment, military, free enterprise, Law Enforcement; Anti communistic, socialistic, welfare, liberal, etc.

- i. This is the ONLY attitude acceptable toward communism.
- ii. When we Dropped the Atomic Bomb in Japan in 1945 we had control of the world and a way to control and eliminate communism but we had an immoral government which had not thought of protecting the world against communism and today it is still very very active in the 21<sup>st</sup> century because of the United States of America.

**Rom 13:5**

v5: **Therefore for this reason it is necessary to be in subjection or subordinate to or in recognition of governing authority not only because of the wrath or punishment for rejection of establishment by Law Enforcement also because of the conscience**

- 3. Criminals have a bad conscience with false norms and standards and distorted conscience.
  - i. Because of this WRATH is from Law Enforcement which is how he is controlled.
  - ii. We as lawful citizens are subordinated to the Laws of Divine Establishment out of having good norms and standards in our good conscience.
  - iii. The government is trying continuously since the early part of the 20<sup>th</sup> century to make law abiding citizens criminals with gun control legislation, and make it easier to allow criminals to function and make borderline criminals move into total criminality.
  - iv. It is not the lawful citizen who commits crime but the criminal and gun control legislation caters to communism and criminal elements.
  - v. EVERY lawful American should possess a gun and know how to use them and the government should distribute guns to citizens after they qualify on a national shooting range.
  - vi. This is what is done in Switzerland where they have a minimal of crime.
  - vii. When you get criminals who are shot by citizens who have learned to shoot well and get judges who will execute criminals then crime will go down.
  - viii. When you execute drug pushers and addicts then you will eliminate the drug problem in the country.
- 4. Conscience is the basis for spiritual and establishment service.
  - i. As believers we have temporal and spiritual service as members of the Royal Family of God living on earth.

**2Tim 1:3**

- ii. Prayer is a spiritual service and the effective prayer warrior has a clear conscience because every believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God should have in the conscience proper norms and standards for prayer and the responsibility for it.
- iii. It is important that we remember to function in prayer which is a service and the norms and standards concerning prayer in the soul results in a believer using prayer and having a clear conscience.
- iv. When we use our norms and standards for prayer for Law Enforcement and Military, and government, and the Pastor Teacher, and missionaries, and seminary students and sick and other persons we have a clear conscience and must NOT neglect them ever.
- v. We serve God by the use of our conscience having norms and standards which motivate us in serving God.

**Heb 9:14**

- vi. One of the worst things which can happen to our conscience is to be bogged down with DEAD WORKS and when this is the case and we have a conscience saturated with the norms and standards of asceticism, legalism, pseudo spirituality, evil and other factors such as this YOU CANNOT SERVE GOD.

## 1Cor 10:24-29

vii. There is in this passage the laws of freedom, liberty, love, expediency and supreme sacrifice all related to the function of the conscience where doctrine is related.

D. Conscience is related to unjust suffering:

1. Unjust suffering, persecution, types of maltreatment are related to the conscience of the believer.
2. A conscience saturated with Bible Doctrine is the basis for enduring maltreatment and misunderstanding without trying to defend self.
3. This is when people judge and condemn us without understanding what it is we are doing or what we stand for.

### 1Pet 2:18-19

**v18: Servants, Labor, be submissive to your masters, management, executives or capital investors with all respect for their authority, not only to the good and gentle boss but also to the unreasonable, unfair, falsely opinionated or perverse one.**

**v19: For this is GRACE, if, for the sake of conscience toward God, anyone bears up under sorrows when suffering unjustly.**

4. This is saying under the proper function of your conscience you must submit with all respect to the authority of your bosses no matter how unfair or unreasonable the rules may be.
5. This does not encompass improper functions of the believe in reading the bible or witnessing on the job when it is PROHIBITED.
6. The norms and standards in the soul of the believer about authority and because of this we recognize the authority of the person and function under it no matter how much of a stinker they may be.

### 1Pet 3:15-16

**v15: but set apart the lord Christ in your hearts the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and always be prepared to make a defense to any one who asks you a word concerning your confidence in you with Grace Orientation and Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ**

**v16: Be having an intrinsically good conscience (write vs wrong) so that in things in which you are slandered or maligned, those who malign your intrinsic good conscience in Christ may be put to shame**

7. John 8:1-10, the woman taken in adultery is not really in the original text of scripture but John 8:9 is where the guys with stones have dropped them and from the elder to the youngest have departed.
  - i. These men were convicted by their own conscience and dropped the stones and walked quietly away.

IV. Requirements for Deacons continued:

A. Deacons must PASS the adversity testing.

1. Deacons qualified to serve in the local church are considered here and
2. Deacons must be qualified by testing in adversity which will be particular to the function in the deacons.
3. Pressure or adversity is part of serving as a deacon and is an unusual pressure and usually starts with having a difficult time attending bible classes.
4. Some men who seem like they would a great deacons do not show too well after adversity testing hits them.
5. The deacon must use from his volition Metabolized Bible Doctrine to pass the testing.
6. Every deacon must be "combat" tested prior to serving as a deacon and this must include, pressure, suffering, disaster combined with proper use of Bible Doctrine from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and applied produces a spiritual victory and a qualified deacon.

B. The deacon should be able to:

1. Control his household especially his wife and children.

- i. When you give children an order they should be obeyed.
2. Control himself in all areas and avoid excess alcohol or drugs
3. There must be qualifications apart from the spiritual gifts.
- C. The male believer to qualify as a deacon must be free from:
  1. Criminal activity
  2. Not a draft dodger conscientious objector to war.
  3. Anti police or military
  4. Anti Free Enterprise
  5. Must pass Laws of Divine Establishment and adversity testing both.
  - 6.

**1Tim 3:10**

**v10: Moreover these deacons also first in time, before serving as a deacon, be tested and then if they pass the adversity testing with application and use of Bible Doctrine, then afterward let them serve as a deacon, if they are blameless or irreproachable from the standpoint of the Laws of Divine Establishment..**

**Lesson #42                      Series # 467                      1Tim 3:11**

- I. Freedom through Military Victory
  - A. William F Soderman, PFC US Army, K Company, 9<sup>th</sup> Infantry, 2<sup>nd</sup> Infantry Division, Battle of the Bulge, Rockrath Belgium 17 Dec 1944, German Ardennes Offensive.
  - B. Drew Dennis Dicks, S Sgt. US Army, 31 Jan 1-Feb 1968 Vietnam.
- II. Deacons Wives:
  - A. The wife of the deacon must have some spiritual advance and be under the influence of Bible Doctrine and not of evil.
    1. She must not be indifferent to Bible Doctrine but under positive volition toward it and NOT in any way in reversionism.
    2. Both deacon and wife must be consistent in the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and persist in their positive volition toward Bible Doctrine.
    3. Being worthy of respect or honor comes from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    4. The believer whether woman or man must also function in this manner.
  - B. All gossip is malicious and the wife of the deacon must avoid the sins of the tongue and must not be a gossip or slanderous in any way.
    1. Anyone in any position of leadership in a local church must have control over his wife and children and above all must keep his wife's tongue under control.
    2. The mouth of the woman is hooked up into their brain and the more a woman maligns or gossips about other people the more they indicate how their pea brain is not worth the air they breathe at any moment of life on the earth.
    3. The bible does not in any way condone the sins of the tongue especially in those women associated with leadership in the local church.
    4. Leadership in the local church and the authority involved is the most unique authority established in Human History.
  - C. In addition the wife of a deacon must be temperate in the use of wine, not a lush
- III. The doctrine of Verbal Sins, the sins of the tongue
  - A. The application is for every believer although this passage is directed to deacons wives.
    1. Of all places in the world there should never be any verbal sinning in the local church MORE than any other place.
    2. It should not occur in any area of life and many sins of Verbal Sins manifest a rotten, petty soul.
  - B. Category and Definition:
    1. Sin is defined as transgression of the law of God.

2. A known sin is a transgression or violation of divine law under cognizance of what you are doing and you do it.
3. An unknown sin is also a transgression of divine law under ignorance where you don't know what you are doing and you do it.
4. Whether the sin is known or unknown in both cases VOLITION is always involved and YOU wanted to do it and did it.
5. The difference between unknown and known sin is the matter of cognizance of divine law or an understanding of the doctrine of hamartiology.
6. Whether the divine law is known or not human volition is always involved in transgressing any law of God.
7. All sins combines the function of the Old Sin Nature's area of weakness and human volition.
8. There are 3 categories of sin in the Human Race:
  - i. Imputation of Adam's Original Sin directly to the Old Sin Nature of each member of the Human Race at the moment of physical birth.
  - ii. Inherent sin or perpetuation of the Old Sin Nature through physical birth causing a person to be physically alive and spiritually dead simultaneously
    - a. This is received through the genetics of the Father down through the lineage of your family.
  - iii. Personal Sin which occurs sometime after birth and before physical death.
    - a. This does not occur at birth
9. 3 categories of personal sins exist in the Human Race:
  - i. Mental
    - a. Envy, jealousy, pride, vindictiveness, implacability, hatred, guilt, ETC.
  - ii. Verbal
    - a. Gossip, slander, maligning, judging, lying ETC.
  - iii. Overt Sins
    - a. Adultery, Murder, Theft, Drunkenness.
10. All personal sins originate from temptation from the area of weakness of the Old Sin Nature combined with or activated by positive volition toward the sin.
  - i. This means that verbal sins originate this way
11. Human volition is involved in ALL SIN.
12. The instrument of verbal sins is the TONGUE, **James 3:6**

**James 3:6**

**v6: And the tongue is a fire of the Cosmic Dynasphere of evil. The tongue is so placed in the structure of our anatomy as that which contaminates the entire body, therefore it sets on fire the cycle of existence burning down freedom, and is set on fire by the agency of hell.**

C. Out of the list of the 7 worst sins 3 are verbal sins

**Prov 6:16-19**

**v16: There are 6 things which the Lord hates, yes 7 which are an abomination to his essence or attributes**

**v17: Involvement in Interlocking System of Arrogance or pride (Mental Attitude sins), a Lying Tongue (Sins of the Tongue, Maligning, gossip, deceit), Murder or Hands which shed innocent blood (Overt Sins),**

**v18: Mutual Admiration Society forming Conspiracy or Revolt with the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul devising the thoughts of evil from the Interlocking System of Arrogance interacting with sin or human good, Feet that are quick to run to evil in reversionism forming conspiracy**

**v19: A false witness who utters lies or slanders (Sins of the Tongue) and a person who causes dissension and spreads strife among believers**

D. Verbal sins & Reversionism:

1. Verbal sins are motivated by Mental Attitude Sins especially:
  - i. Pride, Jealousy, bitterness, vindictiveness, implacability, hatred, pettiness.

**Ps 5:8-9**

v8: **Lead me, O LORD, in your grace righteousness because of my enemies; make your way smooth before me.**  
v9: **There is nothing true in what they say, Their soul or inner part is destruction from mental attitude sins, their throat is an open grave which stinks of the rotting corpse of their mental attitude sins, they flatter with their tongue.**

2. The verbal sin of judging is a sign of reversionism **James 4:11, 5:9**
  - i. He who gossips and slanders or maligns other believers cannot be under positive volition to Bible Doctrine.
  - ii. Judge not that you be not judged is the essence and Divine Discipline is the result of verbal sins.
3. Verbal reversionism causes heavy Divine Discipline **James 5:12**
4. Verbal reversionism produces treacherous and unreliable people.

Ps 12

v0: **To the one in authority directing the music on the Shemineth with the low pitched octave, a Psalm of David**

v1: **Deliver Oh Jehovah because the mature super grace type has ceased to exist; because Doctrinal Types have vanished from among the Human Race in the national entity.**

v2: **They, the Mutual Admiration Society, speak what they think in the form of evil, as motivation then application and function from the motivation, each one the arrogant, gossip and judge, to his friend, the inadequate one, vindicating themselves; the arrogant and inadequate speaks rationalizing or vindicating themselves with a lip of braggings or flatteries in order to or as they slander or destroy one in authority, and with a doubled Stream of Consciousness of the Soul do they speak, the reversionist under evil influence vindicating self making Self Righteous Arrogance the self confidence of this evil person, motivating the functions of judging, slander, maligning and condemnation of others.**

v3: **Jehovah shall destroy or root out all flattering lips, the tongue of the reversionistic believers that speaks arrogant things from the motivation of the mental attitude sins of pride and arrogance etc.,**

v4: **Who (the mutual admiration society) has said, "With our tongue expressing judgment, slander and gossip we will overcome, prevail or put down, our lips are our own, we have a right or it is our duty to use our mouth to do this; who is Lord or has authority over us?"**

v5: **"Because of the violence toward the grace oriented humble believers, because of the groanings of the miserable ones under persecution from the Sins of the Tongue, NOW!, I will arise to judge or in judgment," says Jehovah, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ"; "I will place him in deliverance from the one who puffs with meaningless pride motivated talk of maligning, judging and gossiping about the Grace Orientation believer"**

v6: **The judgments pronounced in the Supreme Court of Heaven by Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ the LORD are pure or unmixed with falsehoods, like silver refined in a crucible or furnace and poured out onto the ground, being purified or filtered seven times.**

v7: **You and only you Jehovah, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, shall guard them the Grace Orientation humble believers and preserve them or deliver or defend them from this generation and forever being evaluated with great glory in eternity.**

v8: **On every side the evil ones or reversionists strut in arrogance when vileness as the verbal expression of evil is exalted in the Human Race.**

- i. In any generation where there are no or very few believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace believers are guilty of gossip, maligning and slander and using verbal sins as weapons to destroy one another.
- E. Verbal sins produce triple compound Divine Discipline.
  1. This is an intensified Divine Discipline not generally associated with other sins.
  2. This is composed of 3 principles:
    - i. Motivator for verbal sins are Mental Attitude Sins and when a person possesses devastation or Mental Attitude Sins they are the basis for Divine Discipline #1
    - ii. Mental sins lead to verbal sins and this is the basis for Divine Discipline #2
    - iii. Verbal sins always mention the sins of others and this is the basis for YOUR Divine Discipline #3.
  3. The verbal sins can be in the form of:
    - i. Gossip where by you don't know sins of your victim but you make them up and spread these lies around.
    - ii. Slander is where you know the sins of your victim and they are real sins and you spread them around.
  4. Whether real or imagined no one has any right to discuss the sins of others for any reason.

- i. Mentioning sins of anyone else brings the Divine Discipline for those sins onto your self.
  - 5. Therefore in verbal sinning you get Divine Discipline for mental sins, also for the verbal sins you commit, and for the sins you mention of others real or imagined.
    - i. When you get this type of Divine Discipline it is almost beyond endurance **Matt 7:1-2**
    - ii. This tells us not to judge others because by the means of our judging others we will be judged and by the measure we try to impose on others it will be measured back to US.
- F. God protects the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace who is victim of verbal sins, Job 5:19-21

**Job 5:19-21**

**v19: From six troubles, crises, catastrophes or disasters, he will deliver, preserve or rescue you by your concentrated thinking and applying Bible Doctrine, mature Believer in Super-Grace status, furthermore in seven the evil of satanic Doctrine will not meddle with nor touch nor produce its desired effect on you, as long as you are insulated by Bible Doctrine.**

**v20: In famine, depression or economic disaster he will redeem or deliver or purchase or preserve you, Mature Believers, from death from Eternity Past, in war or military disaster from the power of the sword in battle,**

**v21: you will be protected and hidden by the Integrity of God, delivered from the lash or scourge of the tongue in social disasters from maligning, judging and gossip, neither will you be afraid being unable to think under the pressures of destruction, violent death, ruin, oppression, tyranny, when it comes because of Dying Grace.**

- 1. No believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God ever dies from starvation in economic disaster
  - 2. In war or military disaster no believer needs worry about death.
  - 3. You will not be effected by social catastrophe of lying and maligning against you.
  - 4. Violent death potential shall not cause fear either being the recipient of dying grace..
- G. The congregation and the Verbal sins:
  - 1. Control of the tongue and avoidance of verbal sins is a sign of Spiritual Maturity in the congregation **James 3:2**
  - 2. Verbal sins can destroy an entire congregation of the local church. **James 3:5-6**
  - 3. Since verbal sins can destroy an entire congregation it is the solemn responsibility of the Pastor Teacher to Warn against these types of sins **2Tim 2:14-17**
  - 4. Trouble makers in a congregation are characterized by verbal sins **Ps 52:1-2**
  - 5. Separation from those guilty of verbal sins **Rom 16:17-18**
- H. The blessing from avoiding verbal sins **Ps 34:12-13**

**Ps 34:12-13**

**v12: What man desires to constantly have fun and enjoy life with the Lord which overflows to everything in physical life, and loves the many days one after another indefinitely that he may see the prosperity and blessing of the super-grace life?**

**v13: Keep your tongue separated from the evil of Mental Attitude Sins, and guard as when walking a post your lips from speaking slander.**

**IV. Marital and family standards for deacons:**

- A. Being a husband of ONE wife
  - 1. The bible must be interpreted according to the time in which it was written not in our time
  - 2. This phrase applies to the practice of polygamy and you cannot be a deacon with more than 1 wife.
  - 3. This by interpretation prohibits polygamy for deacons.
  - 4. Polygamy is not part of the order of God nor the Plan of God.
  - 5. While the harem was permitted in the Old Testament Scripture it was never condoned by the word of God.
  - 6. This is not the interpretation but by application there is a concept of divorce here and deacons can qualify to function in the office of deacon under these conditions:



- i. Former wives is dead **Rom 7:1-4**
  - ii. Divorce is for Adultery **Matt 5:32**
  - iii. Divorce for Desertion **1Cor 7:15**
  - iv. Divorce Before Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God **Is 44:22**
7. The bible never condones divorce for incompatibility EVER.
- i. Just because you made a mistake in choosing your spouse does not give you a right for divorce.
  - ii. Mental cruelty is a gimmick before the law but does not give you any rights and not before God.
  - iii. If life is in danger it is viable to divorce.
  - iv. There is way too much rationalization in the field of divorce.
  - v. You can get a divorce before the secular law but divorce in the bible gives the right of remarriage.

B. The family Standard:

- 1. This is where men have served as deacons but were lousy because their wives ran them or influenced them to cloud their judgment.
- 2. This disqualifies you as deacon but in reality as a man when a WOMAN RUNS YOU YOU ARE DISQUALIFIED TO LIVE AND ARE NOTHING.
- 3. Women are stubborn as mules and men marry and are still very immature (wet behind the ears) and if you are a real man Stubborn women should not mean anything to you.

C. This verse relates the deacon to several Divine Institutions:

- 1. His personal volition being in control of it.
- 2. His marriage ruling his wife
- 3. His Family ruling his children and home.
- 4. The local church leadership must understand the Laws of Divine Establishment and observe them always.
- 5. Deacons cannot exercise authority in the local church when he cannot handle his own family with is authority there.

V. Deacons blessings and rewards are of a special nature:

- A. The deacon in Super Grace will receive and enjoy a special part of Super Grace blessings in time and have special decorations under Surpassing grace in eternity.
- B. The deacon who functions properly in that office gains great confidence by means of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

C. Principles:

- 1. The emphasis on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is always the key in the Spiritual Life.
  - i. The Super Grace blessings occur from accumulating Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and in the case of the deacon there are special blessings related to service as a deacon in the local church.
- 2. These blessings belong to the deacon serving as a deacon in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- 3. Every male believer serving as a deacon should have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and no deacon should be spiritually immature as they pose a serious draw back in the administration of the local church.
- 4. No deacon can effectively use his gift apart from being in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and having maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- 5. Therefore it takes a balance of residence in the soul of Filling of God the Holy Spirit and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to be an effective deacon functioning honorably.

v11: Likewise, in the same manner as the deacons compulsion of duty, wives of deacons must be worthy of respect, honorable, with spiritual growth under the influence of Bible Doctrine, not slanderers nor malicious gossips, temperate in the use of wine, therefore NOT a lush, to become dependable in all things.

1Tim 3:12

v12: Deacons keep on being manly noble husbands of one wife, they should be the head, governing, managing and ruling well their children before adulthood under their parents and their own households including all who live there free from objection and honorably, in privacy and freedom;

1Tim 3:13

v13: For they who have served honorably as deacons obtain, acquire or gain for themselves, a noble rank or profitable standing and also great confidence by means of the doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul associated with their being IN Christ Jesus.

**Lesson #43      Series # 467      1Tim 3:14**

- I. Freedom through Military Victory:
  - A. Maj. Merlin Dethelson, US Air force, March 10:1967, F105 Pilot, Vietnam.
  - B. Sgt David Charles Dolby Sp4 US Army, 8<sup>th</sup> Cav, 1<sup>st</sup> Calvary Division.
- II. Pastors and Deacons Leadership
  - A. You cannot in any leadership position be a slave to anything, not alcohol, women, children or money and rule anything especially the local church
  - B. The books of timothy bring in to the bible the most practical applications of Bible Doctrine.
- III. Authority in the Royal Family of God in the local church:
  - A. 3 types of authority in the local church.
    1. v14 Authority of Bible Doctrine
    2. v15 Authority of the Pastor Teacher
    3. v16 Authority of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - B. Apostasy when it occurs in the local church has a defense and counter attack:
    1. Defense is Bible Doctrine.
    2. Counter Attack is the Pastor Teacher communicating Bible Doctrine.
  - C. These 3 verses are a transitional paragraph which pull together the principles of Leadership in chapter 3, and satanic attack of apostasy in chapter 4
  - D. Authority of Bible Doctrine:
    1. Hebrews brings us to the from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God
    2. timothy Wipes our wimpiness in all of us.
- IV. Doctrine of Inspiration:
  - A. Definition:
    1. Those who are critical of expository teaching are generally those who have not had theological training and studying many many doctrines and especially in the area of inspiration.
    2. **God so supernaturally directed the writers of scripture that without waiving their human intelligence, individuality, literary style, personal feelings or any other human factor his own complete and inherent message to man was recorded in perfect accuracy in the ORIGINAL languages of scripture the very words being the authority of divine authorship.**
    3. When considering the phrase: “Without Waiving their Human Intelligence, individuality and literary style” we must remember that there is an incredible difference between authors of parts of scripture in their intelligence and education
      - i. There is an incredible difference between Micah and Moses
        - a. All farmers are NOT dumb but Micah was a DUMB farmer
        - b. Moses was one of the 5 greatest geniuses in Human History believer or unbeliever.
        - c. There is an incredible difference between the Hebrew of Micah and Moses.

- ii. The same thing was between Peter and Paul and Paul was another of the great geniuses and Peter was almost as dumb as Micah.
  - a. It is obvious that the literary style and intelligence and personalities were as different as imaginable and though they were totally different God's complete message was fulfilled.
- iii. In business we must be sure that Policy when set up it must be carried out by all who work in the business.
  - a. All kinds of people can be used to get the policy fulfilled.
  - b. There is no one type or category of person to get the job done right and if the executive is good and the policy is good then all kinds of people can be harnessed together to get the job done.

B. Mechanics of Inspiration (2 Factors)

1. Principle:

**2Tim 3:16**

**v16: All scripture is God Breathed (theopneustos), and is profitable for teaching of Bible Doctrine, for rebuke or reproof, for Correction, for training or instruction which is in righteousness**

- i. God Breathed == The inhale and exhale is involved in breathing and requires both.
- ii. Inhale == God the Holy Spirit as source of Bible Doctrine communicating to human authors the complete and coherent message for their generation and for all generations of Human History.
- iii. While authors of scripture had other messages from their preaching and writing for their generation it is not part of the canon not being pertinent for ALL generations.
- iv. Only what God wanted and was pertinent to all generations was actually recorded in the scripture

**2Sam 23:2-3, Is 59:21, Jer 1:9, Matt 22:42-43, Mk 12:36, Acts 4:24-25, 28:25**

- v. God the Holy Spirit communicated to human authors of scripture exactly what was to be recorded and this was written down.
- vi. There were MANY messages but only certain were written down and compiled into scripture.
- vii. Therefore God the Holy Spirit provides the information and the human author inhales the information and then Exhales it in written form.
- viii. In the exhale the human writer of scripture wrote in the language in which he thought, Hebrew, Chaldean, or Greek the divine message to man.
- ix. They did not waive their human intelligence but it was used by God the Holy Spirit including their vocabulary and the words were expressed through their own personality and positions and situations, individuality, and personal feelings.
- x. This accurate information was then preserved by God right down to his moment in Human History.

C. Writers of Scripture (2 Kinds)

1. Old Testament Scripture writers all who were prophets

- i. Unique prophet having office and gift of prophecy
- ii. Office of Prophet who was an official recognized communicator like a pastor
- iii. Gift of Prophet was anyone in life who was a writer of scripture was given the gift to write but not the office.
  - a. This was David
- iv. There are 3 sections of the Old Testament Scripture:
  - a. Unique Prophet wrote the Torah which refers to the first 5 books of the New Testament Scripture.
    - i) Moses

- ii ) Jeremiah
      - iii ) Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
      - iv ) These had both the Gift of prophecy and the Office of the Prophet.
    - b. Those with the Office of prophet, Navijim == Prophets (plural), wrote this section
      - i ) Joshua
      - ii ) Samuel – Judges, 1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> Samuel.
      - iii ) Nathan & Gad – Kings and Chronicles
      - iv ) Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Hosea, Habakkuk, Zechariah, Malachai.
    - c. Those with the gift of prophet wrote the Kethubim == writings (plural)
      - i ) David, Solomon, Job, Daniel, Ezra, Nehemiah
      - ii ) David was king
      - iii ) Solomon was King
      - iv ) Job was a wealthy business man
      - v ) Daniel was a prime Minister
      - vi ) Ezra was a nobleman in the Persian court and general officer who rescued the Jews and was a Jew.
      - vii ) Nehemiah was a scribe.
  - 2. New Testament Scripture writers all who were apostles or ones very closely associated with apostles:
    - i. Mark associated with Peter
    - ii. Luke associated with Paul.
- D. Problem of precanon revelation:
1. There are all kinds of authors of men who wrote scripture all types of intelligence, academic training, personalities were included.
    - i. No one who is a believer and members of the Royal Family of God should ever have any kind of inferiority or reticence because of lacking something in education or personality or wealth or any other factor.
    - ii. There is no excuse for any kind of inferiority complex in ANY member of the Royal Family of God.
    - iii. If you have some bad thing in the past or other inferiority problem Bible Doctrine will correct it in time.
    - iv. There is no such thing as a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace who has either superiority or inferiority complexes and between these is CONFIDENCE in Bible Doctrine.
    - v. People with either of these complexes always are involved in BLIND ARROGANCE.
    - vi. People try to compensate all their lives for lack of education or other things associated with greatness or a poor family heritage ETC, ETC.
    - vii. We cannot afford to have either Guilt complex or Superiority / Inferiority complex.
  2. The scripture was not reduced to writing until Moses but there was already at least 2000 years of history before Moses.
    - i. Adam, Eve, Noah, Shem Japheth, Ham none of these had bibles.
    - ii. Precanon revelation from God came through God the Holy Spirit: 2Sam 23:2, Ez 2:2, 8:3, 11:1+24, Micah 3:8, Heb 3:7
    - iii. Before Moses began to write as God the Holy Spirit directed him from Adam to Moses, God the Holy Spirit was still the source of divine revelation in many ways.
    - iv. God the Holy Spirit used elect angels for teaching prior to Moses and the beginning of the canon of scripture
    - v. God the Holy Spirit himself used dreams, visions and trances

- vi. God the Father also used voice to verbalize divine revelation.
  - vii. Because of these things no one lacked divine revelation BEFORE the canon was started and during the whole process of completion of the canon.
  - viii. No one ever lacked Bible Doctrine from Adam in the garden to this year of 2018 and never has anyone ever lacked for Bible Doctrine in any way at any time.
  - ix. The only thing which can keep the believer from Bible Doctrine is Negative Volition on his part.
3. Once the canon began there were 4 categories of revelation from God:
- i. God the Father and the spoken word
  - ii. Dreams **Gen 15:12, 31:10-13, Num 12:6, Dan 10:9**
    - a. This is divine revelation involving a sleeping state where God revealed himself.
  - iii. Visions **Is 1:1, 6:1, 1<sup>st</sup> Kings 22:19**
    - a. This is divine revelation involving a wide awake state where God reveals himself and you are ecstatic.
    - b. This is being awake and stimulated
  - iv. Trances
    - a. This is divine revelation involving a wide awake state where God reveals himself and you are super stimulated
    - b. In legitimate trances the soul comes out of the body in a super ecstatic state.
  - v. Angelic (the most common means of teaching)
    - a. Before the canon was formed and while it was being formed before it was completed angels were very busy teaching **Deut 33:2, Ps 68:17, Acts 7:53, Gal 3:19**
  - vi. Once the canon is being formed it provides its own vocabulary:
    - a. (gr) Canon == rule, ruler, norm or standard == the commonly accepted theological nomenclature for the bible or any portion of it.
- E. Portions of the Canon of Scripture:
- 1. Heb 4:12, the word of God
    - i. This relates the bible to God the Father
  - 2. 1Cor 2:16, the mind of Christ
    - i. This relates the bible to God the Son
  - 3. Heb 3:7, The voice of God the Holy Spirit
    - i. This relates the bible to God the Holy Spirit.
  - 4. NO ONE in the trinity is left out in the descriptive terminology for the Canon.
- F. Origin of Scripture:
- 1. All scripture originates from God.
  - 2. In the mechanics God the Holy Spirit
  - 3. God the Father spoke in the Old Testament Scripture
  - 4. God the Son taught on earth
  - 5. God the Holy Spirit communicated to human writers.
  - 6. Thus the trinity is the source of the scripture and perfection in the source means perfection in the book.
  - 7. No scripture originates with human volition, design or purpose **2Pet 1:20-21**
  - 8. This is important to understand in order to properly place such information as is contained in the “acts of Paul and Thecklah”, Acts of Phillip” and many other false books such as the “Pseudapygrapha”, and all are rejected.
- G. Value of the canon of scripture **Ps 138:2**
- H. The extent of inspiration or What does the scripture cover and what does God discuss with us:
- 1. The only accurate description of early Human History comes from the bible and thus it deals with the UNKNOWN Past of the Human Race.

- i. While people have lived in caves and the business of man starting in caves and advancing from there is a figment of imagination of some archaeologist or historian.
  - ii. Straight Human History must be learned from the bible.
  - iii. What was the universe like before man existed, how did it come into existence and what caused it to change ie the Angelic Conflict.
  - iv. These are found in Genesis and occasionally in books like Isaiah so that we know all about what God wants us to know and all that is necessary and accurate from the word of God.
  - v. There were very few records which came through the flood but we have a perfectly accurate description of the Antediluvian civilization in the first 9 chapters of Genesis.
  - vi. The beginning of the Post deluvian civilization and the problems pertaining to it is in Genesis 9-11.
  - vii. The only accurate delineation of races and how purity in race was destroyed is found only in Genesis 1-11
  - viii. The unknown past is not unknown and we have details in these 11 chapters.
2. The bible is not a historical text but it is the only accurate book of ancient history.
- i. It contains many accurate descriptions of history and these are the background for communication of Bible Doctrine under icegogics.
  - ii. When the bible makes a historical reference that is totally accurate and when there is a contradiction between modern historical interpretations and the bible the BIBLE is always right.
  - iii. WE learn also that when we get an accurate historical fact and then see how a liberal history professor deals with it we learn how to correctly interpret history.
  - iv. Therefore we can interpret contemporary history better being shown by the scripture how to do it.
3. The bible is the only book which teaches the true meaning of Objective Law
- i. We have lost this in our country
    - a. Our jury system is broken down and we must have a jury of PEERS and no one is tried by his peers any longer.
    - b. We have lost track of peerage due to the break out of the rash of liberalism after WWII.
  - ii. The bible contains a complete and correct definition of LAW.
  - iii. Law must have an incorruptible Judge who is objective and honorable, honest and beyond any form of bribery or prejudice.
    - a. Moses appointed 70 men to help him judge.
  - iv. There must be only bonifide evidence brought into trials and the bible has clear delineations of the laws of evidence.
  - v. Hearsay is completely eliminated and this distorts evidence and there must be at least 2 or 3 independent witnesses.
  - vi. The law must deal with property, life and privacy of individuals and this is where our legislative branches of government have gone overboard not respecting our privacy nor our property and certainly our life is in danger many many times when law takes away the ability for self defense for individuals.
  - vii. Objective law is part of the Plan of God for mankind and is part of the Laws of Divine Establishment in any nation.
  - viii. There must be law for the nation to protect the individual and provide freedom as in the Decalogue designed to provide freedom and privacy for individuals.
  - ix. Law is designed by God to ensure that the Human Race will survive this phase of the Angelic Conflict and therefore the bible as inspired scripture is where God has provided all true bases for Law.

4. Dictation where some parts of the scripture contain direct quotes from God.
  - i. The doctrine of inspiration demands that such quotes are properly recorded in the exact way God spoke them or the exact way God wills them to be recorded.
  - ii. Dictation carries no more weight than any other part of scripture.
5. Devotional Literature such as Psalms and Proverbs
  - i. This is man in relationship to God as in practical applications
  - ii. Man in relationship to man
  - iii. Man in relationship to materialistic things
  - iv. Man in relationship to animals
  - v. These all form an area of scripture where God uses the relationships, problems, pressures, prosperity, failures, happiness, sadness of certain believers to reveal principles, provisions and blessings of the Plan of God.
6. Prophecy
  - i. Inspiration involves a selection of prophetic materials and their complete accuracy.
  - ii. Many of the things once prophecy in the Old Testament Scripture have been fulfilled.
  - iii. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and his 1<sup>st</sup> advent and other things about him have been fulfilled
  - iv. There are still many unfulfilled prophecy in scripture.
7. Recording of that which is false doctrine or Lies
  - i. Lies and untruths and blasphemes and false viewpoints and inspiration does not sponsor these things but guarantees the accuracy of these things.
  - ii. Eccl is a picture of this principle.

**Lesson #44      Series # 467      1Tim 3:14**

- I. Freedom through military victory:
  - A. Kern W Dunnigan, Maj US Army, 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion, 46<sup>th</sup> Infantry, Americal Division, 13-14 May 1969, Quan Ti Province Vietnam
- II. Authority in the Royal Family of God
  - A. The only authority free from the Cosmic Dynaspheres and it is the highest authority given by God in the Human Race at this time in the Church Age.
    1. Authority of Bible Doctrine v14
    2. Authority of the Pastor Teacher v15
    3. Authority of the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ v16
- III. Authority of Bible Doctrine:
  - A. Paul writes to timothy with the expectation of visiting and writes for his advantage the doctrines of this epistle under the mechanics of divine inspiration.
    1. Paul expected to see timothy but this was not to occur because Paul was being searched for by Romans under order of Nero and he was ultimately imprisoned.
    2. It is obvious therefore that God the Holy Spirit had Paul write these things BECAUSE he would not be able to visit timothy.
  - B. Paul's plan to meet with and visit with timothy were not to be allowed.
    1. God had other plans for Paul
    2. IT IS ACCEPTABLE TO MAKE PLANS AS LONG AS THEY DO NOT THE WILL OF GOD FOR YOUR LIFE.
    3. Timothy needed to straighten out his situation himself without any help from someone who was strong like Paul.
- IV. Authority of the Pastor Teacher:
  - A. This is the authority of the word having been written into the Canon of Scripture and once it is a part of the Canon of Scripture you cannot personally read nor memorize it and advance in the Spiritual Life.

1. You cannot do it individually, nor sit with a group and discuss it nor have family bible readings and grow in the Spiritual Life.
  2. To grow in the Spiritual Life requires self discipline and academic discipline under the authority of a prepared Pastor Teacher who teaches solid Bible Doctrine.
  3. You cannot use the bible as a book to win debates and you are not to use the bible nor Bible Doctrine but is uses YOU.
  4. You don't read books about the bible and grow up nor by going to ladies only bible studies but ONLY by going to a local church where a MALE Pastor Teacher is teaching Bible Doctrine under the principles of Exegesis, Isogogics and categorical teaching.
  5. The only way to grow up is through self discipline.
  6. Every believer must get under the authority of their own right Pastor Teacher in order to grow in the Spiritual Life.
  7. You will not grow with deceit and dishonesty but only by getting under authority and staying under it even if it HURTS.
- B. Principles of the middle voice of behaving or conducting self:
1. The middle voice is used to describe the subject participating in the action of the verb.
  2. Active voice emphasizes the action the middle voice the agent producing the action.
  3. Middle voice relates the action more INTIMATELY than the active.
- C. In the house of God you don't:
1. Engage in constant genuflection getting down and back up.
  2. Don't stand around and do ritualistic motions such as crossing self.
  3. It is not a place for poor manners, lack of poise or rudeness.
  4. You must never move around and distract others.
  5. No movement or sound
- D. In the house of God you:
1. Must have silence and objectivity and concentration and immobility.
  2. Only getting up and leaving if it is a matter of sickness or life and death.
- E. The church is called the "House of God" because the original churches always met in private homes and later when they were persecuted they moved into fields and caves.
1. It was about 300 years before the church met in dedicated buildings and this came about the time of Pope Gregory the Great.
  2. Whenever a group of believers meet together under the authority of the Pastor Teacher wherever they meet is the "HOUSE" of God.
  3. The local church is referred to by this phrase and is the only authorized classroom for the teaching of Bible Doctrine in the Church Age.
  4. No matter how the local church fails in any generation it has never been superseded by any outside organization and never will be.
  5. Whether they are weak or apostate the local church will always stand as the only classroom for the teaching of Bible Doctrine.
  6. God knew that the local church would break down and form denominations or become apostate or fail in other ways but God NEVER called or authorized ANY outside organization to take the place of the local church.
  7. These organization for the most part are sincere in trying to help people but they are confused in that they don't understand the difference between Christian SERVICE and GROWTH.
  8. Service comes from GROWTH and never results in GROWTH and GROWTH comes only from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
  9. YOU can only move up in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace by listening and learning.
  10. ALL SPIRITUAL ADVANCE IS MADE BY KEEPING YOUR MOUTH SHUT AND OPENING YOUR EARS, CONCENTRATING ON WHAT IS TAUGHT TO YOU.



11. You cannot be singing or giving testimony or discussing the bible etc., you must listen and learn.
12. The local church is not superseded by any outside organization NOR by any denomination and Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
13. Any organization outside the local church which qualifies self or declares self or claims to function for the believer in providing the means of spiritual growth automatically puts itself into the category of EVIL.
14. All spiritual advance comes from the teaching ministry in the local church.
15. This is not to imply that all local churches advance believers but there MUST be a solid teaching ministry.

F. Summary:

1. Basic worship is the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
2. This is accomplished in the “House of God” the local church under strict academic discipline.
3. God has ordained the authority of the local church nothing is left to guess or chance.
4. The absolute ruling authority is the Pastor Teacher or pastor guardian of the local church.
5. His authority is established by his **consistent study and teaching from the pulpit**.
  - i. Any pastor who gains authority does so by faithful study and teaching of Bible Doctrine.
  - ii. At the same time you establish a GRACE policy in the local church.
6. The administrative authority is vested in the board of deacons but policy making is the sole function of the Pastor Teacher.
  - i. This does not mean the deacons cannot make policy but their policy they propose must align with the underlying policy and principle of grace as delineated from the teaching of the Pastor Teacher.
7. There is NO plurality of ELDERS and this is Hearasy.
  - i. The Elder is the Pastor Teacher and there is ONLY one for every local church.
  - ii. The concept of plurality of elders is the result of blind arrogance in the congregation where those involved overestimate their knowledge of Bible Doctrine and their teaching ability.
  - iii. These people are all on an ego trip and rarely can they keep any Pastor Teacher giving them doctrine.
  - iv. This is a blind arrogance principle whereby certain laymen think they are the greatest bible scholars ever.
8. All other facets of worship must conform to and be standardized by policy from the Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - i. He have the local church and right Pastor Teacher teaching solid Bible Doctrine so that we can build up our own personal internal dictator in the soul.
  - ii. We should be spiritually self sustaining and cannot be without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - iii. Once we have a maximum of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul we have a command post in the soul and we WILL take orders from that command post.
  - iv. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul becomes your inner dictator and there comes a point where you become spiritually self sustaining and you make your own decisions from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - v. This results in NO pastor living any life but his OWN and counseling is not his job.

- vi. Every person must live his own life and the Pastor Teacher has absolute authority in the local church in order that he can objectively communicate Bible Doctrine so that you can build up your own inner dictator in your own soul and with your dictator YOU CAN RUN YOUR OWN LIFE AS UNTO THE LORD.
- vii. You can only live life as unto the lord with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- viii. The only job of the Pastor Teacher is to teach Bible Doctrine while the job of the believer is to take that Bible Doctrine and USE IT IN THEIR LIFE
- 9. Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul under Filling of God the Holy Spirit produces other forms of worship.
  - i. Giving of money
    - a. Giving is from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - ii. Word of praise or testimony
  - iii. Singing Hymns about things of doctrine.
  - iv. Observation of the Eucharist Ritual.
  - v. Teaching in prep school
  - vi. Other Service
  - vii. These worship forms come from basic worship which is function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception with mouth closed, ears open and body totally immobile under strict academic discipline.
- 10. For the congregation worship consists basically of
  - i. Concentration on the teaching of Bible Doctrine
  - ii. Good manners in the local church.
  - iii. Silence while the pastor is teaching.
  - iv. Poise to maintain concentration when others are disturbing.
  - v. Submission to the authority of the Pastor Teacher in his TEACHING function.
- 11. Timothy is an epistle on the function of the local church.
- G. It is already apparent that timothy is not in control of the local church
  - 1. Men like Hymeneas and Alexander were insubordinate to Timothy's guardianship.
  - 2. Men were failing in prayer
  - 3. Women were rude in the local church usurping the authority of Timothy.
  - 4. Evil and Reversionism were spreading like a disease in Ephesus.
  - 5. This explains the doctrine of demons and ascetic reversionism in Ephesus.

**1Tim 3:14**

**v14: These things, the doctrines and applications, I am writing, under divine inspiration from God the Holy Spirit, to you for your advantage, in the New Testament Canon of Scripture which will perpetually exist, though confidently expecting to come to visit and be face to face with you with speed, speedily or without delay.**

**Lesson #45      Series # 467      1Tim 3:15**

- I. Authority in the local church continued:
  - A. The local church is the only system of communication of Bible Doctrine and the spiritual growth of the individual royal priest and the functions of worship.
  - B. Principles:
    - 1. This passage is describing the local church the place of discipline and authority NOT the universal royal priesthood but here it is a group of people assembled for the teaching of Bible Doctrine and worship.
    - 2. Discipline and authority are the foundation principles for learning Bible Doctrine in the local church which is essential for spiritual growth of the Royal Family of God members.
    - 3. The Pastor Teacher receives from God the only authority in Human History not in any way related to the Cosmic Dynasphere.

4. Therefore guardianship of the local church carries the highest type of authority in the intensified stage of the Angelic Conflict the Church Age.

## II. Doctrine of the church:

### A. Nomenclature and Definition:

1. The Church == Royal Family of God or positional sanctification where every believer is in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
2. The Church relates to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as ruler:
  - i. The Body == The Church or Royal Family of God on Earth
  - ii. Bride of Christ == The Church or Royal Family of God In heaven.
3. (gr) (n) ecclesia {attic Greek} == Church == a place for a get together.
  - i. Citizens (30,000) gathering in the amphitheater to conduct business in their democracy.
    - a. Democracy is the worst form of government and always results inevitably in a dictatorship and it is so bad that even bad people cannot use it for government.
    - b. Even bleeding heart liberals cannot use this for government.
    - c. We are a republic and this is an excellent form of government requiring a MAXIMUM amount of character, honor, integrity and nobility from the citizens.
    - d. The republic breaks down when the VOTING franchise is extended beyond property owners and veterans of the military.
    - e. When the vote is given to WOMEN, Rabble in the cities and non property or non business owners you have a breakdown and eventual destruction of that government.
    - f. Today our republic constitution has been set aside and we are undergoing what SPQR went through where bleeding Heart liberals had taken over and people moved to the cities and had no farmers nor agriculture and then they started feeding everyone in the welfare state in the cities by taxing those who had money.
    - g. When you start giving people money or that which they need to survive which they have not earned nor deserve many more people will figure out how to get in on that free handout system being lazy and having no character and this is what destroyed the Romans.
    - h. When the state starts feeding people the next thing is that they want entertainment from the state and this was the Gladiators and feeding Christians to the lions.
    - i. Then you get to the point where people are satiated with food and welfare and they get bored with this and then get angry and there is then violence and revolution and in Rome there was 100 years of revolution before Caesar put an end to everything.
    - j. Here we are today in the United States of America in a welfare state with kneeling football games and next there will be revolution and destruction and it is INEVITABLE.
    - k. After this there will be some form of government much different than our present form where it will be an oligarchy or dictatorship and this will be the recovery.
    - l. These are better governments in that one or several SMART people make decisions rather than having our government watered down with idiots voting for more degenerate idiots.
    - m. We are doing so many stupid things we go into Vietnam and out of it, we go into the middle east and then try to get out of it, we support the rulers

- of countries and then abandon them as in Iran and Guatemala and other nations.
- n. We turn more and more over to communism and now we in our decadence are turning even our legal system over to moslems.
  - o. If we are even semi intelligent we see history repeating itself but people only are concerned about their lifetime and what they have and can GET for nothing not what will become of the country in the future.
  - p. In addition the Athenian Greeks went through this being a democracy they eventually became an Oligarchy and then a single man of genius became the ruler and passed all the laws his name was Solon and he passed a bunch of intelligent laws and the last one was that no one could change the law except if they consulted him and then he left for 10 years.
  - q. This brought Athens into its golden age.
  - r. This is the best system where ONE man comes along and does a GREAT Job.
  - s. It takes one man of great genius to undo or correct what all the idiots have done to screw things up.
- ii. This was the development of confusion in Greece but also to the GREAT language of Greece.
  - iii. In the 2<sup>nd</sup> century BC when the Old Testament Scripture was translated into Greek in the septigent the translation of the 70.
    - a. Assemble was there translated into Ecclesia and was referencing the Old Testament Scripture assembly of Jews before Moses.
    - b. Church is one word in the English language where there is no basis for it.
    - c. There is no reason for this word and ecclesia has nothing to do with “church” but is an assembly.
    - d. Church is from “romanism” and is an old bad classic roman word without any basis for it.
    - e. Even fraternities when they got together for a real drunken party they called this an Ecclesia an assembly.
    - f. Church is the most meaningless word ever to come in the English language.
  - iv. The 3<sup>rd</sup> use brings this into the New Testament Scripture (gr) sunagoge == assembly and this is transliterated into English as Synagogue where they assembled and worshiped after the pattern of Moses and their forefathers.
    - a. Matt 18:17 used for the assembly of a Jewish synagogue.
  - v. The 4<sup>th</sup> use in the time of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and writing of the New Testament Scripture there were left overs from the Hellenistic monarchies after Alexander the great died from alcoholism at age 33.
    - a. If you are ever in a hot environment never drink alcohol as it dehydrates and debilitates you and will kill you.
    - b. Alexanders kingdom was broken up into several monarchies such as the Seleucid Kingdom and the Ptolemys of Egypt, with Cleopatra as the last ruler.
    - c. The History of the rise of Rome is the history of the absorption of the Hellenistic monarchies of the east by Rome.
    - d. Acts 19:25 the assembly of the government in the Greek city state was called Ecclesia.
  - vi. The 5<sup>th</sup> use is the technical theological in Christianity and this use of it is called “church”.
    - a. The technical use gives us a breakdown in the 2 different uses:

- b. It is used for all believers, Royal Family of God, on the earth, **Eph 1:22-23, 5:25-27, Col 1:17-18**
          - i) This is the UNIVERSAL church.
          - ii) This applies to believers in the Church Age on earth or in heaven.
        - c. The classroom of the royal priesthood is the most confusing use and it is located in a specific geographical area and made up of at least 2 or 3 gathered together in a specific building. **1Cor 1:2, 1Thes 1:1, Rev 2+3, 1Tim 3:15**
  - 4. Information regarding the local church:
    - i. It is made up of the assembly of believers ONLY.
      - a. It is not a place for evangelizing although the local church is used for this at times and it is only a custom from the 19<sup>th</sup> century.
      - b. The gift of evangelism functions outside the local church and is for the unbelievers.
      - c. At one point Billy Graham had a local church in Illinois and suddenly realize that he had the spiritual gift of evangelism and with great intelligence he LEFT the local church and began to evangelize and this is the way the gift should be used.
      - d. Evangelism is to occur OUTSIDE the local church not in the local church and it can be in a mass meeting or individually while the local church is an ASSEMBLY of Believers.
      - e. There is nothing wrong with evangelizing in the local church provided that it is not the whole function of the Pastor Teacher in the local church.
    - ii. The local church is a classroom for believers the Royal Family of God ONLY.
      - a. The benefits are for believers ONLY.
      - b. If you are an unbeliever you NEVER give in the local church.
      - c. If you are an unbeliever you never partake of the Eucharist and this is blasphemous if you do.
- B. Dispensational Orientation:
  - 1. This Church Age is the mystery age **Rom 16:25-26, Eph 3:1-5 Col 1:25-26**
  - 2. The Church Age was not know in the Old Testament Scripture and it is an inserted or intercalated dispensation.
  - 3. It was needed because when Christ died, resurrected and ascended Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was a new royalty in heaven with a Resurrection Body without a Royal Family.
  - 4. The Age of Israel in which the death burial resurrection and ascension occurred was temporarily halted on the day of Pentecost and at that point God began to call out the Royal Family of God in what we call the Church Age but which is the dispensation of the Royal Family of God..
  - 5. This Church Age began with some of the Old Testament Scripture saints the disciples or apostles and from then on every believer in this dispensation is part of the Royal Family of God.
  - 6. When the Royal Family of God is completed then the rapture will occur where all Royal Family of God will receive their Resurrection Body and our privilege is to have our Resurrection Body prior to any other believers in any other dispensation.
  - 7. Under the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit we are placed into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and made Royal Family of God.
  - 8. At the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ Satan is overthrown and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ will return and PRESENT the Royal Family of God as his royal family to the whole world.
  - 9. At that time some will be in Resurrection Body the Royal Family of God and Old Testament Scripture saints and some living on the earth in human bodies.
- C. Beginning of the Church Age:

1. The Jewish age was interrupted 7 years short of its completion and the Church Age interspersed between its parts
  2. The Jewish age will not be completed until the tribulation and GOD never mixes dispensations, never Israel mixed with the Church Age.
  3. The reason for this interruption is calling out the Royal Family of God and intensification of the Angelic Conflict.
    - i. The church did not begin with Abraham as per covenant theology
    - ii. The Church Age was future at the time of 1<sup>st</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ. **Matt 16:18**
      - a. The church is built on the “acknowledging” of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as the messiah son of God.
      - b. Peter was a chip of the stone as we are and the entire stone is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at the right hand of God the Father.
  4. The Church Age began on the day of Pentecost AD30.
    - i. God took the 11 disciples and about 185 others to start the Royal Family of God and the Church Age.
    - ii. It begins with Baptism of God the Holy Spirit by which the Royal Family of God is formed **Acts 1:5** Prophecy
      - a. Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is not an experience and it is God the Holy Spirit entering us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    - iii. On this day the speaking in tongues occurred and was needed because Judah was still a nation and had to be warned with those speaking in gentile languages giving the gospel.
      - a. This occurred by Jews who were uni-lingual or at most bilingual and it was the 40 year warning to the southern kingdom that they would be destroyed.
      - b. The warning of Isaiah foretold of a gift which was miraculous were by a person who could only speak in one language would give the gospel in many other languages.
      - c. Today the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is thought to be that babbling called today speaking in tongues.
      - d. God the Holy Spirit does not speak in tongues nor cause it but simply gave the spiritual gift to those reasonably smart people who needed it in 30 AD.
      - e. Today the idiotic screwballs calling self ‘charismatics’ are simply goofy.
    - iv. This happened for 1 DAY bringing in the new dispensation with a great party where the whole realm of spiritual gifts were exercised:
      - a. tongues, apostleship, miracles, evangelism, ETC
      - b. The next day the party was over and it was back to routine study doctrine continually.
      - c. This party of speaking in tongues was finished and it is OVER but the tragedy is that these emotional rejects today try to get their stimulation from their vocal cords and they do not know it was over.
    - v. Speaking in tongues, miracles and healings by people is part of the party which is OVER totally.
      - a. Speaking in tongues by the charismatics is a maligning of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit which they do not understand in any way.
      - b. They have in the worst way blasphemed God the Holy Spirit.
      - c. These spiritual gifts were terminated as was prophecy and others in AD70.
      - d. **Acts 1:5** Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ prophesied the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and in **Acts 2:1-3** it began and we learn this from peters retrospective reflection on the day of Pentecost in **Acts 11:15-16**
- D. The termination of the Church Age:

1. It will terminate with the resurrection or the rapture of the church.

**Lesson #46**

**Series # 467**

**1Tim 3:15**

- I. Review of the Doctrine of the church and Continued:
  - A. No one can have any authority in the local church and be a slave to Alcohol, Women, Money, or any other thing, especially not the Pastor Teacher nor the Deacons
  - B. The Church Age
    1. The Age of Israel in which the death burial resurrection and ascension of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ occurred was temporarily halted on the day of Pentecost and at that point God began to call out a Royal Family for the strategic battlefield royalty of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, in what we call the Church Age but which is the dispensation of the Royal Family of God.
    2. The Church Age began on the day of Pentecost AD30.
      - i. God took the 11 disciples and about 185 others to start the Royal Family of God and the Church Age.
      - ii. It begins with Baptism of God the Holy Spirit by which the Royal Family of God is formed **Acts 1:5** Prophecy
        - a. Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is not an experience and it is God the Holy Spirit entering us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    3. On this day the speaking in tongues occurred and this was the PARTY period of the beginning of the Church Age.
      - i. This was needed because Judah was still a nation and had to be warned with those speaking in gentile languages giving the gospel of the coming of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline..
        - a. This occurred by Jews who were uni-lingual or at most bilingual and it was the 40 year warning to the southern kingdom that they would be destroyed.
        - b. Today the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is thought to be that babbling called today speaking in tongues.
        - c. Today the idiotic screwballs calling self 'charismatics' are simply goofy.
  - C. Termination of the Church Age:
    1. This is to be much more dramatic than the beginning of the dispensation.
      - i. In the beginning the people around those who speak in tongues thought they were drunk.
      - ii. Peter even had to give a speech on the fact that they were not drunk what a way to start the Church Age.
    2. When this dispensation is completed it means that the Royal Family of God is completed and it is so great that God will take all members of the Royal Family of God off of the earth dramatically with an overall resurrection.
      - i. This resurrection will show that RHIP, Royalty has its privileges and the Royal Family of God will have great privileges at the rapture.
      - ii. Those alive will be drawn up to be with the lord.
      - iii. Those dead will come down again and be resurrected to precede us and all will be with the lord.
      - iv. All believers will meet with the lord in the air some will rise up from the earth some will come down from heaven and meet in the air.
        - a. **1Cor 15:51-57 == Resurrection body minus the Old Sin Nature and Human Good and evil.**
        - b. **Phil 3;21 == We will have a body like Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ giving capacity for vertical and horizontal travel and ability to pass through solid objects.**
        - c. **1Thes 4:13-18 == Reuniting of Loved ones.**

**d. 1John 3:1-2 == Royal Family of God relationship forever.**

D. Synonyms for the Church: Demonstrating the relationship we in the Church Age as Royal Family of God have with God which is unique and different from all other believers in all other dispensations.

1. Last Adam and New Creation: **1Cor 15:45-47, 2Cor 5:17, Gal 6:15**
  - i. Last Adam is the royalty of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and rulership of the world.
  - ii. New creation is the Royal Family of God made up of believers
2. Head and Body: **Eph 1:22-23, 2;16, 4:4-5, 5:23, Col, 1Cor 12**
  - i. This is the manner of describing the authority of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as King of Kings over the church.
  - ii. We as believers are members of the body with differences in personality and spiritual gifts.
3. Shepherd and Sheep: **John 10, Heb13:20, 1Peter 5:4**
  - i. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as shepherd
  - ii. We as members of the Royal Family of God are his sheep.
4. Vine and Branches: **John 15**
  - i. Emphasizing royal family membership and the vine and branches have a very close integrative relationship and this emphasizes the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit putting us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
5. The chief cornerstone and stones of the building: **Eph 2:20, 1Pet 2:4-8**
  - i. Christ is the chief cornerstone, founder of the church.
  - ii. We as Royal Family of God are the stones of the building
6. The High Priest and Royal priesthood, **Heb 7:25, 10:10-14, 1Pet 2:5+9, Rev 1:6+**
7. The Groom and Bride: **2Cor 11:2, Eph 5:25-27, Rev 19:6-8**
  - i. This is the future of the church.

E. Uniqueness of the Church Age:

1. It is absolutely different and unique from all other dispensations and functions.
2. Members of the Church Age dispensation are by means of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and positional sanctification made to be members of the Royal Family of God.
  - i. Being in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ we are ROYALTY forever.
3. The universal priesthood of the believer in the Church Age makes all members of the Royal Family of God at the same time a royal priest.
  - i. The church is a kingdom of royal priests with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as high priest and supreme ruler and his representative on earth for the function of the royal priesthood is the pastor guardian of the local church.
4. Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit as a sign of being in the Royal Family of God.
5. Indwelling of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ for fellowship
6. Instructions for the Royal Family of God is reduced to writing and all divine instruction is in the written canon of scripture
7. We have a new classroom the local church
8. We have a new means of communication with the teaching of Bible Doctrine from the pulpit by the Pastor Teacher.
9. We have a supernatural way of life
10. Every believer in the Church Age has a life of meaning purpose and definition.
11. We are personal representatives of the lord on the earth and his royal ambassadors.

F. Objective of the Church Age believer is:

1. Balance of residence from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul combined with Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
2. Following the colors to the High Ground of Super Grace by consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.



3. Seizing and holding the Super Grace life to the point of dying grace and receiving 4 other categories of direct blessing from God for the believers ONLY in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - i. Spiritual blessing, Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, Sharing the Happiness of God, Use of Metabolized Bible Doctrine for application
  - ii. Temporal blessings of wealth, promotion, success prosperity in every category.
4. Blessing for others in the periphery of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by association with this believer in Super Grace.
5. Historical impact for the town, city, region, state, nation or even the world by the believer in Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.
6. Dying Blessing as Dying Grace.
7. Then decorations and rewards for eternal blessings and rewards.
8. For the believer who rejects Bible Doctrine they will go through warning, intensive and then dying Divine Discipline which is like a low crawl through ground glass as the end of life on this earth we call the Sin Unto Death.
  - i. These believers will be MINUS their Super Grace blessings in time, Minus blessing and reward in eternity, and minus dying grace blessings.
  - ii. This is determined only by attitude toward Bible Doctrine in time.
9. The Church Age is more dramatic than all other dispensations and more meaning to the individual believer than any other dispensation ever has been or will be.

II. The important thing in the Church Age for every believer is KNOWING:

A. The Pillar:

1. It was the support and decoration of the buildings of the ancient world.
2. There were 3 categories Doric, Ionic and Corinthian.
3. The roof supported by the pillars is analogous to the Super Grace believer having spiritual support from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - i. Our foundation upon which the pillars are set is our Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
  - ii. In order to have the roof of the Super Grace life we must have a Bible Doctrine support and this is the pillar.
4. Bible Doctrine in the foundation which is the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ must extend into the pillars.
  - i. We are saved by the Bible Doctrine of the gospel we understood about Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and were saved by faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
  - ii. This is the simplest doctrine of believe in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and you have salvation.
  - iii. Once you lay the foundation of salvation you must continue the same way with the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
  - iv. We were saved by hearing the gospel doctrine in some form and having heard it we responded and by Grace we were saved through faith.
  - v. The Royal Family of God MUST continue to live on Bible Doctrine and after the foundation of gospel Bible Doctrine the pillars MUST go up to support the walls and roof of the spiritual life of the believer.
  - vi. The pillar and foundation is the way the believer moves from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Surpassing Grace of eternity.
5. The key to the local church is that Bible Doctrine is taught regularly and accurately and this is the reason for the existence of the local church and the local church is the classroom for teaching Bible Doctrine

- i. This is where the pillars for support of the Spiritual Life of the believer is transferred from the pages of the canon into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer.
      - 6. This gives us the AUTHORITY of Bible Doctrine the word of God.
- III. The authority of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ:
- A. How does one become Godly:
    - 1. You don't have to be:
      - i. Wimpy
      - ii. Self Righteous
      - iii. Austere
      - iv. Ascetic
      - v. Arrogant
      - vi. Religious type
    - 2. It is the balance of residence coming from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul combined with Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
      - i. This is putting up pillars of Metabolized Bible Doctrine on the foundation of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to support Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God the Super Grace life.
      - ii. When as a believer have this balance of residence this is godliness.
  - B. How is godliness accomplished:
    - 1. It is EASY for the believer in the Church Age and all we have to do is be consistent in our function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
      - i. It is the reason for preservation of the canon,
      - ii. It is the reason for the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher
      - iii. It is the reason for the existence of the local church.
    - 2. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ did what was need for our Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God that being Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross for all human sin.
      - i. Redemption
      - ii. Reconciliation
      - iii. Propitiation
      - iv. And when it was completed he SAID "FINISHED".
      - v. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ did everything.
    - 3. Therefore to be saved and have Eternal Life with God we simply express faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
    - 4. Now under the concept of the Pillar:
      - i. We have the foundation Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God from faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
      - ii. The pillar is the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - C. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is God and has all the characteristics of the Essence of God.
    - 1. In deity he is invisible God with all the Essence of God characteristics.
    - 2. To be our savior he had to become visible with a human body to be judged for all sin.
- IV. The doctrine of the Hypostatic Union: How Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ became the unique person of the universe.
- A. Definition:
    - 1. In the person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ are 2 natures inseparably united without mixture or loss of separate identities without loss or transfer of properties or attributes the union being PERSONAL and ETERNAL.
    - 2. Scripture, **John 1:1-14, Rom 1:2-5, 9:5, Phil 2:5-11, 1tim 3:16, Heb 2;14**
    - 3. The incarnate person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ includes his deity

- i. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ when he became man he did not erase nor surrender his deity
  - ii. He is God coequal and co-eternal with God the Father and God the Holy Spirit.
  - iii. The incarnation does not diminish his divinity and he is undiminished deity.
  - iv. He continued to be all that is the Essence of God and maintained his sense of humor (The reason we exist in the first place).
  - v. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ continues to be God, always was and will be and he cannot and could not change the essence of his deity and it is totally unchangeable.
  - vi. The fact that he came in the flesh does not diminish nor change his deity in any way.
  - vii. There is a certain veiling of his deity not using it when submitting to the Will of God the father.
- B. The incarnate person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is also perfect true humanity
  - 1. He has body soul and human spirit
    - i. He is minus the Old Sin Nature and minus the imputed Adam's Original Sin.
    - ii. He lived a life of impeccability without personal sin.
    - iii. Through the virgin conception and birth Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ avoided the Old Sin Nature and imputation of Adam's Original Sin therefore avoided condemnation at physical birth.
- C. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is GOD and Perfect true humanity forever and is therefore absolutely UNIQUE.
  - 1. He is God and infinitely superior to humanity
    - i. He is perfect humanity therefore superior to sinful humanity.
    - ii. He is different from God being human and different from humanity being God.
    - iii. He is therefore the absolute unique person of the universe.
    - iv. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is not angelic but came into the world to resolve the conflict of angels.
    - v. He created MAN to resolve the Angelic Conflict and since man was created for this purpose it is the MAN Christ Jesus who does so.
    - vi. His uniqueness alerts us to the fact that he is the ONLY way to God and Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- D. Resolving the problem of merger of the deity and humanity:
  - 1. The 2 natures of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ are combined without merger or dilution of their respective attributes
    - i. The attributes of deity remain the attributes of deity.
      - a. He is sovereign God
      - b. He cannot change his deity
      - c. His infinite cannot be transferred to his humanity.
    - ii. The attributes of his humanity remain with his humanity adhering to the corresponding natures.
      - a. He is perfect sinless man.
    - iii. To rob God of any part of the Essence of God would destroy his deity and there fore he would not be God.
    - iv. To rob his humanity of any part of its essence would destroy his humanity.
    - v. Each remains in Status Quo in this union of the God man.
- E. No attribute of the Essence of God was changed by his incarnation.
  - 1. In fulfilling of the purpose of the 1<sup>st</sup> advent certain attributes of deity were used but this does not imply that they were surrendered or destroyed according to the FALSE doctrine of kenosis.

- i. The Doctrine of Kenosis says that in the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ he voluntarily restricted the use of his deity in keeping with the Plan of God for the 1<sup>st</sup> advent.
        - a. He gave up the independent exercise of certain divine attributes while living among men with man's human limitations.
        - b. This does not mean any were changed at any time.
- F. Therefore the union of the Essence of God and Essence or man in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ are considered HYPOSTATIC and PERSONAL.
  - 1. (gr) Hypostasis == to stand under, taking one thing upon oneself
    - i. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ took on himself true humanity Heb 13:3, and were we get Hypostatic Union.
      - a. This refers to the whole person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as distinguished from his 2 natures divine and human.
      - b. Divine and Human natures remain inviolate in the union and Hypostatic Union refers to the 2 of them together.
    - ii. This is personal in that it is the emergence of a unique person
      - a. Being God he is coequal and co-eternal with God the Father and God the Holy Spirit.
      - b. As man he is superior to all man different from an in that he is also God.
      - c. HE IS NOT ANGEL.
  - 2. There is a false interpretation of the Hypostatic Union:
    - i. They implied deity possessing humanity as the deity indwells us it indwelt the humanity of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    - ii. The union is in fact more than harmony and sympathy as per modern gnosticism.
    - iii. This is a personal union where divine and human have been combined into hypostasis forever both personal and eternal.
- G. Therefore Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the God / Man has one Hypostasis one essence forever.
  - 1. The attributes of both divine and human natures belong to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
    - i. The characteristics of one nature are never attributed to the other.
    - ii. In the 1<sup>st</sup> advent Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ could be OMNIPOTENT and Weak, OMNISCIENT and Ignorant needing the Grace Apparatus for Perception for spiritual advance, John 1:14, Luke 2:40+52
- H. Necessity for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ becoming humanity:
  - 1. Salvation Phil 2:7-8 Heb 2:14-15
    - i. In the deity of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ sovereignty is not subject to death not even the cross
      - a. His Eternal Life cannot die
      - b. His omnipresence cannot reduces itself to one point.
      - c. Immutability cannot ever be changed.
      - d. As deity he cannot go to the cross.
    - ii. He had to become TRUE humanity and also perfect without the Old Sin Nature and without Adam's Original Sin.
      - a. This was the purpose of the virgin conception and birth.
    - iii. He had to live 33 years without personal sin therefore being totally impeccable and qualified to engage in Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross for all human sins.
      - a. The redeemer must be a free man on the outside of the slave market of sin.
      - b. Adam was free and voluntarily went into the slave market with his personal sin.
      - c. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was also free but stayed out of the slave market and was therefore able to purchase the freedom from sin for all humans.

- iv. He had to become true humanity to go to the cross and engage in Substitutionary Spiritual Death for our salvation potential.
  - a. He is therefore totally and absolutely UNIQUE in the universe and one great means of drawing people to the cross and salvation.
- 2. Mediatorship, John 9, 1Tim 2
  - i. A mediator must bring together 2 estranged parties
    - a. God the Father, God the Son, God the Holy Spirit
    - b. Man all the Human Race into.
    - c. There is an estrangement and barrier between them.
  - ii. There must be a mediator to draw them together
    - a. The mediator must be COEQUAL with both parties.
    - b. As God he is coequal with God the Father and God the Holy Spirit.
    - c. He had to become humanity to bring together God and Man.
    - d. He is humanity and Deity and being equal with both parties he did bring them together.
- 3. Priesthood **Heb 7:4-5, m 14+28, 10:5, 10-14**
  - i. To be a Royal High Priest he had to be Man.
  - ii. As God he is not qualified to be a priest.
  - iii. He had to become God / Man and as such is royal high priest and prince ruler of church
- 4. King ruler, 2Sam 7, Ps 89
  - i. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was king as son of David.
  - ii. He had to become a man and be in the line of David to fulfill the Davidic covenant.
  - iii. Therefore he is ruler of Israel forever.
- I. Everything verbally communicated by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ during the incarnation came from 1 of 3 sources
  - 1. His Humanity
    - i. John 19:28 he said on the cross "I thirst"
    - ii. Deity cannot thirst it is impossible
  - 2. His Deity
    - i. "Before Abraham existed in time I existed Eternally"
    - ii. He preexisted Abraham from Eternity Past.
  - 3. His Hypostatic Union
    - i. "Come unto me all who labor and are heavy laden and I will give you rest"
    - ii. This was an invitation to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and could only be given as being in Hypostatic Union.
    - iii. It was given based on the fact he would go to the cross and function for a Substitutionary Spiritual Death for all human sins.
    - iv. Every salvation invitation he ever gave in his ministry came from his Hypostatic Union and the God / man was the source of our salvation potential.

1Tim 3:15

v15: **But if I am delayed in coming to see you, maybe I will be and maybe I won't be, I write, in order that, you may know from study of this epistle by function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, how or in what way one ought to behave or conduct oneself in the house of God, the local church, which category is, and always will be or keeps on being, the local church of or belonging to living God, the pillar of support and foundation even the doctrine.**

**Lesson #47      Series # 467      1Tim 3:16**

- I. Doctrine of the sustaining ministry of God the Holy Spirit to the incarnate Christ.
  - A. Definition:
    - 1. During the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the incarnation on earth the humanity of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was sustained in a personal way by the indwelling and Filling of God the Holy Spirit

- i. This was from birth of Christ to the grave and resurrection ascension and session.
- ii. This is a total ministry the indwelling regarding the body of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the filling regarding the soul of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- iii. There is a total ministry of God the Holy Spirit to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ because he is royalty by birth under the davidic covenant but also spiritual royalty.

B. The prophecy of the ministry of God the Holy Spirit to the incarnate Christ.

**Is 11:1-3**

**v1: Then a root shoot, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Hypostatic Union at the 1<sup>st</sup> advent, shall spring up from the stump of Jesse, the line of David through Nathan, and a branch, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent, millennial rulership, from his roots will bear fruit. (Jer 23:5-6, 33:15-16, Zech 3:8)**

**v2: Then the God the Holy Spirit of the LORD God the Father, will rest upon him with the indwelling and Filling of God the Holy Spirit, the spirit of wisdom and understanding making it possible for rapid Grace Apparatus for Perception function and Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, the spirit of correct counsel and power, the spirit of knowledge and the occupation with God the Father. Luke2, John 1:14**

**v3: And he will delight in occupation with Jehovah, God the Father, He will not judge by what his eyes see, nor make a decision by what his ears hear because there is no Human Viewpoint in him;**

**Is 42:1**

**v1: Behold my servant, whom I have sustained, my chosen one, elected to privilege to change history again and again, in whom my soul delights; I have put my Spirit upon him through indwelling and Filling of God the Holy Spirit as part of Logistical Grace, he will bring forth justice to the gentile nations.**

**Is 61:1**

**v1: The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, because the Jehovah, God the Father, has anointed me to bring good news to the humble or Grace Orientated; he has sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to those who are bound;**

C. The sustaining ministry of God the Holy Spirit and the virgin birth:

**Matt 1:18**

**v18: Now the birth of Christ was as follows, when his mother Mary had been betrothed to Joseph before they had sex, she was discovered to be pregnant by means of God the Holy Spirit**

**Matt 1:19**

**v19: Now Joseph her husband being an honorable or righteous man, not wanting to disgrace her, decided or desired to break off their marriage with a secret divorce and have her sent away secretly.**

**Matt 1:20**

**v20: While he was pondering or considered the facts and his plan, behold an angel of the lord appeared to him in a dream (having knocked him out) saying, "Joseph, Son of David, do not be afraid to retain Mary as your wife, for that which is conceived in her is from the source of God the Holy Spirit.**

1. That which was conceived in Mary was from God the Holy Spirit.
2. At the point of the virgin birth of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ we see already the sustaining of God the Holy Spirit who in fact was agent for the conception of the fetus in Mary.

**Heb 10:5**

**v5: Therefore when He {Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ} came into existence as humanity in the world, He said {baby, in deity, in the cradle Psalm 40:6-8}, "The act of giving {animal} sacrifices and {food} offerings You, Oh God, do not desire or make a command decision requiring, but You {Father} have prepared or equipped for Me a human body." (To qualify him as equal mediator between God and man)**

3. God the Father planned the human body of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and God the Holy Spirit was the agent of conception of that body.
4. God the Holy Spirit was the agent of the mechanics of a virgin conception and birth and God the Holy Spirit was the sustainer at the conception and birth of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the execution of the Hypostatic Union of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
5. Apart from God the Holy Spirit ministry the virgin Mary could not conceive and through agency of God the Holy Spirit there was pregnancy and ultimately the birth of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
6. Thus Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was born without Old Sin Nature and imputation of Adam's Original Sin.

7. He is thus like the first Adam and called the last Adam.
  8. He also lived his life without any transgression or sin and in his life he was tempted in ways far greater than we can ever understand.
  9. He lived a perfect life under the sustaining of God the Holy Spirit.
  10. God the Holy Spirit is responsible for the Hypostatic Union.
- D. The total ministry of God the Holy Spirit to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
1. Once Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ comes into the world as true humanity

**John 3:34**

**v34: For he whom God the Father has sent, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, speaks the words of God, for He God the Father did not give God the Holy Spirit by measure.**

2. God the Holy Spirit sent by God the Father caused Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in humanity to speak the words of the father and he was never given in measure but totally to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
3. **By measure** is the description of the ministry of God the Holy Spirit to Old Testament Scripture believers such as Moses, Jeremiah, David, and any other writers of the Old Testament Scripture canon or communicating Bible Doctrine in prophecy form.
  - i. This means that the ministry of God the Holy Spirit to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was a total ministry:
4. This means that not only does God the Holy Spirit indwell the human body of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ making him spiritual royalty but he also filled and controlled the soul of the humanity of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - i. This is the total sustaining ministry of God the Holy Spirit to royalty.
5. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in humanity was born royalty son of David by birth thus Jewish royalty by birth.
6. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ became Spiritual royalty which is a different factor and is being totally sustained by God the Holy Spirit thus the indwelling and Filling of God the Holy Spirit
  - i. This must be distinguished from human royalty
  - ii. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was royalty in the line of David
  - iii. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was spiritual royalty since from birth God the Holy Spirit filled his soul and indwelt his body totally.
  - iv. Immediately the infant Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was 2 types of royalty.
  - v. We believers in the Church Age ONLY are spiritual royalty following the pattern of spiritual royalty of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
  - vi. This infers therefore that all Church Age believers are indwelt in their bodies by God the Holy Spirit and then commanded to be under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
7. There was no spiritual royalty in the Old Testament Scripture times therefore God the Holy Spirit did not have a total ministry to any Old Testament Scripture believer.
  - i. He did not indwell the body of any Old Testament Scripture believer.
  - ii. He was given BY MEASURE to sustain the souls of certain special Old Testament Scripture believers.
8. The glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ by means of the session at the right hand of God the Father has instituted royalty of a spiritual nature.
9. Therefore the Age of Israel was interrupted so that the Royal Family of God could be formed in the Church Age.
10. This is accomplished by means of Baptism of God the Holy Spirit in the Church Age.
  - i. This is the means by which each of us at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God are entered into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ under the concepts of positional sanctification and truth.

- ii. God the Holy Spirit is the agent of conception and the agent of entering us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- 11. The believer in the Church Age is Royal Family of God
- 12. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as King of Kings and Lord of Lords is true royalty and therefore his body is indwelt and soul filled by God the Holy Spirit.
- 13. This is why believers in the Church Age as Royal Family of God have both the indwelling and are commanded to be under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
- 14. The total ministry to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ has been continued in the dispensation of the Royal Family of God.

E. God the Holy Spirit was related to the baptism of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ:

**Matt 3:13-17**

**v13: Then Jesus arrived at the Jordan from Galilee presenting himself to John, to be baptized by him.**

**v14: But John tried to prevent him, identifying him as messiah, perfect God and perfect humanity without sin therefore needing no baptism for salvation, saying, "I need to be baptized by you, and why do you come to me?"**

**v15: But Jesus answered him, "Permit it at this time; for it is fitting in this way for us, John and Jesus, to fulfill all righteousness." Therefore John permitted it.**

**v16: And after being baptized Jesus went up immediately from the water, and behold, the heavens were opened and he saw God the Holy Spirit descending exceedingly rapidly like a dove with vigor and power and dynamics, and coming upon him;**

**v17: and lo, a voice out of heaven, saying, "This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased."**

- 1. John did not want to baptize the savior who did not need salvation and had no sin.
- 2. The water of baptism for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ indicated that he at the beginning of his public ministry dedicated himself to fulfill the ministry and Plan of God by going to the cross and his intention was to go to the cross to complete the Substitutionary Spiritual Death for all human sin.

F. God the Holy Spirit related to the public ministry of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

- 1. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ quotes the prophecy of the spirits sustaining ministry **Is 42:1 in**

**Matt 12:18**

**v18: "Behold, my servant whom I have chosen, my beloved son in whom my soul is well pleased. I will put God the Holy Spirit upon him, and he shall proclaim justice to the Gentiles.**

- 2. In this context Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ indicates that his miracles were performed not under his own power independent of God the Father but under the sustaining ministry of God the Holy Spirit.

**Matt 12:28**

**v28: But if I cast out demons by means of God the Holy Spirit, then the kingdom of God has come upon you.**

- 3. Our lord performed his miracles and had a dynamic spoken ministry under the power of God the Holy Spirit.

**Luke 4:14-15, 18, 21**

**v14: And Jesus returned to Galilee by means of the power of God the Holy Spirit and a report, the news concerning him went out through all the surrounding country**

**v15: He began teaching in their synagogues, and was praised by all.**

**v17: and the book of the prophet Isaiah, was handed to him, and He unrolled the scroll and found the place where it was written, Is 61:1**

**v18: "The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he has anointed me to preach the gospel to the grace oriented. He has sent me to proclaim release to the captives and recovering of sight to the blind, to set free or at liberty those who are oppressed or downtrodden,**

**v21: And he began to say to them, "Today this scripture has been fulfilled in your hearing."**

- i. His teaching ministry
- ii. Fulfillment of Isaiah's prophecy
- iii. The sustaining ministry in the verbal ministry of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.



- G. The sustaining ministry of God the Holy Spirit was discontinued when Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was being judged on the cross.
1. This was refuted in later studies when it was concluded that God the Holy Spirit was what sustained Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ through the crucifixion. Matt 27:46--Ps 22;1
  2. God the Father judged the sins of humanity in the humanity of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
  3. Here it is stated that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in bearing the sins of humanity was forsaken by both God the Father and God the Holy Spirit both could have nothing to do with sin.

H. God the Holy Spirit had a part in the resurrection of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ

**Rom 8:11**

**v11: Now if God the Holy Spirit from Him God the Father who has raised up the humanity of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ from the Deaths both spiritual and physical, dwells in all of you as believers, and he does, he who raised Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ from the Deaths both spiritual and physical, he will also make alive your mortal bodies with a Resurrection Body by means of his spirit who resides in or indwells in you.**

1. God the Holy Spirit indwells us as Royal Family of God in the Church Age as a guarantee of resurrection.
2. God the Holy Spirit sustained Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on his trip to tartarus to announce the strategic victory of the angelic conflict to the incarcerated angels as a result of Gen 6.

**1Pet 3:18**

**v18: For Christ also, once and for all, died once in judgement having suffered for all, as a substitute for our sins, the righteous just one as a substitute for the unrighteous unjust ones, in order that he might bring us to face to face with God, on the one hand, having been put to physical death in the flesh (After Spiritual Death), but on the other hand having received Life by means of GHS.**

**1Pet 3:19**

**v19: By means of which GHS also, He Christ having received transportation (Into Hades) to tartarus, made a public proclamation of victory to the incarcerated spirits in Prison.**

- I. The sustaining ministry of God the Holy Spirit is transferred to the Royal Family of God:
1. Just as God the Holy Spirit sustained Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the incarnation so now he sustains the believer in the Royal Family of God during life on this earth.
  2. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was sustained as royalty and we as Church Age believers are also sustained as royalty.
    - i. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was perfect royalty
    - ii. We are sinful royalty.
  3. The strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ with is being seated at the right hand of God the Father demands the tactical victory of the Royal Family of God in the Church Age on earth during this intensified stage of the Angelic Conflict.
  4. The total ministry of God the Holy Spirit which never occurred before Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ includes the indwelling of the human body of the Church Age believer and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for our soul.
  5. This is the ministry of God the Holy Spirit to ROYALTY ONLY.
  6. This ministry of God the Holy Spirit to the Royal Family of God demands the balance of residence in the soul with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
    - i. We start with Filling of God the Holy Spirit and gain or lose it by means of sin but never lose the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit.
      - a. This is the total sustaining ministry of God the Holy Spirit for the Royal Family of God.
      - b. When we lose the Filling of God the Holy Spirit from sin or carnality we lose part of the sustaining and there are many things in the Spiritual Life

- we cannot do including functioning under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and other things as well and no spiritual function is possible.
- ii. In order that the Filling of God the Holy Spirit can have an outlet the lack of doctrine must become a plus and must become maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine and then we are in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and the place of dynamic impact of God the Holy Spirit on earth.
7. This is why Paul wrote to Galatians in Gal 4;19, that he was waiting for Christ to be formed in the believer by balance of residence of Filling of God the Holy Spirit with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

**Gal 4:19**

**v19: My little children {little born again ones - babies in Christ} I am sweating you out {literally means in birth pangs} until The Christ be formed in you.**

- i. We start with Filling of God the Holy Spirit and emphasize it but are minus Bible Doctrine.
  - ii. The only way to assimilate Bible Doctrine and for us to function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception is by means of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
  - iii. Thus the primary function of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for the new believer is to get Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - iv. The Grace Apparatus for Perception only functions under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and therefore the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and his ministry is only inward in the new believer until we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - v. The new believer under Filling of God the Holy Spirit shows nothing to others and the only important thing is for him to accumulate Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit thus causing a balance of residence at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - vi. The balance of residence of maximum Bible Doctrine and Filling of God the Holy Spirit is the sanctification of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
8. Therefore we are commanded to be under Filling of God the Holy Spirit

**Eph 5:18**

**v18: Stop (doing this thing you are doing already) getting drunk with Wine in which is destruction [debauchery], but keep on being Filled with GHS.**

**Gal 5:16**

**v16: For I say to you by means of GHS that you keep walking by means of GHS and you will NOT fulfill the lusts of the Flesh**

- i. This is Essential for gaining the balance of residence for the believer or for reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - ii. God the Holy Spirit takes under the Grace Apparatus for Perception Bible Doctrine and processes it through your soul setting aside any handicap you may have for learning Bible Doctrine and therefore IQ is not an issue only positive volition is the issue and Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
9. The sustaining ministry of God the Holy Spirit is then transferred from the resurrected glorified Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at the right hand of God the Father to the Royal Family of God on earth.
10. The believer is commanded to avail himself of this sustaining ministry of God the Holy Spirit **Rom 13:14**
- i. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit sets aside the lust patterns of the Old Sin Nature which would distract from the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.

**Rom 13:14**

**v14: But put on the Lord Jesus Christ by consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and entrance into Status Quo Super-Grace and Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, and STOP making provision for or giving forethought to the Old Sin Nature because of Lusts or distractions from Bible Doctrine in crusades or by persons or business or anything which involve sin, Human Good or evil.**

J. Conclusion:

1. God the Holy Spirit has never before sustained the universal believers of the Church Age in a total ministry.
2. This precedent was set by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the total ministry of God the Holy Spirit.
3. Once Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was present in heaven at the right hand of God the Father this total ministry was transferred to the Royal Family of God.

K. The Royal Family of God's glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ through the ministry of God the Holy Spirit:

1. Purpose of the sustaining ministry of God the Holy Spirit in the Church Age is to glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ **John 7:38-39**

**John 7:38**

**v38: "He who believes in me as the scripture has said, from his innermost being shall flow rivers of living water ( God the Holy Spirit ministry) "**

**John 7:39**

**v39: But this he taught concerning God the Holy Spirit whom those who had believed in him were about to receive (pentecost - the Church Age beginning) for God the Holy Spirit was not yet given for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was not yet glorified.**

- i. This is the transfer of the ministry of God the Holy Spirit to the Royal Family of God.
  - ii. The living water is the sustaining ministry of God the Holy Spirit.
2. Parallel statement, **John 16:13-14**

**John 16:13**

**v13: But when he the spirit of truth (energizer) has come, he will instruct or guide you into all truth or doctrine, for he will not speak from his own initiative but whatever he hears he will communicate and he will disclose to you things which are coming in the future,**

**John 16:14**

**v14: He will glorify me, he shall take of my doctrine and he shall communicate it to you.**

- i. The spirit of doctrine is the ministry of God the Holy Spirit in disclosure of the mystery Bible Doctrine of the Church Age.
3. It is the present ministry of God the Holy Spirit to glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and he accomplishes this through the teaching of Bible Doctrine, balance of residence and the many of expressions which come from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  4. The balance of residence of God the Holy Spirit with maximum Bible Doctrine causes the believer to be a letter of commendation written by God the Holy Spirit and read by men of our generation **2Cor 3:1-3**

**2Cor 3;1-3**

**v1: Are we beginning to commend ourselves again? Or do we need, as some do, letters of commendation to you, or from you?**

**v2: You yourselves are our letter of commendation, written in our Right Lobes, to be known and read by all men;**

**v3: Being manifested that you are a letter of Christ taught doctrine by us, written not with ink but with the Spirit of the living God, not on tablets of stone but on tablets of human Right Lobes through the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.**

- i. Paul was being sarcastic to the Corinthians who criticized Paul and who listened to all the false teachers and undercut Paul at every turn.

- ii. The ministry of God the Holy Spirit is after we reach Super Grace we are a letter of commendation written by the living God on the Right Lobe of our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- 5. The letter of commendation principle is the Royal Family of God in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace status.
- 6. At Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace there exists in the soul of the believer a balance of residence of Filling of God the Holy Spirit with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- 7. At this point Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is formed in the believer, **Gal 4;19**
- 8. At this point the indwelling of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ becomes a reality **Eph 3;16-17**

**Eph 3:16**

**v16: In order that he might give to you on the basis of the Riches of His Glory that you might receive strength, become strengthened in reaching Super Grace, by means of Power of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, through the personal agency of God the Holy Spirit with reverence to your inner being and balance of residence of Metabolized Bible Doctrine and God the Holy Spirit.**

**Eph 3:17**

**v17: In order that, Christ may be at home in your right lobes of your soul, by means of Metabolized Bible Doctrine assimilated in your right lobes through Filling of God the Holy Spirit, after you have been rooted by Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and after having received the foundation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Human Spirit, or established (have a secure place) by agency of Reciprocal Love for God.**

- 9. God the Holy Spirit accomplishes his ministry of glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ through this balance of residence in the soul of the believer.
- 10. This is tantamount to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God through prolonged and consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
- 11. The fulfillment of the transitional ministry of God the Holy Spirit and its result in the life of the believer, **Phil 1:20-21**

**Phil 1:20**

**v20: According to my earnest expectation, waiting calmly and humbly under authority and orders, and intense concentration on Bible Doctrine as Priority #1 and daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception focusing on Bible Doctrine taught, and resultant confidence expectation that in nothing, in the various aspects of life, shall I be put to shame or disgraced, but with integrity of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and the Royal Family Honor Code resulting in courage, confidence and total relaxation toward God, even now being in Super-Grace B, as always Ultra Super-Grace, and in all stages of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, THE unique Christ shall be magnified or exalted in my person alive on earth in time, whether by my living in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or by my dying under dying grace.**

**Phil 1:21**

**v21: For you see, or As I, Paul in Super-Grace B, see it, for me, as far as I am concerned, Living or to continue living, is (elipsis) Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ; likewise dying is unusual Gain, great Profit, Riches of Glory, Magnetism beyond life in eternity.**

- i. This should NEVER be quoted by the new or even adolescent believer and it belongs to the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God ONLY.
- ii. It is only the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God who gains from death.
- iii. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is glorified in the person of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God through the living part of life or the dying part of life.
- iv. This is a Super Grace believer giving a Super Grace testimony.
- v. Living is for the Super Grace believer Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and dying is under the principle of dying grace of maximum blessing during the transfer to heaven.

- vi. Super Grace blessings are GREAT in time, Dying Grace blessings are greater yet and Surpassing Grace Blessings for eternity are greater than the greatest and almost beyond comprehension to understand what blessings await us.
- vii. The sustaining ministry of God the Holy Spirit taking the believer from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and which dynamics are almost impossible to understand or appreciate because there are SO FEW BELIEVERS in Super Grace.

**Lesson #48**

**Series # 467**

**1Tim 3:16**

- I. Freedom through military victory:
  - A. Nicholas J Katina, Spec 4 US Army C Company, 4<sup>th</sup> Battalion, 9<sup>th</sup> infantry regiment, 25<sup>th</sup> infantry division, 2 March 1968 Vietnam, Giadine.
  - B. Sammy L Davis, Sgt Us Army, Battery C, 2<sup>nd</sup> Battalion, 4<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery, 9<sup>th</sup> infantry division, 18 Nov 1967
- II. Review of Entire Lesson 47, very important doctrine.
- III. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was observed by all angels from birth to his session at the right hand of God the Father.
  - A. His Substitutionary Spiritual Death, resurrection and ascension was the strategic victory of the Angelic Conflict and everything after that is a tactical success and mop up function.
  - B. His strategic victory of the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ produces tactical victory of the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent.
- IV. Doctrine of the Angelic Conflict:
  - A. Why were angels observing Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ??
  - B. The bible reveals the existence of a higher category of creatures called angels.
    - 1. The question of whether there is life on other planets is a resounding affirmative.
      - i. Will anyone ever see it? NO not until the rapture and only if they have made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
      - ii. The same life which is on other planets is also on the earth and if they cannot be seen on earth we won't see them on the Moon, Mars, Venus or Alpha Centauri.
      - iii. This is angelic life and the same life we have on this planet and ruler on this planet is an angel, Satan
    - 2. We call this higher creature Angel Ps 8:4-5, Heb 23:6-7, 2Pet 2:11, Ps 148:2-5
      - i. These creatures are CREATED beings and came from the hand of God and are superior to us at this time.
    - 3. There are 2 general categories of these creatures found in the scripture:
      - i. Saved angels == Holy-Mk 8:38, Elect-1Tim 5:21
      - ii. Unsaved angels == Fallen
        - a. Those in Prison Gen 6:1-9, 2Pet 2:4, Jude 6.
          - i ) (gr) Hades == Hell; The word mistranslated HELL is (gr) Tartarus
          - ii ) These will not be operative until the end of the millennium and then they will be released for a short revolt and then cast into the Lake of Fire forever.
          - iii ) (Interesting thought is that then there will again be visible embodied angels on the earth for the revolt) (ff)
        - b. Those Operative at this time == Demons Mk 5, 1Tim 4, 1Cor 10
          - i ) Man's idiotic things concerning demons is nothing compared to what demons can actually perform on this earth at this time in this function as super creatures.
          - ii ) No one has enough imagination to appreciate what demons are capable of doing to the Unsaved Population of the earth.
    - iii. Review and study the whole of demon possession and all the things which occur from demon functions.

C. The Unsaved or fallen angels:

1. In the past before Human History began they were sentenced to the Lake of Fire **Matt 25:41**

**Matt 25:41**

**v41: Then he will also say to those on his left (fallen angels), “Depart from me you accursed ones, (judged ones) into the eternal lake of fire which was prepared for the devil and his angels.**

- i. This is their eventual home but the sentence has not been carried out at this time.
2. In the judgment of Satan and all fallen angels God pronounced that all would reside forever in the Lake of Fire.
  - i. Satan appealed this by impugning the character of God indicating his love did not function properly toward these fallen creatures and only his justice was operational therefore he could not be GOD.
3. In order to resolve the appeal God created an inferior creature MAN and gave him volition or free will in their immaterial souls.
  - i. Both angels and humans have intelligence (obviously angels are superior in this area) with humans having Emotion and Volition.
  - ii. Volition is the issue of the Angelic Conflict and man in perfect environment of the garden had only one test for his volition, prohibition of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
  - iii. From the point of placing Man in the garden angels have been watching man in all of his history.
  - iv. Angels have become wrapped up with the course of Human History in a very definite way and man was created in the first place to resolve the Angelic Conflict and the appeal of Satan.
  - v. Man was created to demonstrate that God is Fair in casting his creatures, Satan, All fallen angels and all unsaved humans into the Lake of Fire.

D. During the course of Human History the case of the fallen angels is under appeal.

1. Satan is the chief of these unsaved angels and appealed the case on their behalf and in rejecting the sentence he Impugned the Character of God.
2. This is a deduction based on the lapse of time from the pronouncement of sentence and execution of sentence
3. It is also based on the title of Lucifer son of the Morning, who received the title Diabolos == Devil == Slanderer, enemy, Adversary.
4. His objection was “How can a loving God cast his creatures (fallen angels) into the Lake of Fire”?
5. The defense and answer to this objection is in the Essence of God himself.
  - i. God is immutable ie unchangeable.
  - ii. It is impossible for him with perfection in the Justice of God and Righteousness of God to be unfair or unjust or being omniscient ever to be wrong.
6. The new creation of man was needed to reveal the principle that different attitudes bring out different characteristics in the Essence of God.
  - i. Salvation
  - ii. Judgment
  - iii. Faithfulness
  - iv. All bring out different aspects of the Essence of God.
7. We are all the same and different situations bring out different aspects of our character.
  - i. When we are with someone we care about we are love
  - ii. When someone rejects our authority or vilifies or insults us we are much different than LOVE.
  - iii. We are all multifaceted personalities and we MUST BE.
  - iv. These personality differences all come from the same area of our soul.

8. God is love but he is also justice and this means that he will dump people and angels into the Lake of Fire who reject his grace.
  - i. The Love of God is his motivation for providing salvation but in order for this saving to be accomplished the Justice of God and Righteousness of God must be satisfied therefore the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
- E. The pattern of angelic Negative Volition is expressed in 2 ways:
  1. Satan's original sin of Negative Volition Is 14;12-14
  2. Angelic Rejection of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ Heb 2;2
- F. Creation of man resolves the Angelic Conflict and answers the appeal of Satan.
  1. To resolve the Angelic Conflict an inferior creature is placed on one planet, Earth, possessing on thing in common with angelic creatures, Free Will Volition. Ps 8:3-5, Heb 2:7
- G. Human volition was tested in exactly the same pattern as angelic volition:
  1. Angels began in Status Quo Innocence and man began this way.
  2. Angels Sinned Negative Volition of Satan and man sinned Negative Volition of Adam
  3. God provided salvation for angels in Eternity Past and also for man in time of Human History.
  4. Angels are therefore divided into 2 categories Heb 2;2, Saved or Elect & Fallen or Lost
  5. Man is divided into 2 categories as well, John 3:36, Believers or Unbelievers, Saved or Lost.
- H. The 2 tests are instituted for man's volition:
  1. Innocence == Man in the garden was prohibited the use of 1 tree Gen 2:17 and this is a volitional test.
    - i. In the Status Quo of innocence man could only sin in one way by rejecting the prohibition of this Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
    - ii. Imagine living in the garden with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as your bible teacher and your right woman with only one possible way to sin and still getting around to it.
    - iii. Good and Evil is the policy and plan of Satan.
    - iv. Man did not know the difference between Absolute or Divine Good and the policy of Satan which is EVIL.
    - v. The penalty of sin is spiritual death, **Gen 2;17, Rom 5:12, 6:23** and when man finally got around to sinning he died spiritually NOT physically for the wages of sin is spiritual death, separation from God with no fellowship and no relationship with God.
    - vi. He did not die physically for almost another 1000 years but died spiritually instantly. **Gen 5:5**
  2. Sinfulness == After the fall of man salvation is promised and offered to the Human Race Gen 3:15,
    - i. This salvation involved Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ dying twice on the cross Is 53:9, 1Pet 2:24, 2Cor 5:21
    - ii. This issue is NOW positive volition not Negative Volition
    - iii. positive volition is to be expressed in a nonmeritorious manner compatible with with Grace John 3;16
- I. Man's entrance into the Plan of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone destroys the devil's appeal and resolves the Angelic Conflict.
  1. This is the CAKE and everything else for the believe is frosting ie the Super Grace life etc.
  2. The issue is "will an inferior to angels equipped with the same free will choose for or against the Plan of God called operation Grace".

3. The solution is that in all of Human History if even one man accepts the Plan of God of operation grace the angelic conflict is resolved. **Heb 1, 2, Col 2:14-15**
4. Once Adam and Ishah had accepted Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as savior God could have stopped it right there.
5. This Human History has been going on for at least 6000 years and this gives us opportunity for salvation and this RUBS the devils nose in the resolution.

J. Angelic observation exists because:

1. angels learn through the conversion of the sinner that the free will of man does not necessarily choose against God and for Satan as fallen angels did before Human History existed.
  - i. Before Human History existed millions of angels said NO while greater millions of angels said YES to the Plan of God.
  - ii. This divided the angelic population.
  - iii. This explains the rejoicing of elect angels over one sinner who changes his mind about Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ “repents”.
  - iv. We are all sinners from birth to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and we don’t ever repent about sin but about the work, the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
  - v. This is a change of MIND about Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - vi. We recognize Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as only savior and we express faith in him.
2. Angelic observation has to do with the very moment any one of us accepts Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as savior **Luke 15:10**

K. The results of the Angelic Conflict:

1. The Plan of God:
  - i. Phase I == Salvation or Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God
    - a. This takes place in a moment of time when we express faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
  - ii. Phase II == Believer in time from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to physical death
  - iii. Phase III == Believer in eternity.
2. The results are related to these 3 phases of the Plan of God.
3. Phase I Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God == the regenerate mankind is positionally higher than angels being in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and being Royal Family of God.
  - i. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit puts us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and positionally this puts us higher than angels.
  - ii. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is seated with God the Father and we are in union with him and positionally with him therefore we are HIGHER than creatures we cannot even see and this is WILD. **Heb 1:4-14**
4. Phase II the Believer after salvation in time until physical death
  - i. Through suffering regenerate mankind uses Metabolized Bible Doctrine with Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as inner resources and this as a maximum function of the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) produces glorification of the lord Rom 5:2-4, 1pet 1:7-8
  - ii. At this time we become experientially by reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
5. Phase III the Believer in Eternity
  - i. The regenerate man is physically made superior to angels by means of his Resurrection Body exactly like Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.



- L. Through the fall of man Satan gained control of the world but not necessarily of mankind.
  - 1. The issue of volition or free will makes man a free agent in the world of Satan.
    - i. Man can choose between the Plan of God operation Grace or the Plan of Satan operation Evil.
    - ii. The issue is salvation through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ which frees man from satanic domination.
    - iii. The exception is reversionism where believer are influenced by evil and in apostasy.
    - iv. After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the more the believer functions under the Grace Apparatus for Perception the greater is his freedom to operate independently from the Cosmic Dynaspheres and at the same time to glorify and serve the lord.
  - 2. The rule of this world is Satan, **2Cor 4:4, John 12:31, 14:30, 16:11, Eph 2:2**
- M. Fallen angels are organized under command of Satan to resist and oppose the believer. Job 1:6,2:1-3, Eph 6:12
  - 1. Fallen angels obviously must observe and find weaknesses in the believer and seek to attack on that basis.
  - 2. Angels observe believers **1Cor 4:9, 6:3, 11:10, Eph 3:10, 1Tim 5:21, 1Pet 1:12**
  - 3. Fallen angels observe to determine where to attack Elect angels to cheer when we use the Grace of God for our deliverance.
  - 4. We are under angelic observation constantly as Royal Family of God
    - i. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was royalty and under observation by angels and now he is at the right hand of God the Father and angels NOW observe US in his place as Royal Family of God.
  - 5. This is the intensified stage of the Angelic Conflict the Church Age.

**Lesson #49      Series # 467      1Tim 3:16**

- I. The Pastor Teacher on the earth:
  - A. He is a representative of the King, a Herald who in his teaching and communication of Bible Doctrine he is authorized for the office by spiritual gift, recognition and aspiration then by preparation and then function.
    - 1. This is the highest spiritual authority authorized in the Spiritual Life in this dispensation.
    - 2. This is communication is with the authority of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as if he were on the earth speaking personally.
    - 3. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is a light to the gentiles, Is 42:6, 49:6, Luke 2:32, Acts 13:47
    - 4. Since Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is making this proclamation he is herald of God the Father and since he is now at the right hand of God the Father this responsibility now rests with the Pastor Teacher.
    - 5. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in his 1<sup>st</sup> advent received proclamation by several categories of heralds and was proclaimed by apostles and prophets, evangelists and today Pastor Teachers all communicating as royal priests.
    - 6. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the 1<sup>st</sup> advent and after the Church Age began was proclaimed by many heralds.
  - B. 10 days after the session of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ with God the Father the age of Israel was interrupted in order that the Royal Family of God might be called out and the dispensation was changed to that of the Royal Family of God called by most the Church Age.
    - 1. During this age there is a continuous process of proclaiming Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ among the nations of the gentiles.
    - 2. Nations represents the Laws of Divine Establishment principle where by there is freedom for evangelizing and local church are free to form for teaching Bible Doctrine and that freedom is protected under the national entity where it exists.

- C. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ due to the proclamations of his heralds he became the object of faith alone.
  - 1. As a result of Faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone that person receives Eternal Life Salvation. **John 3:16, 18, 36, 6:47, Acts 16:31, Eph 2:8-9**
  - 2. Salvation is by grace through faith alone without any other additions.
  - 3. There is dogmatic reality of salvation is by faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
- D. (aside) Counseling:
  - 1. It is stupid at best, and when you give someone advice you are in fact living that persons life for them.
  - 2. Every believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ MUST live their own life as unto the lord.
  - 3. Making mistakes is how we learn if we have wisdom and can in fact learn from our mistakes.
  - 4. We are not perfect so get over it and live your life according to what you want to do and then 'JUST DO IT'.
  - 5. Only God is perfect and he has made it so that we have the opportunity to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by persistence in the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - 6. Only God could devise a plan called grace where all of us sinful, evil types can snap out of our failures and grow to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and receive blessing from God in a most phenomenal way.
  - 7. He does exceeding abundantly above all we can think or imagine and this is for the believer in TIME who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace IT IS NOT FOR ETERNITY.
- E. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ became the object of faith he is the only savior and all who desire salvation MUST believe in him.

## II. Doctrine of Faith:

- A. Definition:
  - 1. There is no such thing as blind faith
    - i. All faith has an object which is perceivable by the one expressing faith.
    - ii. Blind faith is a meaningless statement that people use and faith is always addressing an object.
    - iii. The object it sees and trusts in may be good or bad but there is one always there and it is an object.
  - 2. It is a nonmeritorious system of perception in contrast to rationalism and empiricism.
    - i. Rationalism is a system of perception here the criterion is what you think.
      - a. It never takes cognizance of anything acquired through observation or use of the senses.
    - ii. Empiricism is a system of perception where the criterion is observation of the environment you are dealing with.
      - a. Taste, smell, hearing, feeling etc is how you determine reality.
  - 3. Of the 3 systems of perception which exist it is the nonmeritorious system of faith which counts the most.
    - i. Especially when the object of faith is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and Bible Doctrine.
    - ii. Faith in people as an object often results in disappointment or disillusion and the fact is that NO ONE has any right to disillusion with people when they INDIVIDUALLY CHOOSE their object of faith or trust.
    - iii. We have no right to be disappointed or disillusioned when we trust in a person and they let us down.
    - iv. If you as the subject believe and trust in some person and they let you down YOU MUST BLAME YOURSELF for you did the trusting.

- v. You cannot run around and weep and wail and complain about being let down for this is BLIND ARROGANCE making an issue of self.
  - vi. Part of maturity is to take responsibility for your own believeings.
  - vii. None of us have time in life to be disillusioned by people.
  - 4. When you put your trust and faith in the lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the bible you will save yourself a mess of disappointment and disillusion.
- B. Greek Etymology:
- 1. (noun) Pistis == active == faith, faithful or reliable; Passive == what is believed or Bible Doctrine.
    - i. Used technically for Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - 2. (adj) Postos == dependable, inspiring trust, believing
  - 3. (verb) Pisteuo == to believe to be convinced
  - 4. (verb) Pistoo == to show oneself faithful, to feel confidence in something
  - 5. (verb) Petho == (pres) to obey, (aor) to believe, (perf) to have confidence
- C. Hebrew Etymology:
- 1. Amen == to use something, God, as a foundation or prop.
    - i. Hiphel == Gen 15:6
  - 2. (noun) Emun == faithfulness
  - 3. (fem noun) Emunah == truth or steadiness
  - 4. (noun) Amen == Truth
  - 5. (noun) Omen == faithfulness or dependability
  - 6. Batach == wrestlers body slam Ps 37:3, 91:2, ETC
  - 7. Chasah == a rabbit hiding in a cleft in a rock, to hide in the cleft of the rock or take refuge from danger.
  - 8. Jachal == To trust God when in pain, pressure or disaster, Job 13:15, Lam 3:21-24
  - 9. Qawah == weaving a thread into a great rope, therefore to wrap the thread of our life which can easily be broken into a great rope which cannot be broken, to bind or twist these strands together,
    - i. This is generally mistranslated WAIT
    - ii. It is in fact the strongest word for FAITH
- D. Biblical Definitions of Faith:
- 1. Faith == having revelation about the unseen and believing that revelation, Heb 11:1, 2Cor 4:18
- E. Grammar of the verb:
- 1. The verb to believe is transitive and a transitive verb has a subject and object.
    - i. The subject and object are both either implied or stated.
    - ii. Whenever WE believe in something there is always an object.
    - iii. When we believe in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ there is a unique object, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - 2. Since faith is nonmeritorious the whole value of efficacy of faith lies in the OBJECT.
    - i. NOT ALL ROADS lead to heaven there is only one source of salvation and that is faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
    - ii. All roads do lead somewhere that being to HELL.
    - iii. There is only one way of salvation that being faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
- F. Classification of the objects of faith:
- 1. The Plan of God is divided into 3 parts:
    - i. Phase I == Salvation
    - ii. Phase II == Believers in time
    - iii. Phase III == Believers in eternity.
  - 2. Phase I & II are actually the only 2 involved in faith.

3. Phase I == faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone is Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is the object and only savior Acts 16:31
  4. Phase II == Object of faith in Bible Doctrine 2Cor 5:7, Heb 4:1-3, 11:6
- G. Concept of Faith:
1. All believing in the world with objects of the world secures nothing but condemnation from God.
  2. However the tiniest bit of faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ secures Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  3. Therefore the efficacy of faith lies in the object of faith, for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God it is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and for spiritual growth it is Bible Doctrine.
  4. Since Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ did all the work for salvation on the cross the only way to respond to this work which is already finished is through faith alone, because that is the only nonmeritorious system of perception and only nonmeritorious function of the soul which results in Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  5. Therefore faith is not something we do but a channel by which we appropriate what God has done for US.
- H. After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God faith develops in at least 5 ways.
1. Primary development of Faith is the balance of residence in the soul.
    - i. God the Holy Spirit indwells the body of every believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the escutcheon of the Royal Family of God.
    - ii. WE start out MINUS Bible Doctrine and this must become PLUS.
      - a. Therefore the first key to developing faith in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine **Rom 10:17**
    - iii. We start our Spiritual Life with Filling of God the Holy Spirit and lose it when we sin and can use rebound to recover it.
      - a. Second way of developing faith is through the Filling of God the Holy Spirit but this only produces faith as it has compatible Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul **Gal 5:22**
    - iv. These 2 together form the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and spiritual exercise which is needed for temporal sanctification.
    - v. Filling of God the Holy Spirit + daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception resulting in Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul == experiential sanctification.
  2. Once we are functioning under these principles and accumulating Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and maintaining the Filling of God the Holy Spirit as long as possible THIS WILL BE TESTED.
    - i. Physical nourishment produces energy in the human body and though you eat and eat you do not get bigger nor stronger just FAT and the energy must be used for exercise to build the body and keep it healthy and produce something worthwhile.
    - ii. When you take in spiritual nourishment you must also exercise spiritually to build and strengthen the soul.
    - iii. Bodily exercise is profitable while we live on the earth.
    - iv. Spiritual exercise is profitable both on earth and when we reside in heaven.
    - v. We build spiritual muscle by taking the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and use is in pressure adversity or disaster by using the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories), **Heb 4:1-3**
  3. We begin by being able to shoot down the charging fleas in our Spiritual Life as young believers but as we take in more and more Bible Doctrine we get more REAL testing which requires great depths of Bible Doctrine in our soul to handle these.

- i. To resist the charging elephants of disaster in life we must have a greater caliber of doctrine to resist and stop this real test in life.
      - ii. When the real tests come it takes a bigger chunk of Bible Doctrine to knock it back down to where it came from. **1Pet 1:7-8**
      - iii. This testing of our faith is more valuable than all the gold in the world and also leads us to Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ **1Pet 1:8**
    - 4. The final manner in which we face every exigency of life and demonstrate the greatest power is Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ. **Heb 12:2**
  - I. Victory of Faith 1John 5:4-5
    - 1. Use of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul under Super Grace Status Quo **Rom 4:17-21**
    - 2. This is the amalgamation of nonmeritorious positive volition with the Bible Doctrine provided by God for us from Eternity Past and recorded under the ministry of God the Holy Spirit by human writers in time.
- III. The title of earth:
  - A. Cosmos is the title of earth where Satan is ruler of this world:
    - 1. Here we are in the domain of Satan with Bible Doctrine as our object believing in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in this world of Satan.
- IV. Doctrine of the Ascension:
  - A. Definition:
    - 1. This is that doctrine of christology pertaining to the change of residence of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ after his resurrection.
      - i. He made a permanent change of station from earth to heaven.
    - 2. The Session is the doctrine of christology pertaining to the glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Hypostatic Union being seated at the right hand of God the Father
    - 3. These doctrines are closely related to and based on the resurrection of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ from the dead.
    - 4. Both ascension and Session of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ were accomplished with him being in Resurrection Body.
    - 5. These 2 doctrines form the climax of the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the Angelic Conflict.
  - B. The capabilities of the Resurrection Body:
    - 1. Horizontal and vertical travel including unlimited space travel
      - i. Horizontally he could penetrate solid objects
      - ii. Vertically he could move anywhere throughout all of space.
  - C. The historical account of the ascension, **Acts 1:7**
  - D. The significance of the session of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ:
    - 1. Prophecy **Ps 110:1**
      - i. This breaks the back of Satan in the Angelic Conflict.
    - 2. Session and Authority of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ **Rom 8:34**
      - i. We cannot ever justify judging another person for any reason for it is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Resurrection Body who has all the authority to judge and condemn.
    - 3. Session and Ministry of God the Holy Spirit **Eph 1:20**
      - i. Seating of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at the right hand of God the Father brings about the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of God the Holy Spirit were by he comes to form the Royal Family of God on earth by indwelling every believer and filling the believer initially and placing us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ by means of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.
      - ii. He seals us and gives us spiritual gifts and regenerates our Human spirit and all are a result of the session of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    - 4. Session and Mental Attitude **Col 3:1-2**

- i. As a result of being seated at the right hand of God the Father he revealed the mystery doctrines of the Church Age and we are therefore aware of his strategic victory in the Angelic Conflict through the assimilation of these doctrines.
  5. Session and Celebrity-ship of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ **Heb 1:3**
    - i. WE can become heroes through reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God but there is only one Celebrity in the Church Age that being Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  6. Session and Angelic Conflict: **Heb 1:13**
    - i. He has accomplished the strategic victory of the Angelic Conflict and the tactical victories are now in the process by every believer in the Church Age.
  7. Session and the royal priesthood **Heb 8:1**
    - i. Our high priest is seated at the right hand of God the Father and because of this the Royal Family of God enjoy a universal royal priesthood on the earth.
  8. Session and the Sacrifice **Heb 10:12**
    - i. The session of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ demonstrates the efficacy of his sacrifice in Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross and that he is the ONLY savior.
  9. Session and Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
    - i. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is only possible because of his session.
  10. Session and strategic victory **1Pet 3:22**
- E. The session of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ confirms his celebrity-ship.
  1. The ascension and session of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ complete his glorification and now he is the UNIQUE person of the universe Acts 2:33, 5:31, Phil 2:9,
    - i. He is in Hypostatic Union forever different from God and also from man.
    - ii. As eternal God Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is preeminent and at the right hand of God the Father he has unique and overwhelming distinction as King of Kings and Lord of Lords and royalty forever and this royalty is the reason for the formation in the Church Age of the Royal Family of God.
- F. The strategic victory of the Angelic Conflict:
  1. The ascension and session of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ form the basis for this strategic victory Heb 1
  2. It also begins a new sphere of the Angelic Conflict Eph 1:20-22 and we live in the dispensation of the Royal Family of God we live in an intensified stage of the Angelic Conflict. Eph 4:7-10
  3. The Church Age is the dispensation of the intensified stage of the Angelic Conflict.
- G. Ascension and the Royal Family of God:
  1. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is alone at the right hand of God the Father:
  2. God the Father decided it was not good for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ to be alone in this strategic victory battlefield royalty
  3. Then the dispensation of Israel was interrupted and a dispensation intercalated with it to form the Church Age or dispensation of the Royal Family of God.
  4. The purpose of the Church Age is the calling out of the Royal Family of God and why our dispensation is ended first and the Royal Family of God resurrected first.
    - i. We started late but will finish first
    - ii. When Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ comes again to the earth he will bring his Royal Family of God with him.
    - iii. The Royal Family of God is formed by a unique baptism that is the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit placing us in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    - iv. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ prophesied by saying “John baptized with water, you shall be baptized with God the Holy Spirit not many days from now”.

- v. This could not have occurred till Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was glorified **John 7:37-39**
- 5. The ascension deals also with our royal priesthood and it abrogated the Leviticus priesthood when God the Father stopped the dispensation of Israel the Mosaic Law was abrogated and the Leviticus priesthood was replaced by universal royal priesthood **1Pet 2:9, Rev 1:6, 5:10, 26**
- 6. The lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is a royal priest and this new category of priesthood has been formed and will exist forever and WE are part of it.
- H. The ascension verifies the efficacy of the sacrifice of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross in Substitutionary Spiritual Death **Heb 9:23-24**
- I. The ascension and ultimate defeat of Satan are related:
  - 1. The ascension and session of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ began operation footstool.
  - 2. The 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ will terminate operation footstool.
  - 3. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ will supersede Satan as ruler of the world when he returns, **Dan 7:14, Zech 13:2, Col 2:15**

**Col 2:15**

**v15: Having disarmed demon archeons {military rulers of demon armies} and commissioned officers He made a public display of them having celebrated a triumphant procession over them by means of Him {Christ}.**

- J. Principles:
  - 1. This is why the Royal Family of God has godliness or balance of residence as its objective in time.
  - 2. This is why Bible Doctrine is so important to the Royal Family of God
  - 3. Bible Doctrine transferred from the written word of scripture to the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer is the means of accomplishing godliness, experiential sanctification.
  - 4. The glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ brings the age of Israel to a HALT.
  - 5. The dispensation of Israel has been interrupted and the Church Age or dispensation of the Royal Family of God has been inserted.
  - 6. Because Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was taken up into the place of glory there now exists a Royal Family of God on earth as a preliminary to the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent and overthrow of Satan as ruler of the earth.
  - 7. When the Royal Family of God is completed it will be resurrected at the rapture of the church and the age of Israel will resume.
  - 8. When Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ returns to terminate the Age of Israel he will be accompanied by the Royal Family of God the Church Age believer.
- K. Conclusions:
  - 1. Godliness becomes the reminder to Satan as ruler of this world that he has NO CONTROL over believers who have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul while they live in his domain.

**1Tim 3:16**

**v16: And by consent of all with everyone in agreement, great is the Mystery Doctrine of the Church Age, with reference to becoming God Like, He, the unique One Christ Eternal God, who became visible from the virgin birth to the ascension and session at the right hand of God the Father, by means of the flesh of his humanity, the same one Christ in Hypostatic Union at the 1<sup>st</sup> advent, was vindicated, justified and treated as just by means of God the Holy Spirit, he was carefully scrutinized and observed by angels from his birth to his session at the right hand of God the Father, he was proclaimed, by many heralds communicating with the authority of the King of Kings, among the nations, he was and still is the object of Faith in the world of Satan's rulership, always resulting in individual eternal salvation, and he was taken via the ascension up into the place of Glory.**

**Lesson #50                      Series # 467                      1Tim 4:1**

- I. Freedom and Privacy through Self Defense with Firearms:
  - A. People have maintained freedom by owning and using handguns at a proper time.

1. The 2<sup>nd</sup> amendment says that every Lawful citizen has a right to own, possess and use firearms NOT ONLY Militia.
  2. When any national, state or city governing body passes any law prohibiting or restricting the ownership and use of firearms by lawful citizens the law has lost its function.
  3. The purpose of law is to protect freedom, privacy, life and rights of the individual.
  4. There are over 100 million owners of firearms in the United States of America today owning in excess of 300 million guns and less than 1% have ever committed any crime with them.
  5. One of the greatest deterrents to crime is not police presence and function in large cities since are all under manned and understaffed but it is the ownership of firearms and their use by lawful citizens.
  6. It is EVIL to protect criminals instead of lawful citizens and all gun legislation on the books today are unconstitutional and in fact they are turning law abiding citizens into criminals and this makes it easier for criminals to commit crime.
  7. Gun control laws NEVER remove guns from criminals only from law abiding citizens and they make it infinitely easier for Coup DE Tat to occur and take overs by communism and even islam and for violence and revolution to gain control.
  8. Riots are easily stopped with 12 gauge buckshot used properly.
  9. When criminals use the law as their protection then the power has been removed from the principles of law from the Laws of Divine Establishment.
  10. The Laws of Divine Establishment from God and Bible Doctrine are designed to protect your freedom and privacy not protect criminals who have by their own volition set themselves OUTSIDE of the function of the law and the Laws of Divine Establishment.
  11. Criminals are the strongest proponents of gun legislation since this never keeps them from having and using guns ever.
  12. The worst cesspool in the 1970's and FAR FAR WORSE today is New York City with its oddball boroughs and the Sullivan Law and more crimes are committed there and if you resist the crime with the use of firearms YOU WILL GO TO JAIL.
    - i. The state of new york has as part of their gun legislation the law which says if you possess on your person a firearm without a permit you face 1 YEAR MANDATORY jail sentence.
  13. The Sullivan law says in effect if you are being robbed, murdered, raped you must not resist or you will go to jail.
    - i. This makes the law abiding citizen the victim of the worst government overreach by stupid idiotic officials which is in fact totally beyond comprehension and totally divorced from reality.
  14. Law abiding citizens are victims today and it has always been an American tradition with regard to firearm ownership and use individually and in sporting competition.
  15. All gun laws should be repealed and shooting ranges should be built all over the United States of America and the arsenals should be opened up and all older firearms provided for the citizen and then provide ammo and the gun and when you qualify with it it then is given to you with 500 rounds of ammo.
  16. The right to own and bear arms is constitutional and an inalienable right.
- B. We have freedom NOT because of politicians who destroy our freedom and but because of FIREARMS which we first used to overcome Indians and later the Europeans who wanted this country for their own.

## II. Principles:

- A. Godliness becomes the reminder to Satan as ruler of this world that he has NO CONTROL over believers who have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul while they live in his domain.



- B. Godliness is the basis for blessings of Super Grace for the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and demonstrates that God can bless an individual totally apart from the Cosmic Dynasphere
- C. Godliness or experiential sanctification insulates the believer from Evil, Satan's Policy and Plan and brings them under the influence of Bible Doctrine in order to receive in time the blessings of Super Grace in 5 categories.
  - 1. Spiritual
  - 2. Temporal
  - 3. By Association
  - 4. Historical Impact
  - 5. Dying Grace
- D. Godliness makes it possible for the believer to be decorated and rewarded for all eternity.
- E. Godliness begins with the 'session' of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
- F. Godliness establishes the authority of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the life of the believer.

### III. Doctrine of Godliness:

- A. Definition:
  - 1. Godliness is a New Testament Scripture word derived from 2 Greek words:
    - i. (gr) Eusebeia == Duty toward God, establishing the balance of residence in the soul of the believer through the consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
    - ii. (gr) Theosebeia == Duty toward God and Reverence toward God, The result of eusebeia in the gaining of Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    - iii. Both are technical for the balance of residence in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer of Metabolized Bible Doctrine and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
    - iv. This is experiential sanctification
  - 2. Godliness therefore refers to the balance of residence in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the positive volition believer and is therefore a synonym for Phase II, Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - 3. It is based on the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit the escutcheon of the Royal Family of God.
  - 4. It is the balance of residence in the soul of the believer where he is under Filling of God the Holy Spirit and has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - i. This also produces maximum Category I Love, Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
  - 5. It is then the Status Quo of believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
  - 6. Theosebeia indicates this believers Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- B. The establishment and human authority is needed for function of Godliness **1Tim 2:2**
  - 1. Prayer is essential and often a deciding factor for anyone who has any authority or function in government because they do not think in terms of authority but rather in terms of bleeding heart liberalism.
  - 2. If we ever had anyone in authority who were functioning properly under the Laws of Divine Establishment we would have destroyed North Vietnam many years ago, the borders of the United States of America would go all the way to the edge of Red China and even over a great part of the pacific east and we would have never allowed communism to exist.

3. You can only get to peace with tough rules, and any person who war really a tough person never had anyone pick a fight with them because they were well known for their abilities in personal defense.
  4. This has been the past history of the United States of America and when we were in the past ready (which was rare at best) NO ONE ever fooled around or challenged us.
  5. What the people in government are doing with taxpayers money is a real tragedy.
  6. There must be a change in this stupidity else we will destroy ourselves.
  7. There can be no godliness, nor bible classes, nor local churches nor any freedom or privacy apart from the Laws of Divine Establishment.
  8. The Laws of Divine Establishment demand that All forms of government provide for you PRIVACY, Freedom, Right to own property, and to function in business as long as you are not a criminal.
  9. Government is to SERVE the people NEVER to control or enslave the people which they are doing through their attacks on free enterprise, and the infinite regulations of our governmental systems.
  10. The best manifestation of freedom still in existence today is our right to assemble together and take in Bible Doctrine and this is only possible through the courtesy of the military and Law Enforcement personnel.
- C. Godliness is related to knowledge of Bible Doctrine, **Tit 1:1**
1. It is not the believer doing or giving up or taking on things or joining programs or etc.
  2. We are to learn Bible Doctrine to grow up spiritually and be blessed by God and then things open up for us.
  3. Godliness is always related to knowledge of Bible Doctrine and creating and establishing a command post in the soul.
- D. Godliness demands discipline **1Tim 4:7**
1. Bodily exercise is profitable for a short time and then you must do it again and again.
  2. Spiritual exercise is for both temporal and eternal profit **1Tim 4:6-8**
  3. To keep on working our physically demands self discipline and there is no form of exercise which FEELS GOOD.
  4. It all hurts and it all takes discipline and must be constantly repeated.
  5. Spiritual exercise is very much the same way, bible study must be DAILY and it is profitable and has both temporal and eternal gain for the believer.
  6. This also requires self discipline for consistent repeated function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  7. Once you get in physical shape and can do things with your body you feel great about it and there is a capacity for life which comes from exercise.
  8. When you stop exercising you don't enjoy things in life as much and your capacity for life decreases.
  9. Once you begin to saturate your soul with Bible Doctrine and are consistent with this function your capacity for life increases in a phenomenal way.
- E. Godliness is profitable for time and eternity, **1Tim 4:8**
1. Godliness holds promise for this life in Super Grace blessings and for the coming life in surpassing grace blessings.
- F. The basis for godliness is the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the 1<sup>st</sup> advent.
- G. Godliness is distorted by reversionists under the influence of evil, **1Tim 6:3-5, 2Tim 3:2-5**
1. Pseudo godliness assumes it is a means of gain and is where blind arrogance where pride, reversionism and evil all meet.
- H. The great gain of godliness 1Tim 6:6
1. The gain of godliness is in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with Super Grace blessings, dying grace blessings, and surpassing grace blessings.
  2. This believer is content which is capacity for LIFE and Happiness and blessing based on inner Bible Doctrine.

- I. Godliness is attained as a function of inner grace, **2Pet 1:3**
- J. It is a christian virtue **2Pet 1:6-7 + 3:11**
- IV. Chapter 4 == Church Age Apostasy
  - A. Outline:
    - 1. Evil attack of apostasy v1-5
      - i. This is true today where the United States of America is a victim of religion and bleeding heart liberalism and apostasy, all the welfare concepts which are religious in their origin and contrary to Bible Doctrine.
    - 2. Doctrinal Defense against Apostasy v6-10
    - 3. Pastoral counter attack against apostasy, v11-16
  - B. Evil attack of apostasy; The source of apostasy v1:
    - 1. There is a contrast between the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the satanic offensive which goes on during the Church Age resulting in apostasy.
      - i. Satan has launched a great offensive since the victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and is the source of this attack against the believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    - 2. The attack is part of his policy as ruler of this world
      - i. The policy of Satan is "EVIL"
        - a. Welfare function is evil.
        - b. Disarming the military and citizens is EVIL.
        - c. Government interference with free enterprise is EVIL.
        - d. Government policies generally align with the functions in the Cosmic Dynasphere
    - 3. Satan administers his policy of evil through creatures (angels) and doctrines.
  - C. God the Holy Spirit sustained and vindicated Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and since he is ascended that ministry is transferred to believers in the Royal Family of God.
    - 1. This is accomplished by formation and preservation of the canon of scripture and its communication by the Pastor Teacher in the local church.
    - 2. In every generation from the beginning of the Church Age to the end of the age of Israel there will be APOSTASY
    - 3. This is the attack of Satan for every generation from the time of the day of Pentecost to the end of the tribulation and 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    - 4. It is interesting to note that the attack of apostasy from Satan will continue after the end of the Church Age into the tribulation the end of the Age of Israel and apostasy or reversionism runs concurrently with the attainment of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Super Grace in the Church Age.
  - D. Every generation has 2 options:
    - 1. To follow the line of Satan in apostasy, evil and reversionism.
    - 2. To follow the Plan of God through Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and inculcation of Bible Doctrine to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    - 3. There never has been a Church Age generation which has not had running simultaneously both the attack of apostasy and the Plan of God option of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
    - 4. These 2 states coexist and conflict throughout this dispensation.
    - 5. There will be those in every generation influenced by evil and those influenced by Bible Doctrine, **Matt 24:6-7**
    - 6. There will always be wars and apostasy till the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent and the answer to war is military preparation and the answer to apostasy is Bible Doctrine.
  - E. When the believer rejects Bible Doctrine and comes under the influence of evil he becomes apostate.
    - 1. The subject the believer becomes involved with apostasy by rejecting Bible Doctrine.

2. Apostasy WILL occur in every generation but these believers no matter how apostate they are cannot lose their salvation.
3. Satan no matter how aggressive his attacks are cannot ever take the BELIEVER away from God.

**Lesson #51      Series # 467      1Tim 4:1**

- I. Freedom comes from a citizenry who own and use guns properly
  - A. This is our tradition and culture and when they want to take guns they actually want our freedom and privacy as well.
  - B. Freedom through military victory:
    1. Joe M. Jackson, Lt Col. US Air Force, 311 Air commando squadron, C123 Vietnam 12 May 1968
      - i. In the process of landing in an enemy overrun air strip to rescue men there he had 2 rockets fired at his aircraft which landed one near the nose and one nearby WITHOUT DETONATING.
      - ii. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls history, INDIVIDUALLY, nationally and globally.
      - iii. When it is YOUR TIME TO GO HOME nothing can keep you here but if it is NOT YOUR TIME NOTHING CAN TAKE YOU FROM THIS EARTH.
    2. Joel Lawrence, Spc 6, US Army, 503<sup>rd</sup> Airborne, 173<sup>rd</sup> Airborne brigade, Vietnam
- II. Believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ:
  - A. In every generation we have a counter attack of Satan against Bible Doctrine.
    1. Man was CREATED to resolve the Angelic Conflict and for man to be perpetuated in every generation of history God had to set up laws for the protection and preservation of man.
    2. These laws are like the scientific laws which God established and enforces such as gravity and many others.
    3. These laws for man's protection are the Laws of Divine Establishment
    4. They revolve around the concept that man's freedom must be perpetuated so that he can be evangelized or refuse to be evangelized as the resolution to the Angelic Conflict.
    5. If man is evangelized and becomes a believer he must be able to accept or refuse the available Bible Doctrine.
    6. Thus he has freedom, privacy and rights and privileges under the Laws of Divine Establishment in the Angelic Conflict.
    7. In the national concept the actual purpose of government in whatever form it is found is to protect the privacy, property, life and freedom of the lawful citizens and give them the opportunity to go in life as far as they can under their own volition and abilities.
    8. This means that under the Laws of Divine Establishment, free enterprise is part of this and no national government has any right to interfere with LAWFUL enterprise.
    9. Criminal syndicates are not under this protection.
    10. Any form of free enterprise business MUST not be interfered with by any form of government and when this occurs it is EVIL.
    11. Government has no right to interfere with any form of enterprise or business not in your private life as long as it is not criminal.
    12. In addition there is the Law Enforcement officer, the Judges in the courts and the Military establishment for the protection of the nation and the freedom of the citizens.
  - B. These things of the Laws of Divine Establishment are attacked along with Bible Doctrine in every generation.
    1. The idiots in our government supported by the IDIOTS in our news media and entertainment media supported by our IDIOTIC population are all a part of this attack and if we survive this it will be amazing.

2. Today we cannot afford financially to support our military but can afford to bring over in the 70's the refugees from Vietnam and today the illegals from Mexico and the worthless disgusting scum who refuse to work and are for generations on welfare.
  3. Our foreign and domestic policies are a demonstration of complete insanity especially with political interference with warfare functions.
  4. Bleeding heart liberals cannot think and there are very few people in government in any federal function of any kind who can think and if they have any perspicacity in the first place this is neutralized under the system which they operate.
  5. In every branch and especially bureaucracies there is incompetence at every level.
  6. When there are believers with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul God vindicates and is cognizant of this and sets aside and neutralizes this incompetence because of the Grace of God and Bible Doctrine.
- C. EVERY generation gets these attacks but some kick them aside and move ahead in life
1. The first generation of this nation kicked these attacks aside and laughed at these kinds of things.
  2. The things which our forefathers laughed at our current generation thinks they are entitled to and embrace them totally therefore we see the LEVEL of our degradation as a nation.
  3. All Super Grace believers will be tested and the attacks of apostasy will occur in every generation but some throw them off and some do not.
  4. There will always be those in every generation who are influenced by evil and those influenced by Bible Doctrine and this is characteristic of all generations between the 1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> advents of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- D. In every generation some believers will REVOLT against Bible Doctrine the established authority in the Plan of God.
1. Apostasy will occur between the 1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> advents of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ IN EVERY GENERATION.
- E. Satan has a corps of angelic teachers who present and teach his doctrines of his policy of evil.
1. This is how people become:
    - i. Liberals
    - ii. Bleeding hearts
    - iii. Sincere Do Gooder
    - iv. Buying into the thinking of the greatest good for the greatest number.
    - v. Accepting ideas and concepts with will destroy freedom, privacy and property and business.
  2. Demon Possession (12 Hours)

## 2Cor 11:13-15

- F. Assassination of ONE man never solves anything as we saw with the assassination of John F. Kennedy.
1. He was not much as a leader of our nation but when he was killed he was replaced by LESS than much the shrunken star of taxes, LB Johnson.
  2. From mythology we learn that killing one evil person results in 10 more springing up to take his place.
  3. Assassination solves nothing because when you kill the evil one the one who takes his place and has been waiting for the chance is WORSE.
  4. As a result of this assassination we have the 1964 anti gun legislation passed and it was and remains to this day UNCONSTITUTIONAL.
- G. We have seducing spirits who are Satan's teachers of doctrines of the policy of Satan.
1. When a person is concentrating on the doctrines of demons he is in the latter stages of reversionism under the influence of evil.
  2. Paying Attention to deceitful spirits is the last stage of reversionism

3. Concentrating on the doctrines of demons begins when the Blackout of the Soul opens the vacuum in the soul and SUCKS in the concepts of evil from satanic policies and doctrines.
4. Self consciousness is a great objective of satanic attack since if satanic doctrine can reach your self consciousness you will rip yourself apart and need no more help.
5. Self Consciousness is awareness of your own existence being aware of who and what you are either with exaggerated opinions of who and what you are therefore being egotistically arrogant or depressed opinions of who and what you are therefore being saturated in an inferiority complex.
6. The mentality of the soul is also an objective of satanic attack both the nous the area of the Left Lobe of the Soul for processing and the Right Lobe where we do our thinking.
7. The Frame of Reference in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is where all technical knowledge develops and is accumulated.
8. Along with the Frame of Reference is the memory center and on the top of the memory center there is vocabulary storage.
9. The bigger the vocabulary the greater the ability to think and the larger your vocabulary the better off you are in life.
10. In addition to vocabulary in the Frame of Reference there is categorical storage and the development of technical vocabulary in any field builds into a category of information and the more categories you develop the greater your abilities in life.
11. Then in the Right Lobe this all combines to form norms and standards and therefore a conscience.
12. Then you learn to apply these things to all areas and situations in your life.
13. Therefore Satan constantly attacks the mentality of the soul and especially the Right Lobe where he tries to move out the doctrine and replace it with principles from his policy of evil.
14. Then there is attacks on the volition and a supporting of and enhancing of the EMOTION of the soul.
15. Emotion is supposed to be an appreciator of life and it is to respond to what is in the Right Lobe of the soul and the Right Lobe should control the emotion and the attack of Satan is to get the emotion to overrun the Right Lobe and control it.
16. The final attack of Satan is to reinforce the Old Sin Nature and its areas of weakness and strength and trends.

### III. Apostles of Hypocrisy, v2:

- A. Asceticism is NEVER spirituality
- B. False communicators and satanic teachers are LIARS.
- C. Hypocrisy is a transliteration from the Greek and actually means:
  1. Agamemnon Greek Tragedy
  2. (gr) Hupocrisis == means to speak from behind a mask, to be an actor.
    - i. Actors and actresses are the phoniest people in the world and in effect “speak from behind a mask” living their whole life and function pretending to be someone else.
    - ii. People should honor great men of business or industry but NOT for these Phony people.
    - iii. Unfortunately some actors and actresses are honorable but hardly ever recognized for it.
      - a. Bill Holden, Clarke Gable, Jimmy Stuart, all went to war in WWII.
      - b. John Wayne never went to war.
    - iv. What is the big deal about honoring these people they are in fact paid very very well to be a PHONY.
    - v. Our nation has the most imbecilic attitude about honoring the dumbest group of people because they make a lot of money.

- D. Some people prefer lying to telling the truth and they lie all the time and hupocrisis and pseudo logos == a pathological liar and hypocrite.
- E. Principles:
1. Liars who use hypocrisy to lead the Royal Family of God into apostasy are human agents of Satan.
    - i. In the first verse we have angelic agents of Satan the demons.
  2. These human agents can be called the Apostles of Apostasy
  3. They exist in every category of the Human Race from the highest to lowest class of life.
  4. They include:
    - i. Politicians
    - ii. Religious leaders
    - iii. Evangelists
    - iv. Generals
    - v. Admirals
    - vi. Judges
    - vii. Educators
    - viii. Psychologists
    - ix. Students
    - x. Rabble Rousers
    - xi. ETC.
    - xii. These all have been apostles of apostasy and have been in our history and all are under the influence of evil the policy of Satan.

#### 1Tim 4:1

v1: **But that same God the Holy Spirit, who during the 1<sup>st</sup> advent, vindicated the incarnate Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ (1Tim 3:16), explicitly communicates or teaches or reports that in latter periods of Time, the dispensations of the Royal Family of God and completion of the Age of Israel, Between the 1<sup>st</sup> & 2<sup>nd</sup> Advents, some Believers in the Royal Family of God, fail and will become apostate, standing away from revolting against, abstaining from, departing from rejecting The Bible Doctrine, constantly paying attention to, concentrating on, applying the mind to, adhering to, being occupied with fallen angelic deceitful demon teachers communicating the Doctrines from Demons, EVIL and the Cosmic Dynasphere.**

#### Lesson #52

#### Series # 467

#### 1Tim 4:2

#### 1Tim 4:2

v2: **By means of hypocrisy, speaking from behind a mask of falsehood from the source of human pathological constant liars and phonies, having been branded with the branding iron of evil in their own conscience resulting in Scar Tissue of the Soul.**

- I. Church Age Apostasy Continued:
- A. Evil attack of apostasy v1-5
  - B. Doctrinal Defense against apostasy v6-10
  - C. Pastoral Counter Attack against Apostasy v11-16
  - D. v1 – The source of apostasy is SATAN who is the source of the attack of apostasy on each generation of believers in the Church Age.
    1. This attack is from Satan's policy of EVIL resulting in the believer entering into reversionism.
    2. There is very little difference between evil and reversionism except that Evil is the policy of Satan while reversionism or apostasy is what happens when evil influences the believer.
    3. Reversionists are those in apostasy as believers will find any excuse to miss bible study but if they are under positive volition there is nothing which will prevent them from their time of bible study.
    4. The believer under Negative Volition is always looking for an excuse to miss bible study while the positive believer is always looking for a way to fit it in and get to class.
    5. Apostasy + Reversionism are synonymous terms.

6. Satan administers his policy and attack through creatures both angelic and human and through doctrines of demons or doctrines of the Cosmic Dynasphere.
- E. God the Holy Spirit during the 1<sup>st</sup> advent vindicated Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
1. This was not difficult for God the Holy Spirit since Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was perfect and had no Old Sin Nature and no Human Good and did not sin during his entire lifetime.
  2. God the Holy Spirit now in the Church Age performs the function of vindication for every member of the Royal Family of God.
  3. This is a bit more difficult since we have the Old Sin Nature and volition which often goes negative to Bible Doctrine.
  4. The ministry of God the Holy Spirit is directed now toward the Royal Family of God and is accomplished in formation of the canon of the New Testament Scripture and the daily function of the believer under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  5. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God God the Holy Spirit indwells ever believer.
  6. At the start of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we also have the Filling of God the Holy Spirit but we lose this any time we sin and when we use the rebound procedure we then can regain it.
  7. God the Holy Spirit has no place to go until we FILL the gap of minus doctrine in our soul and this must occur by means of the teaching ministry of Bible Doctrine.
  8. This is the importance of balance of residence of Bible Doctrine and Filling of God the Holy Spirit for the believer, this believer is said to be in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Super Grace, having a command post of Bible Doctrine in the soul, etc.
- F. Every generation between the 1<sup>st</sup> advent which produced the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and 2<sup>nd</sup> advent which produced the tactical victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ will be attacked through apostasy or reversionism from the source of the evil policy and principles of Satan and the Cosmic Dynasphere.
1. In every generation there are 2 things which occur throughout all of Human History.
    - i. Some believers reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace
    - ii. Some believers becoming influenced by evil and going into apostasy and reversionism.
  2. In every generation you are either influenced by Bible Doctrine or evil.
    - i. When influenced by Bible Doctrine and function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception you will eventually reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receive Super Grace blessings for time.
    - ii. When influenced by evil you will eventually move into apostasy and reversionism and be subject to the various stages of Divine Discipline and be minus Super Grace blessings and under the Sin Unto Death.
  3. Evil, Apostasy, Reversionism, Doctrine, Super Grace, and believers progress and believers retrogress in every generation.
  4. These 2 situations exist and conflict throughout the Church Age and every generation between the ascension and the removal of Satan as ruler of this world.
  5. This is characteristic of these 2 dispensations between the advents of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ just as are wars and rumors of wars.
- G. Principle of life and personnel in life:
1. When a person goes under Negative Volition toward anything he will always go under positive volition to something else.
  2. You cannot become negative to something without becoming positive to something else.
  3. Every Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine or the Laws of Divine Establishment sets up a vacuum which causes you to become positive to the wrong thing such as evil, revolution, confusion, anarchy, anti authoritarianism, etc.



4. A Believer rejects Bible Doctrine then becomes negative to the military and becomes a conscientious objector.
5. A believer who rejects Divine Viewpoint then becomes positive to Human Viewpoint.
6. When you drop an enthusiasm you always pick up another and if your enthusiasm is not toward those things declared in the word of God it will be for something antagonistic to Bible Doctrine.
7. This explains why so many believers are in apostasy and living a life which is in total opposition to the principles of Bible Doctrine and the Royal Family of God.

## II. Apostles of Apostasy:

- A. Satan is the source of a policy of called evil
  1. This policy must be disseminated throughout his kingdom which is this world
  2. He disseminates his policy through creatures and doctrines.
  3. He uses both angels under his control called Demons and Humans under his control by their thinking
  4. The doctrines are the doctrines of demons or evil or the Cosmic Dynasphere.
  5. It is the thinking in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which puts a believer under control of Satan and when the believer thinks EVIL concepts being influenced by EVIL principles he is under control of Satan and cannot be demon possessed.
- B. Many of the Apostles of Apostasy are in the clergy.
  1. They include politicians, religious leaders, admirals, judges, generals, educators, ETC ETC.
  2. These under the influence of evil are satanic emissaries.
- C. Because Timothy is such a weak pastor these types of people have succeeded in coming into his church and disrupting his congregation.
  1. No Pastor Teacher should ever permit this type of attack of apostasy on his congregation.
  2. Timothy should have spotted this and thrown these believer out of his church.

## III. Asceticism

- A. It is loss of capacity for life, austere self denial as a means to gain approbation of God.
  1. Why anyone would revere asceticism is beyond comprehension.
  2. Some people who have a guilt reaction to what they are doing in life go for asceticism as a reaction.
  3. These reactions to what occur in one's life results from formation of a guilt complex and this is SIN.
  4. This is why all those people in the country go around and adopt orphans from the east and Russia.
  5. We allowed these refugees from china, Vietnam and other areas to come to this country in the past because our congress has a guilt complex.
  6. We see this today in the STUPID IDIOTIC concepts about illegal immigrants and feeding and supporting them and forming "sanctuary" cities because the people involved have a guilt complex and try to make up for it with other peoples money, property and FREEDOMS.
  7. These people react with sinful mental thinking and then sinful evil actions.
- B. It is the most awful thing in the world but we all have an Old Sin Nature TREND toward asceticism.
  1. In some it is very pronounced
    - i. Some use it as a safety valve for stress
    - ii. Others use if as an escape from life and reality.
    - iii. Some use it to inflict self torture in a form of auto flagellation.
    - iv. Many think you must HURT to be doing things for God and thus get into extreme self denial to cause themselves to HURT.
- C. Two forms of asceticism were used in the attack in Ephesus
  1. Prohibition of Sex and Marriage

- i. To be spiritual you must live minus SEX
  - 2. Prohibition of any food which tastes, looks or is good for you.
    - i. To be spiritual you must eat food which makes you gag as you try to consume it.
  - 3. Ephesus had once been a wild town and the people had been real wild people and then something occurs and they think the end is near and therefore when they look at their lifestyle it scares them and they then think they have to do something to make it up to God and this causes them to move their lifestyle opposite to the wild side.
  - 4. The Opposite of being wild and raising hell is asceticism
- D. The result of this in Ephesus was 2 fold and they assumed that salvation came from abstaining from sex and good food.
  - 1. Spirituality also came from abstinence from sex and good food.
  - 2. Spiritual Maturity came from abstinence from sex and good food.
  - 3. Good food stimulates the taste and sex stimulates the body and the ascetic says anything which is fun, pleasurable or stimulating it is WRONG.
- E. The prohibitions regarding food and sex had their origins in ascetic Gnosticism from people like Marcien, Saturneus, Manakeans.
  - 1. These were uncomfortable in a sensuous world and to get comfortable you must abstain from good foods and sex.
  - 2. Discussion of Ascetic Gnosticism.
  - 3. Pharisees were theological legalists
  - 4. Sadducee were the rationalistic legalists and the real conservatives
  - 5. Zealots were revolutionaries, long haired hippy types
  - 6. Essenees were reactors to everything in society.
  - 7. Today we have had the Trapist Monks living in the desert alone and abstaining from anything pleasant.
  - 8. Many of these people came through Ephesus and stopped to worship at the church Timothy had because he was a wimp and said nothing which would offend anyone.
  - 9. He knew Bible Doctrine but did not teach it and never took a stand for doctrine.
  - 10. If women pushed him around then false teachers could easily come in and take over his congregation.
  - 11. Ephesus was the center of Christianity and the church there was the largest in the ancient world.
  - 12. Later this was accepted by Gnosticism totally.
- F. Apostate Ascetic reversionism REJECTS the legitimate expression of category II Love in Sexual intercourse.
  - 1. This becomes a form of legalism to gain the approbation of God.
  - 2. This was reaction to the heathen phallic cult functions of that time.
  - 3. This was taught by people who said you cannot go to heaven if you ever have sex.
  - 4. Others said you can get to heaven if you have had sex but you will be the peon cutting the grass or picking cotton in the fields.
  - 5. Both said in addition GOD will never bless you in time.
- G. Abstinance from sex and foods introduces the principles of salvation and spirituality by works and is legalism and apostasy in ascetic reversionism.
  - 1. There is now a short statement of REFUTATION and an explanation of how wrong these things are.
  - 2. All food comes from God and LAND is a true mark of wealth because you can cultivate land and grow food and eat from the land.
  - 3. There was a great emphasis on FOOD and LAND in the early part of the roman empire when this was written.
  - 4. All birds, fish and animals were provided by God for us on the 4<sup>th</sup> day of restoration and all ascetics agree on the fact that you must never ever eat meat.
  - 5. For them to eat meat is to kill an animal and is an insult to God.

6. This is the asceticism of the culture of India and it is rejection of what God provides for man's health and blessing physically.
  7. If you are tired of meat eat something else but don't ever do it for either salvation or spirituality or blessing from God.
  8. You don't have to abstain from MEAT to grow spiritually in life.
  9. Everything alive is for food and also the green plant.
- H. Receiving your food with thanksgiving means asking for God to sanctify the food for nourishment for the body.
1. This means whatever is wrong with the food or its preparation it will then be only for nourishment of the body of the consumer.
  2. Thanksgiving for food should be done every time you eat no matter where you eat and who prepared it.
  3. We must remember always to ask God to sanctify the food and many believers have been protected when bad food is served.
  4. Food was created by God to sustain the human body and partaking of food can be a pleasure and a necessity combined.
  5. NEVER get away from the fact that God may have created the food but WE must recognize this by praying for sanctification of the food.
  6. Always ask the most advanced believer to pray over the food asking for sanctification of it.
  7. Those with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul when they ask for sanctification of the food will always be the cause of it being nourishing for the consumers.

**Gen 9:3**

**1Tim 4:3**

**v3: They, False teachers representing the satanic viewpoint, hinder, prohibit, forbid marriage emphasizing sexual intercourse, and command constant continuous abstinence from certain foods which foods The God has created from nothing and manufactured, to be received with thanksgiving by dependable believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, even those who have full or maximum knowledge of doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.**

**Lesson #53      Series # 467      1Tim 4:4**

- I. Principles:
  - A. There is never any excuse for missing bible study
    1. There is nothing in life which should keep the believer with positive volition away from bible study.
    2. Those who are not totally under positive volition to Bible Doctrine will find and use any excuse to miss study.
    3. Those who are under positive volition to Bible Doctrine nothing can ever keep them from bible study.
  - B. If you feel you are going to sleep stand up to listen instead of sitting and sleeping.
  - C. Sanctification (setting aside for blessing) of the Meal is essential for every meal for all believers
- II. Provision for man by God.
  - A. Every kind of animal created by God is good meat for food for man.
    1. There is no kind of meat which is bad for man but some meat is better than others.
    2. Legalistic asceticism is a terrible evil which entices man to gain the approbation of God by abstaining from certain foods, like the vegetarians abstain from meat, and also from SEX.
    3. Asceticism generally says you can eat all the vegetables you want but NOT meat.
    4. Asceticism is false, religion, satanic and part of evil and an expression of reversionism.
      - i. Evil is Satan's policy and reversionism is the result of those influenced by Evil.
    5. The key to consumption of any food is to ask God to bless it before you eat it in order to be able to move ahead to another day in perfect health and under blessing.

- B. V4 removes any ideas of asceticism and destroys the ideas of bleeding hearts to not KILL animals for food.
1. All kinds of meat were designed by God for the consumption of mankind.
  2. This is the stupidity of the religion in India and this is EVIL.
  3. Many animal populations must be thinned out and is done so by predatory animals but if they do not exist then man is to reduce the herds by hunting them and EATING THEM.
- C. Principle:
1. Always sanctify the food before consuming it.
    - i. There is no way we can ever consider or be sure of all the problems which arise from food preparation from the ground to the table and sanctifying it is the only protection we ever have.
  2. There is a system of legalism which says certain foods are non spiritual and partaking of them means you are not saved, cannot be spiritual and are not pleasing to God.
  3. When you are facing food and no matter how carefully and well it is prepared IT MUST BE SANCTIFIED before eating it.
  4. Prayer for the food should be short and to the point and always be used prior to eating.
  5. In sanctifying the food though it in some way may be dangerous because of the prayer the danger is removed and it is turned or set apart for physical nourishment and protection of health for the one praying.
  6. Consecrating the food with prayer results in whatever may be harmful in that food is set aside and the food is rendered nourishing and harmless to the person praying who eats it.
  7. The Word, Bible Doctrine from God has promised that animal and plant life has been set apart for food for mankind so that Human Life can be maintained in the course of the Angelic Conflict.

#### Gen 1:29-30

8. We are authorized to KILL animals to eat them and they are to be set apart for nourishment for us through Bible Doctrine and prayer.

- D. Principles:
1. Bible Doctrine guarantees both spiritual and physical food
  2. The prayer of the Super Grace believer removes any problems of impurities in the food.
  3. The principle of grace before meals is found also in **1Sam 9:13**
  4. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ offered prayer before eating the loaves and fishes **Matt 14:19, 15:36**
    - i. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who could have through a miracle removed the impurities in the food CHOSE to do it our way and pray.
  5. Paul on ship offered grace for the meal before the seamen ate **Acts 17:35**

#### III. Doctrine of Reversionism (reviewed)

- A. Definition:
1. Reversionism is the negative Status Quo of the believer toward Bible Doctrine in stage 2 of the Spiritual Life
  2. Reversionism is characterized by:
    - i. Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and resultant failure to function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
    - ii. Perpetual carnality resulting in a life of perpetual Divine Discipline Heb 12:4-15
  3. Reversionism is recession from any stage of spiritual growth partial or complete, recession either partial or complete from the Edification Complex of the Soul and recession from the Super Grace Status Quo.
    - i. Generally a person who goes all the way to Super Grace will not go all the way to reversionism but check his retreat quickly.
  4. It is lack of spiritual growth, resulting from neglect of Bible Doctrine the only means of spiritual growth.

5. While Super Grace is the progressive state of the believer in time reversionism is the retrogressive state of the believer in time.
  - i. You never are standing still and either go forward or backward.
6. Reversionism in the believer is analogous to apostasy or being under the influence of evil.
7. Reversionism in the unbeliever is the rejection of or departure from the Laws of Divine Establishment.
8. Reversionism must be distinguished from carnality in the same way spirituality must be distinguished from maturity.
9. Spirituality is an absolute Status Quo where by God the Holy Spirit controls the soul of the believer, Super Grace is a relative status involving maximum spiritual growth or maturity.
10. Carnality is also an absolute Status Quo where the believer is out of fellowship through sin, reversionism is a relative state of varying degrees of spiritual failure and influence of evil.
11. The carnal believer is or can be under positive volition toward Bible Doctrine but the reversionistic believer is always under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine.
  - i. Carnal believers can recover from carnality instantly by using rebound procedures.
  - ii. The reversionistic believer can recover from his Status Quo by taking many years of consistency in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
    - a. Sometimes they never recover
12. Reversionism is a technical theological synonym for being influenced by evil.
  - i. Evil is the policy of Satan while reversionism is the result of Evil influencing the believer.
  - ii. God blesses the believer influenced by Bible Doctrine and provided Divine Discipline for the ones influenced by EVIL.

B. Mechanical Stages of Reversionism:

1. Reaction == The presence of reactor factors in life cause the believer to react:
  - i. Reactors:
    - a. Disillusion – with other people or situations
    - b. Discouragement – about situations
    - c. Boredom – with their daily life routine.
    - d. Loneliness -- inability to cope with it
    - e. Frustration – with people or work or anything
    - f. Being overcome with self pity.
  - ii. These will all cause a reaction in the soul of the believer without enough Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to stabilize and support them.
    - a. Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul causes the believer to meet any exigency in life but minimal or no Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul causes the believer to fall into the reaction stage of reversionism.
  - iii. Other reactors include:
    - a. Rejection of the authority of the Pastor Teacher.
    - b. Personality conflicts with the Pastor Teacher or others in he congregation.
    - c. Hypersensitivity
    - d. Lack of objectivity under rebuke or reprimand.
    - e. Getting into ILLUSIONS about many things
  - iv. Mental Attitude Sins of all sorts especially arrogance and guilt.

- v. Operation vengeance or getting even which his seeking happiness built on another persons unhappiness.
    - a. Putting people down to make self feel better.
  - vi. Distractions luring the believer from the routine of consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine
    - a. Social - Sexual
    - b. Pleasure
    - c. Entertainment
    - d. Family drops in to visit
    - e. Health Problems or Issues
    - f. Gossip
    - g. Policy Distractions
  - vii. Drug or Alcohol Addiction
    - a. Being under the influence of illicit drugs or alcohol will prevent concentration on Bible Doctrine.
  - viii. Mental Illness
    - a. Neurotics
    - b. Psychotics
  - ix. Academic or Mental Incompetence
    - a. This can distract from learning Bible Doctrine
    - b. This is the believer who comes a few times and does not understand technical vocabulary or principles and then quit coming instead of sticking it out and learning the vocabulary and principles.
2. Frantic Search for happiness:
- i. Function of the reactor factor resulting in moving into the Frantic Search for happiness
    - a. The choice through the Old Sin Nature is Asceticism or Lasciviousness.
    - b. These are opposite extremes but both are practices and the ascetic is often seen by others as a deeply spiritual believer and the lascivious one is considered not a believer at all.
  - ii. Frantic Search for happiness becomes an alternative to the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and the accepted solution to the frustrations resulting from reaction.
  - iii. This Frantic Search for happiness follows the trends of the Old Sin Nature:
    - a. Asceticism leading to false emphasis on experience, conferences, pseudo tongues, holly rollers, legalism, involvement in works, spirituality by self denial, self flagellation, one shot decisions, Tabooism.
    - b. Anything which stimulates, is fun or enjoyable or makes you laugh must be given up for God.
  - iv. Lasciviousness includes drunkenness, debauchery, drug abusers, nymphomania, homosexuality, etc.
3. Operation Boomerang:
- i. The Frantic Search for happiness intensifies the original reaction in stage one and now the search for happiness has made the reaction Worse at this point.
  - ii. Frustration becomes intensified and this leads to intensification of the Frantic Search for happiness and where people go insane and are absolutely unrecognizable.

**1Tim 4:4**

**v4: Because (v3), everything created by perfect God, any meat from the animal world is Good for Food and nothing among the meat from animal life is to be rejected as unclean, if it is received with Gratitude or thanksgiving.**

**1Tim 4:5**

**v5: For has been sanctified, set apart for nourishment through the agency of the Word from God and Prayer.**

- I. In any field of life from professional to hobby interests you MUST know about that which you are interested in it.
  - A. KNOWLEDGE is the key to doing anything in the right way.
- II. Doctrine of Reversionism continued:
  - A. Principle:
    1. The stages of reversionism overlap a great deal as do all principles and doctrines but they are best understood by isolation of each one.
    2. If the United States of America continues on its saturation of believer and unbeliever reversionism it will not last very long.
      - i. This was 1975 and we see now that we have had a reprieve for a generation with a great deal of positive volition but now in 2017 we are in grave need again of more positive volition and more Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believers.
    3. Judges of Past
      - i. Murder in US District Court of Territory of New Mexico in Taos NM.
        - a. US vs Gonzales 1881, Jose Gonzales will not be there for spring a very good condemning statement by the Judge.
  - B. Emotional Revolt of the Soul
    1. Emotion is the female part of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul designed to respond to the Right Lobe of the soul the male part.
      - i. The body has both male and female hormones and the Soul also has both male and female parts.
      - ii. The Right Lobe is the Male part
      - iii. The Emotion is the Female part
    2. The emotion is designed to respond to what you think and this is the normal function of the soul.
      - i. When the emotion controls the soul and the Right Lobe responds this is totally abnormal.
      - ii. This is the emotion fornicating with the Old Sin Nature instead of responding to the Right Lobe.
      - iii. The Old Sin Nature has areas:
        - a. Weakness producing Sin
        - b. Strength producing Human Good.
        - c. Lust patterns
        - d. Trends
    3. The Old Sin Nature is constantly trying to seduce the emotion away from the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
      - a. When this occurs you have people like Holy rollers / Charismatics and these are emotional rejects.
    4. Emotion has no doctrinal content, mentality, character, and is a responder and only can respond to the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
      - i. When it fails to respond to the Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe and it revolts from it this is Emotional Revolt of the Soul.
      - ii. When it revolts it becomes the aggressor and loses all capacity for life and becomes distorted and the tool for the Old Sin Nature **Rev 2:23**
        - a. This is influence by Bible Doctrine vs Influence by evil.
    5. Emotion of the reversionist resists Bible Doctrine and its teaching **2Cor 6:11-12**
      - i. Believers are hindered by emotion in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

- ii. This is why believers are commanded to separate from believers who have reached Emotional Revolt of the Soul. **Rom 16:17-18**
  - iii. We must avoid the holy rollers and cults and their apostasy.
- 6. When emotion becomes an aggressor it neutralizes Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and eventually causes it to dry up.
  - i. Emotion becomes a tyrant and shuts out Bible Doctrine and short circuits the Grace Apparatus for Perception and causes the soul to malfunction.
  - ii. Believers who live by emotion or use their emotion for the criterion for their norms and standards and for life are apostate and under the influence of evil and disoriented and degenerate and reversionistic and under Divine Discipline and will wind up under the Sin Unto Death.
- 7. There is NOTHING WRONG with emotion and it is the manner in which we express our capacity for life and how we respond to so very many things which we enjoy.
  - i. It responds to good music, drama, athletics, understand some life sustaining principles, and so very many things in life.
  - ii. No one wants to be without emotion but no one wants to have it as a dictator.
- C. Negative volition toward Bible Doctrine
  - 1. All of the stages of reversionism contribute to this stage of Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
    - i. Reaction Stage is where Negative Volition begins
    - ii. Frantic Search for happiness takes you away from Bible Doctrine.
    - iii. Operation Boomerang will either take you back to Bible Doctrine or move you much further from it.
    - iv. Emotional Revolt of the Soul when it occurs makes it obvious that you are in a solid status of Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
  - 2. As a result of these factors the believer becomes confirmed in his Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
  - 3. Characteristics of Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine include:
    - i. Indifference or Apathy toward Bible Doctrine teaching or the right Pastor Teacher.
    - ii. Too busy for Bible Doctrine study
      - a. Any excuse to miss
    - iii. Antagonism or personality conflict with regard to the Pastor Teacher or his authority.
    - iv. Antagonism or personality conflict with others in the congregation.
      - a. These 2 are excuses and there is no reason for anyone NOT coming to bible study because of conflict with others.
      - b. There are NO excuses for missing bible study but if you are under Negative Volition then any simple excuse will be sufficient.
    - v. Failure to use the grace provision for function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception:
      - a. Missing assembly at the local church for bible study
      - b. Failure to rebound
      - c. Lack of respect for authority.
      - d. Poor manners
      - e. Lack of concentration
      - f. No poise
      - g. No objectivity.
    - vi. Inability to handle prosperity
      - a. When prosperity hits a believer they lose interest in the Bible Doctrine which got them there and drift away from it.
      - b. Prosperity is a warning stage of Divine Discipline as well as a blessing from GOD.



- c. Prosperity should never be an excuse to get away from that which allows you to enjoy it.
    - d. Capacity for life and love and happiness is based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so the more prosperous you become the MORE you should want Bible Doctrine in order to build more capacity for your greater prosperity.
  - vii. Disorientation to the factors of Living or Logistical Grace.
    - a. God keeps each believer alive in the world ruled by Satan by:
      - i ) Food
      - ii ) Shelter
      - iii ) Clothing
      - iv ) Transportation
      - v ) Any and all things needed for the believer to assemble and hear the word of God taught.
      - vi ) A Job
      - vii ) Transportation
      - viii ) Right Pastor Teacher
      - ix ) local church
      - x ) Bible preserved as the text book
    - b. Disorientation is the failure to appreciate these things.
- D. Blackout of the Soul
  1. The believer in this stage has started this in the Left Lobe of the Soul the “nous”.
  2. Negative Volition produces the vacuum in the soul where there is no absolute truth
  3. Through this vacuum comes the false teachings, doctrines of demons which is the communication of evil
  4. Evil entering the Left Lobe of the Soul then blacks out the Left Lobe where then there is only
    - i. Strict Human Viewpoint
    - ii. Satanic viewpoint
    - iii. Liberalism
    - iv. Bleeding heard do good concepts
    - v. Anti establishment
    - vi. Anti Authority
    - vii. Anti War which is in itself good for many reasons
    - viii. Religious involvement
    - ix. Human Viewpoint
    - x. Panaceas of life involvement
    - xi. Social Action involvement
    - xii. Guilt Complex Altruism
  5. Many things which we have been brainwashed into thinking are wrong are doctrinally RIGHT
    - i. As a result of this brainwashing believers are the WORST people in the nation.
    - ii. These believers are born again and in reversionism and they are the worst people in the nation.
    - iii. The worst people in 1975 in his thinking is the senator from Oregon who was totally mixed up in his thinking
    - iv. Being a believer is meaningless unless there is maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
  6. The believer cannot be Demon possessed. **1Cor 6:19-20**
    - i. The unbeliever has a body and soul
      - a. The body can be demon possessed.

- b. The soul of the unbeliever can be EVIL possessed or saturated with evil and totally influenced by evil.
      - ii. The believer is body, Soul, and Human Spirit.
        - a. The body of the believer is indwelt by God the Holy Spirit and he is always there and therefore cannot be possessed by demons.
        - b. If he reaches Blackout of the Soul in reversionism he is then saturating his soul with Evil and he is therefore under the influence of evil and can be said to be Evil Possessed.
      - iii. The key to life is what you think.
        - a. If you think doctrine you grow up and take responsibility for your life and decisions and move from salvation into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
        - b. If you think evil then you will retrogress into reversionism and be subject to Divine Discipline to the point of the Sin Unto Death.
7. The infiltration of satanic doctrine or demon or evil influence leads to Blackout of the Soul **Eph 4:17-18**
  - i. Don't be like gentile heathens walking in the nothingness or vacuum of their mind.
- E. Scar Tissue of the Soul
1. This refers to the freezing of the valves in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. **John 14;20**
    - i. In the Frame of Reference there are 2 valves
      - a. One goes into the memory center for vocabulary storage and categorical storage for technical vocabulary
      - b. One goes into the norms and standards of the soul.
    - ii. All of these valves in all aspects of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul lead to the wisdom center or launch pad for Bible Doctrine to experience.
    - iii. When these valves freeze the Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul cannot be circulated.
    - iv. Bible Doctrine then atrophies and instead of disappearing hardens into Scar Tissue of the Soul.
  2. Scar Tissue of the Soul or hardness of the heart rejects things such as:
    - i. Military preparation and national defense. **Prov 21:29-31**
    - ii. This is an easy way to spot people with Scar Tissue of the Soul when they reject the military, down play the necessity for military preparation and national defense strategies.
    - iii. The Super Grace believer never goes against the lord and is always for the military, Law Enforcement, courtroom processes, all needed things to protect life and property.
  3. Reversionists reject War Preparation, Victory from the Lord etc.
  4. It is a state of revolt against the lord and establishment **Neh 9:16-17**
    - i. This includes revolution and rejection of authority.
    - ii. In the exodus generation after leaving Egypt they rejected Moses, Bible Doctrine and his authority and elected leaders to turn them around to bring them back to slavery.
  5. Hardness of the Neck is insubordination to the point of revolution and Scar Tissue of the Soul is related to this intense Negative Volition **Jer 27:25-27**
    - i. Because of their rejection of Bible Doctrine they did EVIL.
    - ii. Evil is what destroys believers not SIN.
    - iii. Sin was judged on the cross and when a believer sins he can rebound.
    - iv. It is not sin which can destroy any believer and we all as believers will sin till the day of our death.

- v. It is evil thinking which will destroy us, thinking in terms of the policy and plan of Satan.
  - vi. This issue is the key and totally obscured in our totally apostate society and generation.
- F. Reverse Process Reversionism is the antithesis of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
- 1. These believers cannot be distinguished from the unbeliever as far as his Viewpoint, pattern of life, or anything else about him.
  - 2. The believer reverses the object of his love, attention and occupation and becomes enamored with pseudo objects compatible with his spiritual condition.
    - i. In Category I Love he seeks personal glory by Blind Arrogance rather than Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
    - ii. In Category II Love false or temporary LOVERS instead of the Right Woman
    - iii. In Category III Love he has false friends instead of true friends
    - iv. No capacity for life.
- G. There is Divine Discipline for every stage of reversionism.
- 1. Warning Discipline is designed by God to warn the believer about his degrading condition.
    - i. It is found in the first 4 stages of reversionism, reaction, Frantic Search for happiness, Operation boomerang, Emotional Revolt of the Soul.
    - ii. This stage includes both prosperity and adversity.
    - iii. There will be warnings such as having something like prosperity and then having it removed, success, love etc.
    - iv. You may have these things long enough to appreciate it and then have it removed so that you can remember that God in his heaven is sovereign and any blessing which counts must come from him.
    - v. The removal of prosperity is a definitive warning **Rev 3:20**
    - vi. However, Reversion recovery means renewed relationship with the lord.
    - vii. Something in the life comes and rings a bell of warning for the believer to make him understand he is going in the wrong direction **James 5:9**
    - viii. Continued Gossip, maligning, judging trying to verbally destroy someone is a warning Divine Discipline source
  - 2. Intensive Divine Discipline is for those who reject the lord in his life. **Ps 38:1-14, 2Thes 2:11**
    - i. Prosperity is removed but sometimes it is not and what prosperity he has makes him more miserable.
    - ii. The believer is then totally miserable.
    - iii. This is found also in the first 4 stages of reversionism and into the 5<sup>th</sup> stage
  - 3. Dying Divine Discipline == Sin Unto Death.
    - i. **Jer 9:16, 44:12, Phil 3:18-19, Rev 3:16** reversionism is the cause of the Sin Unto Death.
    - ii. The relationship between Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine and the Sin Unto Death is found in **1Chron 10:13-14**
- H. Principle of Reversionism **Gal 5:4 (corrected)**  
**Gal 5:4**  
**v4: You reversionists who think circumcision is the answer to salvation have been severed from or have become a casualty from Christ, ineffective, useless, neutralized who ever you are, you who would be justified or vindicated by means of the law; you have drifted off course from Grace the Plan of God or Logistical Grace.**
- 1. This is drifting off course from grace
  - 2. This leads to shoals and reefs and disasters of many kinds.
- I. Categories of Reversionism:

1. Phallic **2Cor 12:21, Eph 4:19, 5:5, Col 3:5, Rev 2:14, 20-23**
2. Legalistic **Col 2:16-18, Heb 5:11-6;16**
3. Monetary **Eccl 5:10-16, James 4:13-14, 5:1-6, Rev 3:14-20, 1Tim 5**
4. Alcoholic or Drug reversionism **Is 28;1-9, Gal 5:20**
  - i. The bible permits anyone who is not goofy to take an occasional drink of alcohol IT NEVER PERMITS ANYONE TO PARTAKE OF DRUGS apart from medical necessity.
  - ii. It is not normal to get involved in any form of drug abuse and it is a very hard road to recovery apart from Bible Doctrine.
  - iii. When you get involved in these things you destroy parts of your brain which prints information.
  - iv. The believer who gets into this has the worst recovery period than anyone else.
  - v. If you need stimulation in life there is plenty of it on the way to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Super Grace and thereafter.
5. Anti-establishment reversionism hippies and others **Rom 1:18-32, Hos 4:1-7**
  - i. Anti Military types who are cowards and traitors
    - a. Nathan Hale before his execution said to the British that he Regretted having only 1 life to give for his country.
6. Mental Attitude reversionism
7. Verbal Reversionism **James 5:9+12**
8. Psychotic Reversionism
  - i. It is possible to recovery from this Status Quo.
  - ii. However the ones who recover are those who have had normal lives.
  - iii. Those how are in and cannot get out of blind arrogance cannot ever recover from this category of reversionism.
  - iv. Arrogance makes is so they can only think about themselves and they want you to understand them and follow you around and talk talk so you can understand them.
  - v. These people are maligners and vicious and pathological liars and constantly reacting.
  - vi. Psychosis is not all that bad and people do and have and can recover but they when involved in blind arrogance cannot recover from this or anything else and don't even know they are involved in arrogance.
  - vii. A person often enters psychosis by becoming self centered and anthropocentric and arrogant and disguising it with Humility.

J. Biblical Nomenclature for reversionism:

1. Drifting off course from grace **Gal 5;4**
2. Being enemy of the cross **Phil 3:18** (Believers)
3. Uncircumcised of heart **Jer 9:24-26**
4. Failing of the Grace of God **Heb 12:15**
5. A tortured Soul **2Pet 2:7-8** (Neurotic, Psychotic condition)
6. Unstable Soul **2Pet 2:14**
7. Leaving your first love, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ **Rev 2;4**
8. Fallen **Rev 2;5**
9. Lukewarm **Rev 3;15-16**
10. Shipwrecked **1Tim 1:19**

K. Profile of the reversionist **Ps 7:14-16**

**Ps 7:14-16**

**v14: Behold or focus your attention here, he, the reversionist, shall have perpetual intensive agonizing labor pains of vanity or arrogance making his own misery, because he has become pregnant with Sin of all types and frantic search for happiness and frustrations therefore he has given birth to a life of nothingness or deceit or reversionistic evil. (Cosmic Dynasphere involvement)**

v15: He (Believer in Cosmic Dynasphere Reversionism) dug his own grave or pit, and then he explored it through Frantic Search for Happiness or Emotional Revolt of the Soul, therefore he has fallen into the pit or ditch which he himself has constructed.

v16: His frustration or evil from Cosmic Dynasphere involvement will return on his own head as Self Induced Misery, His violence and that which is obtained by violence or deceit or evil descends on the crown of his own head.

1. Labor pains are the warning Divine Discipline for the reversionist.
2. Every believer must take responsibility for his decisions which are contrary to Bible Doctrine or which keeps him away from Bible Doctrine.
3. **GOD HIMSELF WILL TAKE RESPONSIBILITY FOR ALL DECISIONS WE MAKE WHICH ARE COMPATIBLE WITH BIBLE DOCTRINE.**
4. The Negative Volition decisions toward Bible Doctrine result in warning, intensive and dying Divine Discipline.
5. God sponsors the consequences of Grace
6. The reversionist sponsors the consequences of his Negative Volition.

L. Contamination of Reversionism **Heb 12:15**

M. Psychosis and Reversionism **2Pet 2:15-19**

N. Reversionism Eliminates the Special or Super Grace blessings for time and eternity **Heb 3:10-12**

v10: Therefore I was provoked with that generation, and said, 'They always go astray in their hearts; they have not known my ways.'

v11: As I swore in my wrath, 'They shall never enter my rest.'"

v12: Take care, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil, unbelieving heart, leading you to fall away from the living God.

O. Hebrew reversionism **Heb 5:11-14**

1. Reversion recovery is impossible without consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. **Heb 6:1-3**
2. Reversion recovery is impossible when there is religious reversionism is perpetuated in the life.

P. Reversionism leads to perversion **Rom 1:26-27**, and produces national disintegration **Rom 1:29-34, Hos 4:1-6**

Q. Reversion intensifies suffering **Ps 77:1-10**

R. Doctrine of reverse process reversionism.

## **Lesson #55      Series # 467      1Tim 4:6**

- I. 25 year salute to the Col with guest star Balderdash, by Doug Johnson.
- II. Doctrinal defense against apostasy: v6-10
  - A. Everything in life depends on the word of God and Prayer is our greatest weapon:
  - B. In every local church in the world in history every pastor should study and study to be able to teach with authority organized Bible Doctrine.
    1. This is the responsibility of the Pastor Teacher to feed the flock of his congregation.
    2. This man must devote himself to constant study.
  - C. The Pastor Teacher who has proper preparation for his ministry and who engages in self discipline to study constantly is able with his teaching to insulate his congregation from EVIL.
    1. This is the defense perimeter against the attack of Satan with Apostasy.
    2. This attack of Satan demands that there be a consolidated defense and from this defense an attack can be launched upon him.
    3. It can be a flanking or Salient principle and it is a counter offensive, and before there can be a counter offensive there must be stability in the attacking force.
  - D. To take initiative and attack over and over demands STABILITY.
    1. The Japs were so successfully able to attack Pearl Harbor because for many years they were prepared with their Samauri system and the Bushido code and the actual universal

military training in Japan and used a mock up of Pearl harbor to practice the plans and attack.

- i. We were unprepared because our nation was in its usual anti military position and during the depression the military almost ceased to exist.
    - ii. After the attack it took us 2 years and were it not for the Grace of God and 2 oceans we would never have made it to function in and ultimately win WWII.
  2. This is how it is in Christianity and Satan is always organized and on the offensive and as ruler of this world is the policy maker of this world with EVIL as his policy.
    - i. You cannot attack unless you are stabilized
  3. This paragraph is telling us YOU MUST BE ON BALANCE BEFORE YOU TAKE THE OFFENSIVE IN THE SPIRITUAL LIFE.
  4. Any time an offensive is launched there must be stability, see Kasserine Pass in North Africa and our poor command and the results.
    - i. This is a principle of life for all parts of life.
    - ii. All things in life demand balance and you must be stabilized.
  5. In every generation it is the stabilized congregation with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul who makes the ATTACK.
    - i. It takes a lot of Bible Doctrine and stabilized perimeter from which to launch the attack.
  6. It is the stability from which you launch the offensive which counts and never launch offensive unless you are stabilized.
- E. The Pastor Teacher is totally responsible for teaching consistently and constantly Bible Doctrine
  1. Bible Doctrine is more important than the food we eat or air we breathe
  2. Bible Doctrine is more important than everything in life and is our life and without it there is no life.
  3. Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the stabilizer for the believer in this Church Age.
  4. Consistent teaching of Bible Doctrine gives stabilized spiritual growth from which the believer launches his attack.
- F. The Pastor Teacher who teaches accurate Bible Doctrine to the congregation is an HONORABLE Pastor Teacher.
  1. The Pastor Teacher cannot ever stop being a devoted student of the word of God and the Pastor Teacher from his consistent study of Bible Doctrine will grow spiritually.
  2. From this growth comes his teaching
- G. Principles:
  1. Bible Doctrine is more desirable and more advantageous to the believer than anything in life.
  2. Bible Doctrine is advantageous to the believer as the means of the tactical victory of the Angelic Conflict which comes at the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
    - i. It is at Super Grace Status Quo where God can provide blessings in 5 categories for the believer and is the goal of the Royal Family of God in time.
  3. Bible Doctrine is advantageous in glorifying God.
  4. Bible Doctrine is advantageous in spiritual growth and fulfilling our objectives for this life.
  5. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul has every positive spiritual advantage as well as protecting the believer from apostasy.
  6. This means that Bible Doctrine is advantageous in protecting the believer from Apostasy, Divine Discipline and failure.
    - i. We are designed for victory in the Spiritual Life never for failure.
    - ii. We only fail in the Spiritual Life because of failure to take in Bible Doctrine.
    - iii. Sin is not ever the issue in the Christian Way of Life.

- iv. It is Bible Doctrine which is the issue in the Christian Way of Life and whether we are influenced by Bible Doctrine or by EVIL.
- H. Every Pastor Teacher is obligated to teach Bible Doctrine to his congregation
- 1. You cannot teach what you do not know nor possess.
  - 2. You cannot give what you do not own and the Pastor Teacher must OWN Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
  - 3. Bible Doctrine must be the personal possession of the Pastor Teacher before he can give it to his congregation.
  - 4. You cannot give to a congregation what you do not have in your soul.
  - 5. You have to possess Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as a Pastor Teacher to give it to anyone else.
- I. Principles:
- 1. No minister is qualified for being a Pastor Teacher guardian of the local church until he has saturated himself with Bible Doctrine and this process is continuous.
    - i. The more he studies the more he learns the more he studies the more he realizes what he does not know.
    - ii. The more he knows there are things he does not know the more he studies and thus the more he knows around again.
    - iii. In the relays of this he gives what he knows to the congregation and then continues to learn to give more.
    - iv. A great example is the understanding of EVIL which is in fact the whole problem
    - v. People think sin is the problem in life but that problem has already been solved and the real problems is EVIL which must remain until the Angelic Conflict is completed.
    - vi. The Cross solved sin but EVIL as the policy of Satan must be dealt with by ever generation as this is the means of function of this world under rulership of Satan and until Satan is removed from this world EVIL will remain and MUST remain.
    - vii. Whether we deal with evil successfully or not depends entirely on Bible Doctrine.
    - viii. We have the worlds worst government, we had nuclear weapons and gave them to everyone else, then we started the United Nations to compound world problems, we have communism and islam today and they are the greatest EVIL in the history of the world but this is not taught in our schools since the 1970's.
    - ix. Communism is one of the most concentrated forms of evil to have occurred in over 1000 years and the United States of America by its foreign and domestic policies to advance communism than any other nation.
    - x. The people in the United States of America are the most stupid imbecilic people in existence and the president of the United States of America in 1975 was the stupidest person alive until 2008.
    - xi. The president of the United States of America represents the highest executive authority in the nation and it is necessary to have this but when a president continues to say and do the weirdest things and the stupidest things it is a tragedy for the nation realizing that the PEOPLE elected him.
    - xii. This president sent all the ammuniton for our military to Vietnam and we left the largest Cache of arms and materiel over there in the history of the world and the communists NOW have it all.
    - xiii. Our congress has done nothing in 1975 and again from 2008 to 2016 to check the stupidity of the president they being even more stupid than the president.
    - xiv. Our judges on the supreme court have no idea what LAW is really for and what it means to protect the freedom, property, privacy, life and rights in the individual.
    - xv. Complaining then and now by liberals and even the president that this country was built on immigrants coming to America shows a lack of understanding of the

- difference between immigration and infiltration by communism, islam and simply criminals.
- xvi. The only good thing is that Bible Doctrine was taught then, it is taught now and it has never failed and never will.
  - xvii. Many generations have faced pressure and disaster but that makes no difference with Bible Doctrine and there is always prosperity in disaster for those who function constantly under Bible Doctrine.
2. This means the intense function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception under the strictest academic discipline.
    - i. If the Pastor Teacher does his job right this principle evolves and functions.
    - ii. The Grace Apparatus for Perception only functions properly under strict academic discipline.
  3. Until the man with the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher is a man of Bible Doctrine he is not qualified to function as a Pastor Teacher of a local church.
    - i. This disqualifies 97% of all clergy in America than and more so NOW.
  4. Bible Doctrine is the key to the Pastor Teachers life because Bible Doctrine is the key to the function of the Royal Family of God.
    - i. The Modus Operandi of the Royal Family of God is Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
    - ii. Since Bible Doctrine is the motivator and key to everything and the system and ignition of the function of the Plan of God of Grace it is essential that it start with the Pastor Teacher and move to the congregation.
    - iii. This makes Bible Doctrine the key to the life of the Pastor Teacher not other functions popular in the ministry today.
  5. Bible Doctrine taught from the pulpit is the only defense against Church Age apostasy and the only hope for our nation.
  6. Therefore the Pastor Teacher must constantly exegete and teach verse by verse in an expository manner and there is no substitute for Bible Doctrine
  7. There is no protection against apostasy apart from the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception which demands that the Pastor Teacher take the offensive and teach Bible Doctrine the word of God.

#### **1Tim 4:6**

**v6: By, as Pastor Teacher, having academic preparation and studying consistently and constantly under self discipline, teaching with authority, these things or doctrines to the Royal Family of God believers in the congregation, you will be an honorable minister of Christ Jesus, constantly being nourished in the principles from the bible doctrine even from advantageous or honorable doctrine, acquired from faithful function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, on which you have concentrated, followed with your mind, with the result that you possess it, it being resident in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.**

#### **Lesson #56      Series # 467      1Tim 4:7**

- I. Freedom through military victory
  - A. We have held our ground of freedom in the 1970s with a very fine line having given over to the Vietnamese the largest military cache of arms, ammunition and equipment in the history of the world.
    1. We are holding a very fine line even today in 2017 as in the 70s with Bible Doctrine in a very few mature believers.
    2. We hold against the odds of communism which is coming alive again and islam is on the attack.
    3. Industry has moved out of this country for cheap labor and no taxes, farmers are in fear of losing everything, the federal government is interfering with every level of business and economics and is slowly removing our freedoms, privacy and even our property.



4. The only thing which holds things together is Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of those who take in Bible Doctrine.
- B. We have not been so low in our military establishment since the end of the war of 1812.
  1. We have capable men in both business and military but none come to the top in government.
  2. We have seen even Mr. Trump now begin to engage in compromise with the idiot liberals with several bills which have passed recently in 2018.
- C. We are still here and live off of military victory of the past such as:
  1. John W Minich, SSgt I Company, 121, Infantry, 8<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, 21 Nov 1944, Hurtkin Germany.
  2. Dan D Shooneover Cpl RA, Corps of Engineers, A Company, 13<sup>th</sup> Combat Battalion, 7<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, Skgage Korea, 8-10 July 1953
  3. These men gave their lives for their country and made it possible for us to have this bible study.
  4. The gallant, honorable, noble men have gone to war and purchased our freedom while the dishonorable, vicious, apostate, traitors who function in government destroy our freedoms.

## II. Principle of Prayer:

- A. If food can be set apart for nourishment and cleansed and purified by the word of God and prayer how much more can a national entity in its hopeless condition be preserved.

## III. The Importance of Bible Doctrine:

- A. Doctrine in prayer takes food and cleanses it and makes it good for nourishment and this is GRACE function.
  1. Doctrine in prayer therefore can much more be effective in the function of the Super Grace believer in preservation of the nation.
- B. Definition:
  1. Doctrine == Teaching
    - i. Bible Doctrine is the content of bible communication by teaching and instruction
    - ii. Bible Doctrine is the communication of bible subjects based on exegetical, context and classification or categorization analysis and teaching which analyzes and interprets every passage in the word of God.
    - iii. It is what the bible teaches.
    - iv. Grace is the genius Plan of God while Bible Doctrine is the manifestation of his genius.
  2. Biblical Nomenclature:
  3. Legacy of believers in time is Bible Doctrine:

### Ps 138:2

**v2: I myself will personally in an unconcerned fashion continually learn Bible Doctrine and bow down in worship toward the palace of your provision and holiness, and I will be caused to praise and celebrate your essence or character or person because of your steadfast love or Grace and your doctrine; because You have exalted or magnified the categorical principles of doctrine found in scripture even above your person or reputation.**

- i. The reputation of God is perfect and the source of Bible Doctrine is the reputation of God therefore it is not compromising for God to magnify Bible Doctrine over his reputation.
- ii. Bible Doctrine communicated is the means of glorifying God in this Angelic Conflict intensified stage.
- iii. Bible Doctrine communicated is the means of having Metabolized Bible Doctrine resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer.
- iv. Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul means Status Quo Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
- v. Super Grace means glorification of God.

- vi. God is glorified when he can bless the believer with Super Grace blessings in time IN SPITE of the rule of this world being Satan and his system being the Cosmic Dynaspheres.
- 4. In his dying breath Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ made Bible Doctrine the spiritual legacy of the Royal Family of God. Compare **Luke 23:46 with Ps 31:5**

**Luke 23:46**

**v46: And having enunciated with a loud voice Jesus said, Father, into your hands I deposit my spirit, and having said this he expired.**

**Ps 31:5**

**v5: Father Into your hand I am motivated and causing voluntarily to commit or deposit my Human Spirit, for you have delivered me, Oh Jehovah, God, supreme ruler, of Doctrine. (Adanai El Emeth)**

- 5. Bible Doctrine preexisted the Human Race **Prov 8**
- 6. Bible Doctrine preexisted the Human Race therefore attitude of the believer toward Bible Doctrine determines blessing or Divine Discipline in time. Prov 8:33-36
  - i. Continuous positive volition toward Bible Doctrine means to be influenced by Bible Doctrine
  - ii. Continuous Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine means to be influenced by EVIL
  - iii. The believer's experience is either influenced by God through Bible Doctrine or by Evil the policy of Satan.
  - iv. Sin is never an issue and God has deliberately removed sin as an issue in the Christian Way of Life since sin is a byproduct of possessing the Old Sin Nature and not part of the plan, policy or function of Satan therefore not what is to be resolved in the Angelic Conflict.
  - v. All personal sin in Human History was judged in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross. 1Pet 2;25
  - vi. This does not mean we do not sin but we WILL sin for our whole life but we can recover from such carnality by using the rebound procedure 1John 1:9
  - vii. Recovery from sin is a matter of moments but recovery from the influence of evil leading to reversionism from Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine is a matter of YEARS if it ever would occur.
  - viii. Evil is the policy of Satan and reversionism is the result getting into that policy, 2 sides of the same coin.
  - ix. Doctrine is a system of thought (The thinking of Christ) while Evil is also a system of THOUGHT
    - a. A Thought can make or break you
    - b. What you think is more important than what you do.
    - c. If your thinking is Bible Doctrine then you go on to blessing and glory.
    - d. If your thinking is evil then you move from one stage of Divine Discipline to another until you reach and end up under the Sin Unto Death.
  - x. The real issue is whether your life is influenced by EVIL or Bible Doctrine.
  - xi. SIN is never ever the issue.
  - xii. When we sin we leave the Plan of God called getting out of fellowship, when we rebound then we recover fellowship, get back under and into the Plan of God.
  - xiii. All believers SIN and we will have it as long as we have the Old Sin Nature.
  - xiv. We can fulfill our prime objective which is to be free from evil by continually moving ahead in the Spiritual Life with consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and therefore glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

**Prov 8:33-36**

**v33: Concentrate on communication of Bible Doctrine through teaching, Heed instruction, and become wise (application of Metabolized Bible Doctrine to life through Spiritual Common Sense), DO NOT REJECT nor NEGLECT it Bible Doctrine.**

**v34: Happiness belongs to the one who listens to me, Bible Doctrine, guarding or assembling DAILY at my gates, waiting at my door posts.**

v35: For he who finds me, Bible Doctrine, finds capacity for life furthermore he receives grace blessing in Super-Grace and Ultra Super-Grace from the Lord.

v36: But he who sins against me who fails in learning or rejects Bible Doctrine injures his own soul from Divine Discipline, and all those who hate me, Bible Doctrine love the sin unto death. (John 14:26)

- xv. When you die the Sin Unto Death there is no loss of salvation for eternity but you have been skinned and there is nothing left but to put a Resurrection Body on the skeleton.
- 7. Therefore Bible Doctrine is the basis for distribution of Super Grace blessings Is 53:12
  - i. Daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception means maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
  - ii. This is following the colors to the high ground, establishing a command post of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, setting up your own inner dictator, having the great blessings which come from maximum Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - iii. In Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God God is free to give you Super Grace blessings for time in 5 categories and promises rewards for eternity.
  - iv. The only reason we are still alive in this world is so that God can bless us.
  - v. Satan has a system of blessing and reward and the whole Mephistopheles concept and Dr. Faust is based on that principle.
  - vi. Even the believer can sell out and get under the pseudo prosperity of this world and this is part of the Angelic Conflict.
  - vii. We are left in this life as a believer for ONLY ONE REASON, to be able to make decisions to take in Bible Doctrine and to do so to the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God so that God is free to bless us to our doctrinal capacities.
  - viii. We have capacities for LOVE, Life, Happiness, blessing, and with capacity for blessing you will always pass the prosperity test.
  - ix. All of these 5 categories of blessings when provided by God apart from Satan they are the greatest things in life and they HONOR God.
  - x. God does these blessings entirely totally completely apart from any part of the Cosmic Dynasphere and Satan's plan and policy.
  - xi. When you realize you are LEFT here as a believer simply to be BLESSED and realize that in Eternity Past God created for you Super Grace blessings for time and surpassing blessings for eternity, that if you don't get the Super Grace blessings you WON'T get the surpassing grace blessings.

Is 53:12

v12: Therefore in conclusion, I, God the Father, will distribute or apportion to Him, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ the gains, spoils or plunder of the strategic victory of the Angelic Conflict (Eph 4:8-12) because of the many Believers of the Royal Family of God. And Then He, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, shall re-distribute or divide the spoil or plunder of victory of resurrection, ascension and session, to the great or mighty ones the Super Grace Believers who execute the Spiritual Life of the Royal Family of God, because he has poured out his soul unto Physical Death, prior to this physical death he was identified with the Levitical offerings for Sin or rebellion, (Spiritual Death) because he himself, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ lifted and carried the sin of the many believers and unbelievers and concerning the offerings for sin the whole thing was caused to fall upon him.

- 8. Bible Doctrine is the basis for distribution of surpassing grace blessings for Eternity, **Heb 11:9-10 compared 11:13, James 1:25 compared James 2;12-13**
- 9. Bible Doctrine must be MORE real than empirical knowledge, **2Pet 1:12-21** and Bible Doctrine must be more real than what we think, see, taste, touch, smell, and feel and if there is conflict with what you sense in any way and what the bible says the BIBLE IS RIGHT.

- i. Bible Doctrine is the criterion for the Royal Family of God and the means of all blessing.
10. Lack of Bible Doctrine destroys a nation **Hos 4;1-6**
11. Bible Doctrine is part of the principle of living or logistical grace for life in time.
- i. Under this principle God keeps us alive to take in Bible Doctrine and move to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and then receive Super Grace blessings.
  - ii. These include all things needed for life and to be able to take in Bible Doctrine including but not at all limited to food, shelter, clothing, transportation, the bible, preserved doctrine, a Pastor Teacher and place or means of getting it.
12. The Plan of God is advanced and vindicated through Bible Doctrine **Is 53:10, Rom 3;4**
13. The Pastor Teacher or communicator of Bible Doctrine establishes the balance of residence in the soul of the believer.
- i. The principle of residence in 3 parts and includes:
    - a. Indwelling of the body by God the Holy Spirit **1Cor 6:19**,
    - b. Filling of God the Holy Spirit in the soul of the believer
    - c. Indwelling of Bible Doctrine from function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - ii. Bible Doctrine is transferred to the soul of the believer by authorized teaching by the right Pastor Teacher.
    - a. This occurs through the ministry of God the Holy Spirit in the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - iii. The purpose of this transfer of Bible Doctrine from the pages of scripture to the soul of the believer is to establish balance of residence whereby God can be glorified in your life and can bless and provide for you apart from the Cosmic Dynasphere.
  - iv. God the Holy Spirit works in the Church Age through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - v. Vacancy of Bible Doctrine in the soul creates a demand for Bible Doctrine teaching and the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
  - vi. Daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception creates the balance of residence and the Pastor Teacher is the one delivering the communication.
14. Therefore the importance of consistency of function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception **Heb 10:25, 35-36**
- i. As we get closer to the end of our life we need to be sure we have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - ii. We must persevere and persist in the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception in order to receive the blessings of Super Grace and Surpassing Grace.
  - iii. When a Pastor Teacher does his job it is nice to know when people respond to the teaching of Bible Doctrine.
  - iv. God has created in Eternity Past a paragraph of Super Grace blessings for each of us and it belongs only to us and it is the means by which God is glorified when he can give you that paragraph.
  - v. When this occurs the blessings we receive are fantastic and the glory He receives is fantastic.
  - vi. It is a terrible thing to fall into the hands of an angry God and a terrible thing to NOT be qualified for the blessings of Super Grace and God gets down right MAD about it and takes you out the through the Sin Unto Death and you will live eternally without any blessing or rewards.
  - vii. It is tragic for any believer to reject or neglect Bible Doctrine and while the wrath of God in the Lake of Fire is something we will not know but in time every believer who turns his back on Bible Doctrine will feel the scorching of HELL in

his life and he will go out in the most horrible and miserable means imaginable under the Sin Unto Death.

- viii. God is fair, just and has provided this wonderful grace blessing system and there is no greater wrath of God outside of hell itself than that which he exercises against the reversionistic believer who rejects Bible Doctrine.
- ix. This person will be disciplined his whole life all the way to his grave.
- x. We only can obtain the blessing from God with grace capacity and grace capacity only comes from MULTI nonmeritorious decision to take in Bible Doctrine and therefore building maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- xi. Persistent positive volition toward Bible Doctrine plus the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception is the key to reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and blessing from God.
- xii. No matter what is expressed or what hurts and tears us down and rebuilds us Bible Doctrine is the key.
- xiii. We are at the end of our life having reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God to be "OVERFLOWING" with thanksgiving as a result of receiving our Super Grace blessings in time.

## Col 2:6-7

- 15. The results of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul produces
  - i. Confidence in time Job 5:24-27, 2Cor 5:6-8, Heb 10:35
  - ii. Divine Viewpoint of life giving dynamics of soul Is 55:7-9 2 Cor 10:5
  - iii. Orients the believer to the Plan of God Is 26:3-4, Rom 8:28
  - iv. Stability of mind, James 1:8
  - v. Basis for divine guidance and execution of the Will of God Rom 12:2-3
  - vi. Leads to Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the capacity and ability to LOVE GOD, Phil 3:10, Eph 3:19, Heb 12:2-3
  - vii. Attains and holds Super Grace Status Quo Phil 3:12-14
  - viii. Attains surpassing grace blessing in eternity, Heb 11:9-13, James 1:25, 2:12-13
- 16. Synonyms for Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul OR Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - i. Original Language
    - a. (heb) Chamah == maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
    - b. (gr) Epignosis == maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
  - ii. Theological James 4:6 == Greater Grace or Super Grace.
  - iii. Priestly Heb 13:10 == Royal Family of God have an altar in the Soul thus Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - iv. Building Eph 4:12, 16, Edification Complex of the Soul, a build up of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul thus Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
  - v. Time == redeeming the time
    - a. Toward God Eph 5:16-18
    - b. Toward the Unbeliever Col 4:5
  - vi. Central Control or Dictator of the soul Eph 6:10
  - vii. Military
    - a. Putting on the Full armor from God Eph 6:11-18
    - b. Following the Colors to the High Ground of Spiritual Maturity Heb 12:1-2
    - c. Establishing the command post in the soul Col 2:5-8

- viii. Crucifixion Matt 10:38, Mk 8:34, Luke 9:23, 14:27, Attend Bible Doctrine study in spite of evil disillusion or distraction.
- ix. Chemical == Salt of the Earth, Matt 5:13, Mk 9:50, Luke 14:34, Col 4:6
  - a. Salt is the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which preserves the periphery of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- x. Sanctification == GODLINESS 1Tim 6:3-4, 2Pet 1:3 == balance of residence in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul between Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Metabolized Bible Doctrine.

#### IV. Doctrinal defense against Apostasy Continued

##### A. Defense of Spiritual Growth against Apostasy

1. If you are going to grow up in the Spiritual Life and glorify God and defend against evil you must have spiritual growth and Bible Doctrine for this spiritual growth.
  - i. In order to grow spiritually you have to refuse and reject certain things
  - ii. In order to grow in the Spiritual Life you must continuously reject false doctrines, or systems including ALL systems of legalism and Tabooism.
  - iii. The parents have a right to prohibit their children from doing anything they like but they do not have the right to infer that they will be closer to God because of doing so.
  - iv. Taboos and prohibitions are not the secret to spiritual growth and means of pleasing God in life.
  - v. Until a person gets rid of these legalisms and false doctrines there is no possibility of any spiritual growth.
2. Believers in the Church Age are members of the Royal Family of God and ROYALTY does not cater to Peasants and their stupid concepts.
  - i. When we as Royal Family of God get into legalism, accept false doctrines or become influenced by evil we are catering to Stupid Peasants.
  - ii. When you are born you may be a low class person but with being born again we are in the Royal Family of God and high class now and must constantly reject these things in our life.
  - iii. This tells us that SNOBBERY is not a bad as we sometimes think it is and sometimes it is good sense.
  - iv. In development of any western European country Snobbery was the greatest thing.
  - v. Snobbery is a synonym for separation and it is better to be a SNOB than a SLOB with regard to biblical doctrine.
  - vi. Either you are positive to Bible Doctrine or you are a slob.
  - vii. Being a slob in the soul prevents one from moving into the palace of blessing for the SNOB in the Royal Family of God.
  - viii. The bible teaches unequivocally CLASS DISTINCTION and INEQUALITY which goes with FREEDOM
  - ix. Our country is declining for this very reason and has been for many many years
  - x. We are to KEEP ON REJECTING all false doctrine and reversionism